

BUHR 9



# HAWAII IN THE WORLD WAR

DU

620

H 389

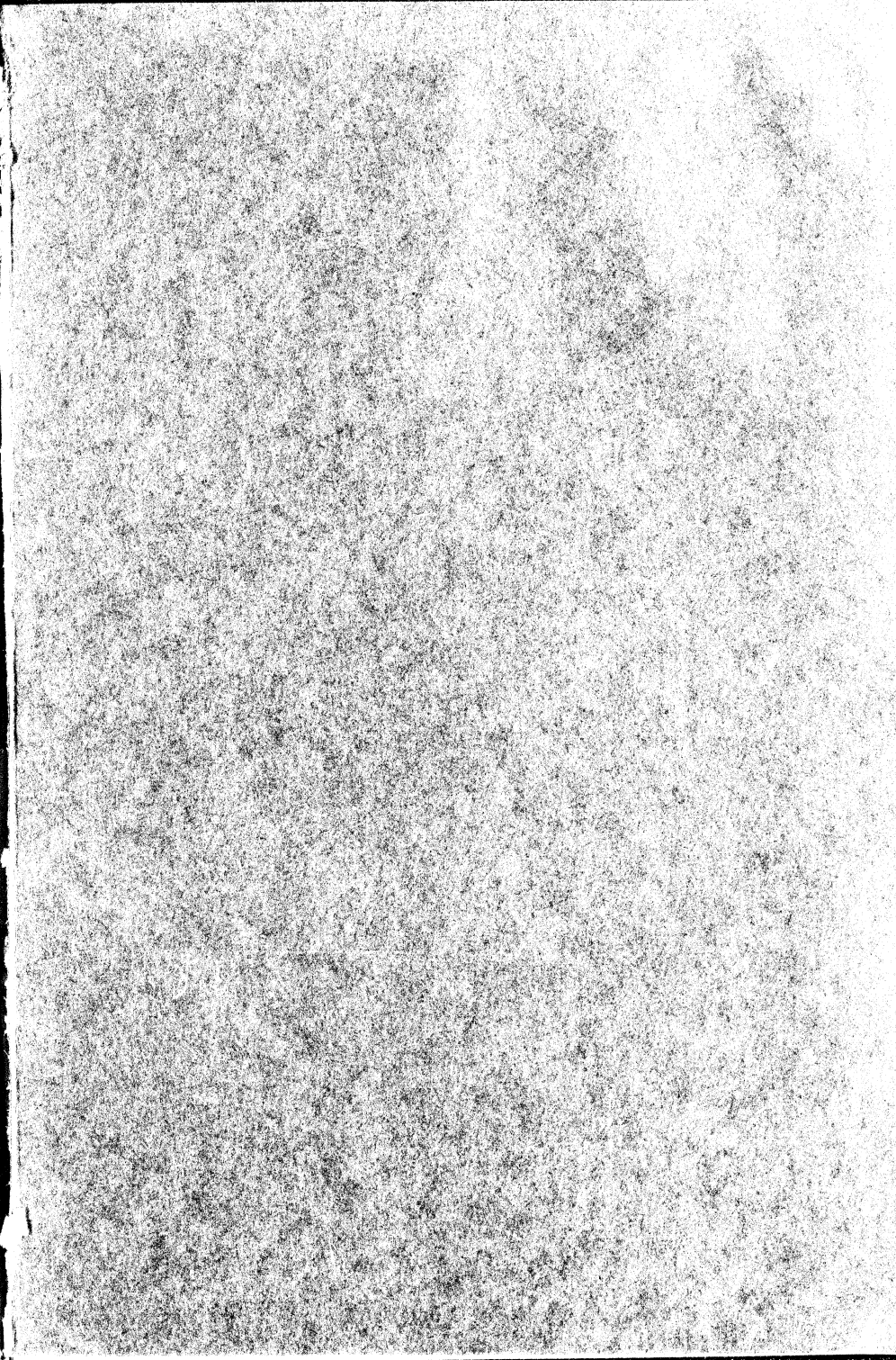
v. 2

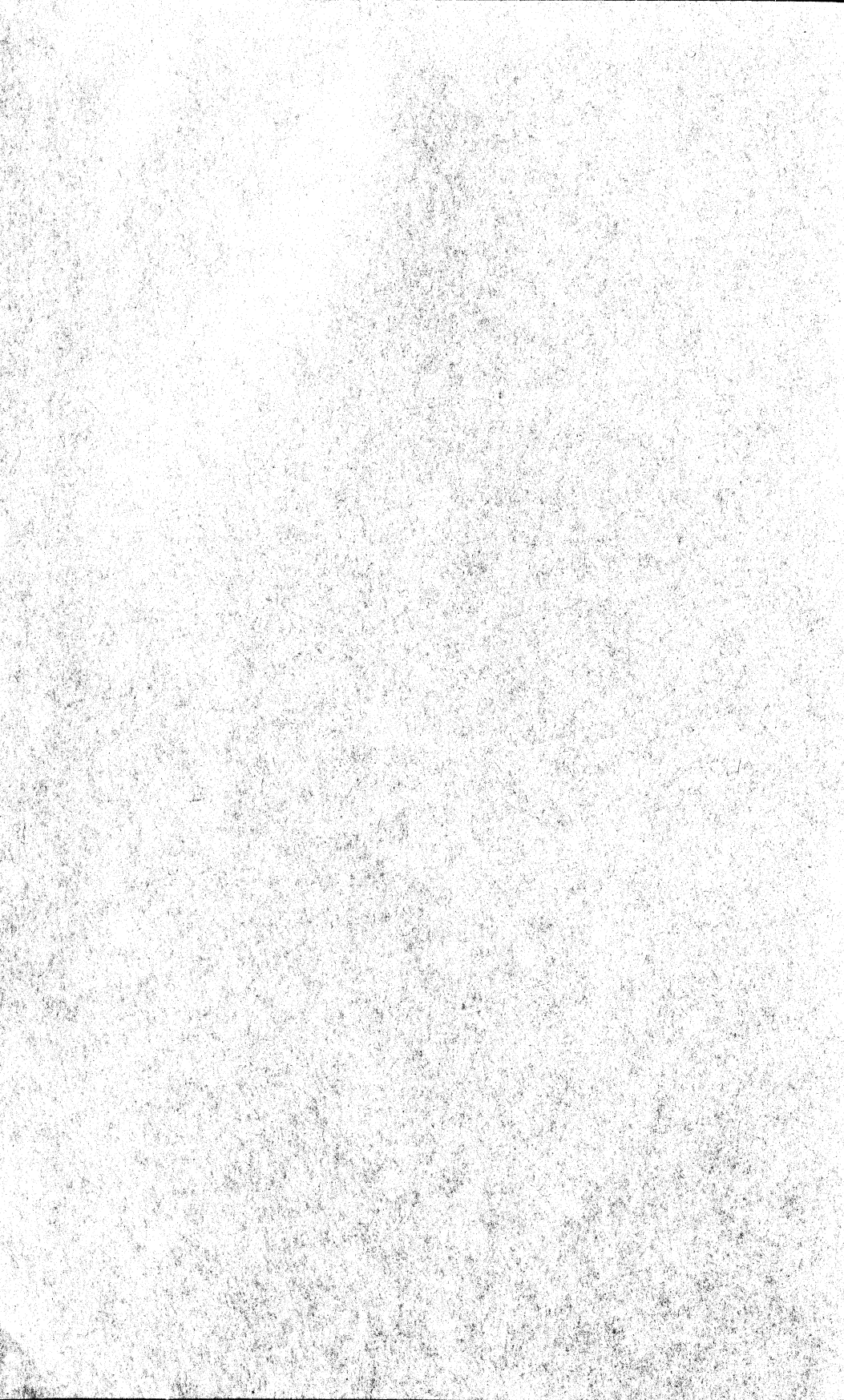
415  
C



THE GIFT OF  
*Secretary of Hawaii*





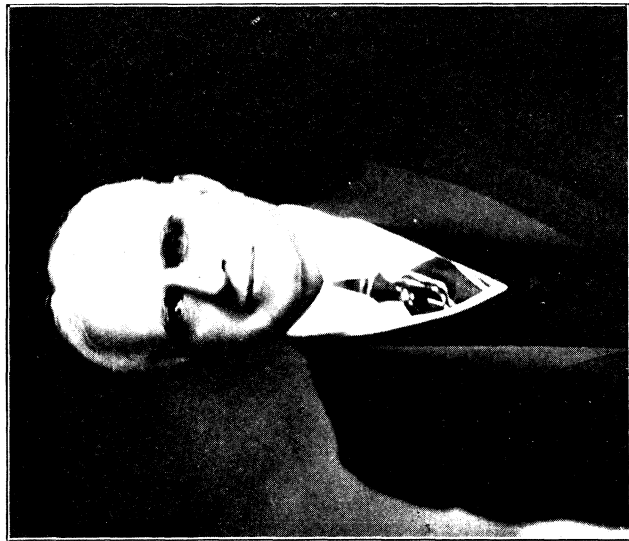


## Hawaii in the World War

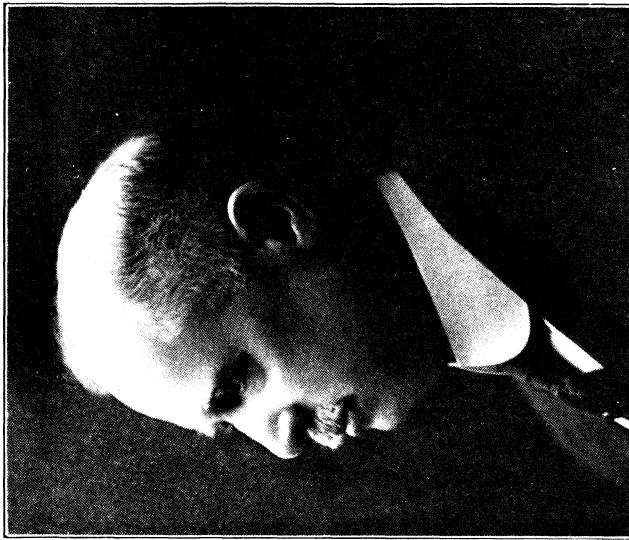








Hon. Lucius E. Pinkham



Hon. Charles J. McCarthy

HAWAII'S WAR GOVERNORS



Publications of The Historical Commission of the Territory of Hawaii  
Volume II

# Hawaii in the World War

BY

RALPH S. KUYKENDALL

WITH THE ASSISTANCE OF

LORIN TARR GILL

Honolulu  
The Historical Commission  
1928

Copyright, 1928  
By The Territory of Hawaii

## THE HISTORICAL COMMISSION

Hon. G. R. Carter, President,  
Mrs. A. P. Taylor, Vice President,  
Dr. K. C. Leebrick, Secretary-Treasurer.

---

R. S. Kuykendall,  
Executive Secretary

Printed by  
Honolulu Star-Bulletin, Ltd.  
Honolulu, Hawaii  
U. S. A.

*Secretary of Hawaii*  
*2478*  
*3-22-1928*

DEDICATED TO  
THE MEN AND WOMEN AND BOYS  
AND GIRLS OF HAWAII  
WHOSE PATRIOTIC DEEDS  
ARE RECORDED IN PART  
IN THESE PAGES





## PREFACE

The part played by Hawaii in the World War of 1914-1918 was so important, in view of the size and situation of the territory, that its people are justly proud of their record in war work. Their reaction to world movements and their response to all requests from the central government at Washington amply demonstrated their breadth of view and their patriotic attachment to the nation of which they are an integral part. It was early felt that a careful record of this phase of the territory's history should be prepared and published; and the legislature made it the duty and the privilege of the Historical Commission to undertake this work. In carrying out this duty the Commission has endeavored to prepare a general account, within a reasonable compass, of the war activities of the territory as a whole. At first glance it may seem to the reader that the book is a large one; in reality the record is much condensed—the principal problem which had to be solved was how to get in what ought to be included, without running into two or three volumes.

The book is not intended to be a record of individual service. The idea of printing a list of the names of all who did war work had to be abandoned—not without some regret—since it was seen that such a plan would, practically, amount to publishing a sort of annotated directory of the territory, which would require a large volume by itself and would not, after all, be a history, but only a collection of data. Nor was it possible to print the names and records of the nearly 10,000 Hawaii men in military and naval service. This does not mean, however, that such a record is not to be preserved; on the contrary, service cards for these men are on file in three places, the archives of the War and Navy Departments in Washington, the office of the Adjutant General of the territory, and the Archives of Hawaii; but the record is not yet complete and perfect, being still subject to correction from time to time.

The information used in writing the history has been obtained from a variety of sources. A great quantity of notes was taken from the files of the two leading newspapers of the territory, the *Honolulu Advertiser* and the *Honolulu Star-Bulletin*, which were carefully searched for the entire period from the outbreak of the war in 1914 to the end of 1919 and were further used, by means of indexes and collections of clippings,

down to the middle of 1927. Search was also made through the files of the *Friend*, *Hawaii Educational Review*, *Paradise of the Pacific*, *Mid-Pacific Magazine*, and *Thrum's Annual*. Use has also been made of many printed reports, such as those of the governor, the adjutant general, the legislature, the supreme court, the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association, the Red Cross, and other organizations.

The records deposited in the Archives of the territory, the governor's file in particular, proved to be a rich source of information. The original records of the Selective Draft organization, the United States Food Administration, and apparently also the original records of the Territorial Food Commission, having been sent to Washington for deposit in the national archives, were not available, but a large part of this material has been available through copies in the governor's file in the local Archives. In addition to these official records, the minutes and some other records of the following organizations were made available for the use of the Historical Commission: War Relief Committee, Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee, Red Cross, Women's War Work Council, Hostess House Committee, Graduate Nurses' Club, and the Women's Committee of the Territorial Food Commission. Much useful material has been obtained from individuals, who have in general been very willing to assist in any way possible.

The pictures used to illustrate the history were likewise derived from many sources, but the greater part were obtained either from the Williams Collection, now belonging to the territory and deposited in the Archives, or from the *Star-Bulletin* library and photographic department (the latter through the courtesy of Mr. Bert G. Covell). A number of fine pictures were obtained from Mr. L. E. Edgeworth; and Mr. Richard H. Post very obligingly contributed about two dozen photographic prints from his splendid collection of portrait negatives. Many other pictures were donated or loaned by private individuals, and some photographs were made especially for this volume. It was possible to use only a small part of the pictures available; but it is also true that it was impossible to obtain some pictures that were desired to illustrate certain phases of the history.

A brief statement of the process by which the volume has been produced may be of interest. The general outline of the work was laid out by Mr. Kuykendall, who also supervised every step in the preparation of the history. The general outline was discussed, amended in some particulars, and adopted by the members of the Historical Commission. In the collection of data, the



search through the newspapers and periodicals (a most wearisome, eye-straining kind of drudgery) required months of time. Mr. Kuykendall did about half of this work, Mrs. Gill about one-third, and the remainder was accomplished under Mr. Kuykendall's direction by the Commission's two office workers, Mrs. Lilia Rathburn and Mrs. Madison Nichols. The research in the Archives (official records) and in printed official reports was done by Mr. Kuykendall; most of the interviewing of individuals by Mrs. Gill.

The actual writing of the text was done as follows: Chapters 1-5 and 14-20, were written wholly by Mr. Kuykendall. For chapters 6-13, Mrs. Gill took the notes and other data collected during the preliminary investigation, and on the basis of this material prepared a rough draft, which was then revised, with additions and subtractions, and put in final shape by Mr. Kuykendall; some of the chapters had to be shortened (by re-writing) in order to bring them within the available space; the preparation of the draft having revealed gaps in the evidence, it was necessary, in connection with the revision, to do a considerable amount of additional research in order to supply, as far as possible, the missing information. The entire finished manuscript was carefully and critically read by each member of the Commission, who suggested some alterations here and there throughout the text; but the Commissioners could not, of course, check all statements and details.

The Historical Commission is deeply grateful to all who have assisted in any way in the preparation of the present volume. Mrs. R. S. Kuykendall rendered important volunteer assistance in editorial work and in many other ways. A very special acknowledgment is due the librarian of the Archives of Hawaii, Mr. A. P. Taylor, and the members of his staff, for the unfailing courtesy and good humor with which they permitted the Commission to nearly monopolize the facilities of that institution for a period of many months. Space forbids giving the names of all who contributed to the general result, but some were so helpful that it would hardly be just not to mention them: Riley H. Allen, Mrs. A. L. Andrews, L. A. Bagley, Fred Biven, Rudolph Bukeley, Albert S. Bush, Miss Beatrice Castle, Miss Margaret Catton, J. F. Child, Lieut. Col. A. G. Clarke, Mrs. J. S. Emerson, Miss Lucie G. Ford, Mrs. W. F. Frear, J. A. Matthewman, Miss Albertine T. Sinclair, H. P. O'Sullivan, Miss Ivy Richardson, Fred Schultz, Col. P. M. Smoot, A. H. Tarleton, Rev. Father Valentin, J. Hay Wilson.

*Preface*

In a work of this character it seems inevitable that some slips and errors will escape detection until after the last sheet is off the press. Such of these as were discovered in the course of preparing the index are noted on the page preceding the index. The Commission will be glad to have its attention called to any others that may be noticed by readers.

GEORGE R. CARTER,  
President of the Historical Commission.

# CONTENTS

Chapter	Page
Roll of Honor.....	xvii
I. The War Begins—German Ships.....	1
II. Military Participation: (I) The National Guard.....	20
III. Military Participation: (II) The Selective Draft.....	49
IV. Military Participation: (III) Officers' Training Camps.....	73
V. Military Participation: (IV) Men of Hawaii in Regular Service—Volunteers—British Recruiting.....	83
VI. War Relief Committee and Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee .....	91
VII. The Red Cross at Home.....	119
VIII. Red Cross and Relief Workers Overseas.....	171
IX. Special Relief Funds.....	215
X. The Army and Navy Y. M. C. A.....	239
XI. War Work of the Y. W. C. A.....	269
XII. War Camp Community Service and Knights of Columbus.....	286
XIII. United War Work Campaign (November, 1918).....	298
XIV. War Loans and War Savings Stamps.....	307
XV. Food Production and Conservation: (I) The Territorial Food Commission .....	328
XVI. Food Production and Conservation: (II) The United States Food Administration.....	354
XVII. The Sugar Industry and General Economic Conditions.....	381
XVIII. Prohibition as a War Measure.....	405
XIX. Americanism vs. Kaiserism.....	415
XX. A War Memorial.....	447
Appendix A. The Selective Draft.....	455
I. District and Local Exemption Boards	
II. Travelling Medical Advisory Board.	
III. Registrations, by Local Boards	
IV. Calls, Inductions, Acceptances, and Rejections	
Appendix B. Graduates of Officers' Training Camps at Schofield Barracks .....	459
Index .....	465



## ILLUSTRATIONS

Hawaii's War Governors.....	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Hon. Lucius E. Pinkham, Hon. Charles J. McCarthy	
	<i>Facing Page</i>
German Schooner "Aeolus" and her Captor the Japanese Battle- ship "Hizen" .....	8
German Gunboat "Geier" Burning in Slip.....	8
German Sailors Loading their Baggage on Army Truck.....	9
German Sailors Being Taken to Immigration Station.....	9
Former Hawaii Naval Militiamen Serving on U. S. S. "St. Louis" Entertained at a Picnic Party.....	24
U. S. S. "St. Louis" in her War Dress.....	24
Brig. Gen. S. I. Johnson and "Rookie" Sam Johnson.....	25
Hawaiian National Guard Cavalry and Infantry on Review.....	25
Camp McCarthy .....	46
Part of Mobilization Camp at Fort Armstrong.....	47
National Guardsmen at Mobilization Camp Lined up for "Kaukau".....	47
Former Hawaii National Guard Officers at Camp Fremont.....	64
Major H. Gooding Field.....	64
First Group of Drafted Men Leaving Armory for Mobilization Camp....	65
Drafted Men at Mobilization Camp Lined Up for Physical Ex- amination .....	65
Officers' Training Camp at Schofield Barracks.....	78
S. A. T. C. at College of Hawaii.....	79
Part of Engineer Volunteers of "Aloha" Contingent.....	90
Engineer Volunteers in "Aloha" Parade.....	90
Members of War Relief Committee.....	91
W. R. Castle, J. A. Rath, W. R. Farrington, S. B. Dole, C. J. Hedemann, C. K. Ai	
A Group of Red Cross Executives.....	120
G. R. Carter, E. D. Tenney, A. L. Castle, G. P. Wilder, Miss Beatrice Castle, Geo. I. Brown	
Presentation of Red Cross Flag Made by Queen Liliuokalani.....	121
Headquarters of Hospital Supply Department.....	130
Sixty Cases of Red Cross Supplies Shipped on the "Sachem".....	130
Packing Room of Hospital Supply Department.....	131
Folding Gauze Preparatory to Cutting Surgical Dressings.....	131
Red Cross Workers in Throne Room of Capitol.....	136
Packing Room of Hospital Supply, Knitting, and Refugee Gar- ments Department of the Red Cross.....	137
Japanese Sewing Women Working on Hospital Garments in Uni- versity Club Building.....	152
Children's Unit at Sacred Heart Church, Honolulu.....	152

450 Sweaters, Helmets, Socks, and Wristlets Knitted by the Daughters of Warriors.....	153
Knitters at Makiki Fire Station, Honolulu.....	153
Full-page Advertisement Used in Red Cross Second War Fund Campaign, May, 1918.....	168
Glimpses of Red Cross Parade of May 6, 1918.....	169
Some of the Groups which Took Part in the Great Red Cross Parade of May 6, 1918.....	176
A Group of Boys from Hawaii Who Drove Ambulances in France.....	177
Francis H. I. Brown, William Wells, Fedrico Biven, William Noble, H. Ernest Podmore, Albert S. Bush	
Dr. and Mrs. James R. Judd.....	200
Part of First Large Group of Red Cross Workers Who Went from Hawaii to Siberia.....	200
Group of Red Cross Nurses Who Went From Hawaii to Siberia.....	200
Personnel of Allied Anti-Typhus Expedition in Western Siberia.....	201
Christmas Gifts from the Honolulu Rotary Club to the American Red Cross Personnel in Siberia, Christmas, 1920.....	208
Types of War Service Certificates Awarded by the American Red Cross (S. Kanda and O. L. Sorenson).....	209
Certificate of Award of "Medaille de la Reine Elizabeth" to Mrs. Dorothea Emerson .....	209
Service Certificate of Ambulance Donated by University Club.....	238
Y. M. C. A. Workers and Buildings.....	239
James Wakefield, Urban Williams, A. H. Tarleton, Buildings at Schofield Barracks and Fort Ruger	
Y. W. C. A. Executives in War Time.....	268
Miss Grace Channon, Mrs. W. F. Frear, Miss Mayme Nelson	
Poster Used to Advertise Y. W. C. A. War-Time Classes.....	268
Y. W. C. A. Hostess House at Fort Armstrong.....	269
Christmas Party and Dance Given by War Camp Community Service and Knights of Columbus, December 27, 1919.....	306
L. Tenney Peck, R. W. Shingle, Guy H. Buttolph, Mrs. H. E. Hendrick .....	307
"Tank" Used in Third Liberty Loan Drive.....	312
Raising Third Liberty Loan Honor Flag over the Capitol.....	312
Chaplain Loughran Leading "Mob Singing" at Liberty Loan Rally.....	312
Celebrating Hawaii's Victory in Third Liberty Loan Campaign —"Liberty Day," Friday, April 26, 1918.....	313
Hawaii's Fourth Liberty Loan Honor Flag and Group of Campaign Leaders .....	316
French "75" Brought to Hawaii for Victory Liberty Loan Campaign.....	316
Boy Scouts in Parade Opening Victory Liberty Loan Campaign.....	317
Group of Young Women Who Sold Bonds at Moiliili Baseball Park on Opening Day of Victory Liberty Loan Campaign.....	317
Full-page Advertisement Used in Thrift and War Savings Stamp Campaign .....	320

Honolulu's Thrift Army in Capitol Grounds Following Parade of Saturday, May 18, 1918.....	321
Part of Business Houses Section of W. S. S. Parade of July 27, 1918.....	321
Poster Used in War Savings Stamp Campaign.....	324
Leaders of War Savings Stamp Campaign at Headquarters in U. S. W. S. S. "Hawaii" in Bishop Park.....	325
Japanese War Savings Stamp Committee.....	325
Mayor J. J. Fern "Nails the Kaiser".....	328
U. S. W. S. S. "Hawaii".....	328
Insignia for Officers of School Thrift Army.....	328
Poster Used by H. S. P. A. in Food Campaign.....	329
Exhibit of Banana Dishes at Y. W. C. A.....	329
James D. Dole, J. F. Child, Dr. A. L. Dean, Mrs. A. C. Alexander.....	344
Members of Women's Committee of Territorial Food Commission..... Mrs. A. L. Andrews, Mrs. F. W. Macfarlane, Mrs. Alonzo Gartley, Mrs. C. M. Cooke, Jr.	345
Window Card for Member of United States Food Administration.....	345
Retiring Governor Pinkham Handing Key of Office to Incoming Governor McCarthy, June 22, 1918.....	428
Removing Hackfeld Name from Building Preparatory to Transfer to American Factors.....	428
Celebrating the Victory—Armistice Day, November 11, 1918.....	429

### "I WILL HAVE DONE MY DUTY"

John R. Rowe was the first of Hawaii's sons to die in France as a member of the American Expeditionary Forces. A few days before going into the battle in which he was killed, he wrote to his mother a letter containing these words:

"Don't worry, Mother dear. We have got to win this war. If I fall do not mourn for me as I will have done only my duty. All of us won't come back. I hope I shall. However, if I do not, always remember me as having done my full duty for my country."



# Roll of Honor

"Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori."

## IN THE SERVICE OF THE UNITED STATES

### ARMY

Name	Rank	Place of Death	Date of Death
Agar, Vidal	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	Jan. 12, 1919
Aki, Adam Young	<i>Corporal</i>	Ft. Shafter	Dec. 12, 1918
Aki, Frank K., Jr.	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	July 30, 1918
Arcilo, Bragee	-----	Schofield	-----
Arozal, Ariston	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	July 24, 1918
Bega, Cipriano	<i>Private</i>	Oahu	May 5, 1919
Bueno, Anastacio	<i>Corporal</i>	Schofield	Mar. 26, 1919
Castillo, Esteban	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	Jan. 23, 1919
Catton, Richard Belmont	<i>Lieutenant</i>	Savenay, France	Apr. 14, 1919
Chapman, Henry Henley	<i>Lieutenant</i>	France	-----
Choy, Chin Sung	<i>Private</i>	Ft. Shafter	Aug. 14, 1918
Ciempoon, Bidal	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	Dec. 15, 1918
Cornelison, Alexander C.	<i>Major</i>	Camp Shelby, Miss.	Nov. 21, 1918
Cruz, Juan	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	-----
Daguman, Julian	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	Aug. 24, 1918
De Roo, Carel J.	<i>Field Clerk</i>	Honolulu	May 25, 1918
Dolim, Frank P.	<i>Private</i>	-----	Jan. 6, 1918
Dwight, George K.	<i>Private</i>	Annapolis, Md.	Jan. 27, 1918
Esbra, Rufino	<i>Bugler</i>	Honolulu	July 19, 1918
Eugenio, Anatolio	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	Mar. 13, 1919
Evans, Henry J.	<i>Private</i>	Fort Sill, Okla.	Feb. 5, 1918
Ezera, Ephraim H.	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	July 7, 1918
Gaspar, Louis J.	<i>Private</i>	France	Nov. 1, 1918
Green, Francis J.	<i>Captain</i>	Haleiwa, Oahu	Jan. 11, 1918
Hauli, Abraham	<i>Corporal</i>	Honolulu	Feb. 7, 1919
Hedemann, Edmund	<i>Corporal</i>	Camp Dodge, Ia	Mar. 19, 1919

Name	Rank	Place of Death	Date of Death
Ioepa, Daniel K.	<i>Corporal</i>	France	-----
Iskow, Edward J.	<i>Private</i>	France	Dec. 30, 1918
Kaaua, Robert	<i>Private</i>	-----	-----
Kaea, Kuulei John	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	Mar. 16, 1919
Kahokuoluna, Edward N.	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	July 10, 1918
Kaiewe, Paulo	-----	-----	-----
Kainoa, Sam	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	July 14, 1918
Kalaeloa, Charles	<i>Private</i>	Oahu	July 11, 1918
Kau, Apau	<i>Sergeant</i>	France	Nov. 5, 1918
Kino, Charles	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	Sept. 18, 1918
Kuaimoku, Edward K.	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	July 16, 1918
Lee, Han Young	-----	Indiana	1918
Makua, John A.	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	Oct. 15, 1918
Marr, Kenneth D.	<i>Private</i>	-----	Nov. 25, 1918
Mattos, Anthony R.	-----	France	-----
Mills, Philip Overton	<i>Captain</i>	France	-----
Mohe, Sam	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	July 19, 1918
Monsieur, Mariano	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	July 11, 1918
Naia, Peter	<i>Private</i>	Oahu	Mar. 2, 1919
Napoleon, Walter N.	-----	-----	-----
O'Dowda, John S.	<i>Lieutenant</i>	France	Nov. 13, 1918
Orbe, Aurelio	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	Sept. 10, 1918
Puali, Joe	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	Aug. 21, 1918
Quibal, Juan	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	Aug. 11, 1918
Ramos, Manuel	<i>Private</i>	At Sea	Feb. 5, 1918
Riley, William Russell	<i>Colonel</i>	San Francisco	Sept. 8, 1920
Rodrigues, Richard F.	-----	Douglas, Ariz.	Nov. 23, 1918
Rowe, John R.	<i>Private</i>	France	July 31, 1918
Santos, Pablo R.	<i>Corporal</i>	Schofield	July 10, 1918
Sarsosa, Jose	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	July 6, 1918
Scholtz, William K.	<i>Captain</i>	Honolulu	June 17, 1918
Tenebre, Rufo	<i>Private</i>	Schofield	Nov. 28, 1918
Thomas, Moses	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	Mar. 2, 1919
Tingking, Paustino	<i>Private</i>	Oahu	July 11, 1918
Tom, George B.	<i>Private</i>	France	Oct. 8, 1918
Unuiwi, Henry K.	<i>Private</i>	France	Sept. 30, 1918
Valente, Manuel, Jr.	-----	-----	Sept. , 1918
Vieira, Frank C., Jr.	-----	Otisville, N. Y.	Mar. , 1919
Waialeale, James	<i>Private</i>	Honolulu	Jan. 15, 1919
Waihoikala, Levi	<i>Private</i>	Ft. Shafter	July 20, 1918
Watson, Clarence J.	<i>Private</i>	France	Nov. 7, 1918
Withington, David L.	<i>Corporal in</i>	Plymouth, Mass.	Oct. 5, 1918
	<i>S.A.T.C.</i>		

## NAVY

Name	Rank	Place of Death	Date of Death
Auerbach, Paul H.	<i>Ensign</i>	Colorado Springs, Col.	May 6, 1919
Bal, Archibald	<i>Storekeeper</i>	Charleston, S. C.	Oct. 16, 1918
Char, Frederick	<i>Yeoman</i>	Pearl Harbor	Oct. 31, 1918
Gouveia, Manuel, Jr.	<i>Seaman</i>	U.S.S. Schurz	June 21, 1918
Graham, Ivan Montrose	<i>Lieutenant</i>	Quebec, Can.	Sept. 21, 1918
Kaaueka, Herman	<i>Musician</i>	Pearl Harbor	Sept. 2, 1918
Kana, John	<i>Cook</i>	Hull, England	Jan. 15, 1920
Kauhane, Ralph J.	<i>Yeoman</i>	Pearl Harbor	Mar. 4, 1919
Raymond, Frank	<i>Chief Boat-swain's Mate</i>	Pearl Harbor	Mar. 12, 1920
Silva, John A.	-----	Brooklyn, N. Y.	Oct. 11, 1918
Warren, Charles F. A., Jr.	<i>Fireman</i>	Balboa, Canal Zone	Dec. 7, 1917

## MARINE CORPS

Fuller, Edward	<i>Captain</i>	France	-----
----------------	----------------	--------	-------

## IN THE SERVICE OF GREAT BRITAIN

Bryant, James H. R.	<i>Lieutenant</i>	Italy	Oct. 4, 1918
Churchill, B. Clair	<i>Lieutenant</i>	Damery, France	Aug. 15, 1918
Collie, Alexander	<i>Private</i>	France	July 1, 1916
Davies, Henry L.	<i>Lieutenant</i>	France	Oct. 26, 1914
French, John Scott	<i>Private</i>	Belgium	Nov. 17, 1915
Llewellyn, Ted	-----	France	-----
Maclean, Norman	<i>Gunner</i>	-----	Apr. 30, 1918
Potter, Gideon	<i>Private</i>	Belgium	Oct. 28, 1917

Blackwood, F. S.  
Cameron, Kenneth  
Douglas, J.  
Fogarty, H.  
Ibbetson, George  
Jones, Edward  
Leander, R. L.

Mackenzie, Robert G.  
May, James P.  
Sharp, Robert  
Turner, Gordon  
Turner, John  
Usborne, Claude O. H.  
Williams, Thomas P.



# HAWAII IN THE WORLD WAR

---

## CHAPTER I

### THE WAR BEGINS—GERMAN SHIPS



WHEN the news of war burst upon the world in the summer of 1914, Hawaii's first reaction was not unlike that of other communities. There was an amazed and reluctant realization that the thing long predicted had come to pass; but coupled with it was a feeling that so great a contest could not be long maintained, and the people of these islands joined with others in praying that peace might soon be restored. Hawaii began very soon to feel the effects of the war on her economic condition: a sharp rise in the price of sugar—of great benefit to the local industry—coupled with a general disturbance of commerce. The spectacle of the old world in flames, with immense armies at grips along the greatest battlefield in the world's history, brought forcibly to public attention our own unreadiness for war, and raised sharply the question whether we were safe, even in our traditional supposed isolation; with the result that preparedness became an issue of outstanding importance. It was not long before some members of Hawaii's cosmopolitan population began to take their places on the distant battlefield beside the soldiers from their ancestral homes. And the cries of homeless and fatherless children and widowed mothers were heard here on the other side of the world, stirring the compassionate sympathy of our people and leading to the organization of movements for relief of the suffering innocent victims of the conflict. All of these things belong to the history of Hawaii's part in the World War. Leaving a detailed treatment of them to be given in later chapters, it is necessary in this place to relate the story of the German ships which lay during the early years of the war in the ports of the Hawaiian Islands.

## A HAVEN OF REFUGE

With three of the belligerent nations having important commercial interests in the Pacific Ocean, their merchants ships in this region were fair prey for hostile ships of war. Until the situation became somewhat clarified, it behooved the merchant ships to seek shelter within their own protected ports or in neutral waters. They scurried for cover and ventured out only when there was reasonable assurance of safe passage to the next port of call. Under these circumstances the harbors of the Hawaiian Islands proved to be havens of refuge for the ships of all three nations. For some weeks after the beginning of hostilities Honolulu harbor was crowded with Japanese and British ships. The Germans had some warships in the Pacific, but they were no match for the combined strength of the Japanese and British fleets and it was only a question of time until the German ships would be destroyed, captured, or driven to internment in neutral ports. British and Japanese shipping was soon relieved of serious apprehension, though for many months it was agitated by occasional reports of hostile commerce destroyers.

For the Germans the situation became steadily worse. They were successively driven from their bases at Kiaochow, the Marshall Islands, Samoa, and the Bismarck archipelago, and were hunted hither and yon by their relentless foes. In a very short time their commerce in the Pacific was completely destroyed and their few warships, first reduced to a sort of maritime guerrilla status, were finally captured, destroyed, or interned. The people of Hawaii followed these operations with keen interest and because of their strategic location were actual witnesses of some scenes in the drama.

On August 7, three days after Great Britain declared war on Germany, the steamer *Setos* of the German Kosmos line came into Honolulu under instructions to avoid capture. The arrival of this vessel and the probable coming of others presented some interesting questions to the Board of Harbor Commissioners: Where were these ships to be berthed and what port charges

were to be levied against them? The latter question came up first. At the usual wharfage rates, the charges would, over a long period, eat up the value of the ship. It was decided that a flat rate of \$10 per day would be made for these refugee ships. On August 19 the North German Lloyd freighter *Pommern* came into port, having avoided capture by disguising herself as a Swedish vessel. At the first of September the cruiser *Nurnberg* dropped in for an over-night visit and added to her crew part of the sailors from the *Setos*. She had left Honolulu after a previous visit only a few days before the outbreak of war; some months later she was hunted down by British warships in the south. On September 9 arrived the *Prinz Waldemar* of the North German Lloyd line; on the 15th, the *Staatssekretaer Kraetke* of the Hamburg-American line; and on the 16th and the 17th, the *Loongmoon* and the *Gouverneur Jaeschke* of the same line. About a month later (October 12) two more freighters, the *Holsatia* and the *O. J. D. Ahlers*, came in to join the fleet of refugees. These ships told strange tales of their wanderings about the ocean in the effort to escape capture. Their arrival one after the other pressed upon the Harbor Board the question of their disposition. Temporarily some of them remained at anchor outside, but all were eventually berthed inside the harbor. The presence of so many idle ships taxed the capacity of available wharfage and it was necessary to shift the steamers about from time to time. Several appeals were made to Washington to permit their removal to Pearl Harbor, but the Navy Department refused to sanction any such arrangement.

On October 15 a new element was injected into the local situation by the arrival of the gunboat or unprotected cruiser *Geier*, closely followed by her collier, the *Locksun*. Under the neutrality regulations a warship could remain in port only twenty-four hours unless she required repairs. The captain of the *Geier* declared the boilers and machinery of his ship to be in urgent need of repairs, and after a survey he was allowed three weeks for that purpose. While the work was in progress, Honolulu woke one morning (October 21) to find a grim-

looking Japanese battleship, the *Hizen*, cruising slowly to and fro just outside the three mile limit. In an interview, the captain said, "I shall stand by and wait for the German cruiser to come out. Every care will be taken not to violate neutrality in any way but the *Hizen* will remain close to the port of Honolulu night and day. When the necessary repairs to the *Geier* are made it will be expected that she will leave Honolulu and if she will not go, then under international law, she should be required to intern here."

A few hours before the *Hizen* arrived off Honolulu, the freighter *O. J. D. Ahlers* slipped out of the harbor and made her way in safety to Hilo, where she remained permanently. Workmen toiled on the machinery of the *Geier*. The Japanese battleship patiently maintained her vigil outside the territorial waters. A collier came up to replenish her fuel supply. The Japanese fourth-class warship *Asama* arrived and took her station a few miles away. Rumors flew about concerning other warships said to be lurking in the vicinity of the islands and seen from this point or that. One day (the 25th) the little motor schooner *Aeolus*, last from Jaluit in the Marshall Islands, attempted to get within the protection of neutral waters, but failed to escape the sharp eyes of the Japanese watch-dog. After her capture the crew was taken off and transferred to the *Locksun*, and that night the *Aeolus* served as a target for the guns of the *Hizen*. The following day the schooner *Hermes*, sister ship to the *Aeolus*, succeeded in the attempt at which the latter had failed, and joined her country ships within the port.

These operations raised various questions of international law, but these were all disposed of satisfactorily. The *Hizen* was becoming impatient for her prey, and there was much speculation as to what the *Geier* would do under the circumstances. The naval and civil authorities took good care to prevent any improper action on either side. It was not publicly known when the *Geier's* time limit would expire, but after the first of November it was shrewdly surmised that the decision could not be much longer delayed. At Washington the State Department notified the Japanese embassy that the *Geier* had been given a



specified time in which to leave port or intern. From the Japanese side it was stated that the *Hizen* and *Asama* expected to remain off port indefinitely—perhaps to watch for the German merchantmen after the gunboat and her collier had been disposed of. The crisis arrived on November 7, but spectators who hung about the waterfront were disappointed in their expectation of seeing a battle. At 7:30 in the evening the *Locksun*, having been officially decided to be a naval vessel, was interned, and at midnight the *Geier* followed suit. Captain Grasshof and his subordinate officers were placed on parole and the gunboat was disarmed. A day or two later the *Hizen* came into territorial waters and after the captain had satisfied himself about the *Geier's* internment, the two Japanese warships steamed away to the coast of South America.

#### INTERLUDE

The first act was over—there followed a long interlude.

The internment of the *Geier* and *Locksun* had an echo in the pro-German propaganda which was broadcast over the United States. This act was cited as an evidence of the partiality of our government for the Allies and its unfriendliness to Germany, and constituted one count in the series of charges which Senator Stone of Missouri in January, 1915, asked Secretary of State Bryan to explain. Mr. Bryan had no difficulty in showing that everything had been done in strict accord with the requirements of international law. Another of Senator Stone's charges was that British warships were permitted to lie off American ports and intercept neutral vessels. On that point Secretary Bryan stated that representation had been made to the British government that the presence of war vessels off New York was offensive, and a like complaint to the Japanese government as to cruisers near Honolulu; and that in both cases the warships were withdrawn.

From November, 1914, to the end of January, 1917, the two interned naval vessels and the nine refugee merchant ships lay peacefully in the ports of Hawaii—peacefully, but not quite idly, as the aftermath showed. During that two years and a

quarter the war raged in Europe and the fortunes of battle rested first on one side and then on the other. In the United States public opinion was slowly but surely being crystallized into such shape that when the break came with Germany our government had a more united support from the people than it had ever before had in any of our wars.

The period may be roughly divided into two parts. During the first part, Germany inaugurated her campaign of ruthless submarine warfare, first strongly indicated by the sinking of the *Lusitania*, which "served to arouse bitter popular resentment in the United States against Germany. Angry protests were made by the American government. For a year diplomatic notes were exchanged between Germany and the United States, interrupted now and then by new submarine outrages and by new crises, until in May, 1916, Germany promised that henceforth until due notice to the contrary no merchant vessel would be sunk without warning and without due provision for the security of passengers' lives except when the vessel attempted flight or resistance." (C. J. H. Hayes, *History of Modern Europe*.)

The promise of the German government was fairly well observed; but though the submarine horror was temporarily held in abeyance, agents of the imperial government put in train a course of intrigue and devious diplomacy, in which figured such names as Boy-Ed, von Papen, Zimmermann, and others, which brought them into detestation and created a feeling that the German government as then constituted was not to be trusted to act honorably when its own interests were at stake. And then came the final blow which destroyed nearly all sympathy that still existed in the United States for the government of the Kaiser. On January 31, 1917, the German government withdrew the promise which it had made to the United States and formally announced that, beginning February 1, in a zone around the British Isles, France, Italy, and in the eastern Mediterranean, her submarines would sink at sight all ships, whether belligerent or neutral, without warning and without precautions for the safety of innocent passengers. Certain trifling and humiliating conditional exceptions were made in favor of American vessels.

The answer of the United States to this barbarous announcement was quickly given. On February 3 diplomatic relations were broken, the German ambassador, Count von Bernstorff, was handed his passports, and our ambassador in Berlin, Mr. Gerard, was recalled.

#### IN THE SHADOW OF WAR

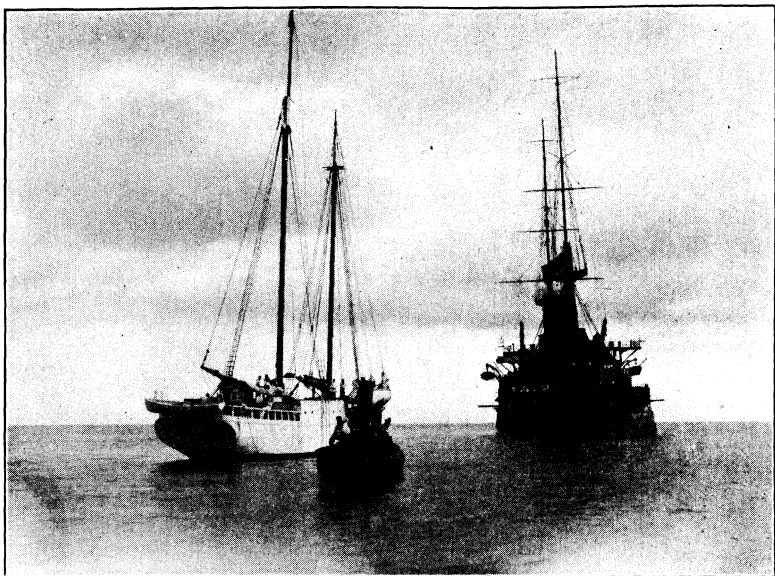
The reaction of the people of Hawaii was one of instantaneous and whole-hearted support of the President in the course which he had taken. It was still hoped that peace might honorably be preserved, but it was generally felt that war was inevitable and that it would come very soon. Steps were immediately taken for protection of Honolulu harbor and government property. The cruiser *St. Louis* was conveniently off port engaged in preliminaries for target practice; she was kept there temporarily to guard the entrance of the harbor. All docks were closed at night and the harbor placed under strict patrol. Troops were moved from outlying posts to Fort Armstrong in the center of the city and several companies were camped in shelter tents in the Capitol grounds; these were for guard duty and were all finally concentrated at Fort Armstrong. A company of the National Guard was called out to guard the armory and territorial property. The provost guard upon the streets of Honolulu was increased. The United States marshal swore in a number of special deputies. All coast defenses were closed to the public. A censorship was imposed on wireless messages. Federal and territorial officials, military and civil, were in frequent conferences.

The German ships in port took note of passing events. On Wednesday, January 31, and the succeeding day smoke observed to be coming from the funnels of these vessels caused a great amount of speculation on the waterfront, but no one at the time seemed to guess the real reason for the phenomenon. Early Sunday morning (February 4) smoke was seen to be rising from the deck of the gunboat *Geier*. The fire department was called; police rushed to the scene; a naval tug offered to tow the *Geier* out into the harbor but was refused a tow

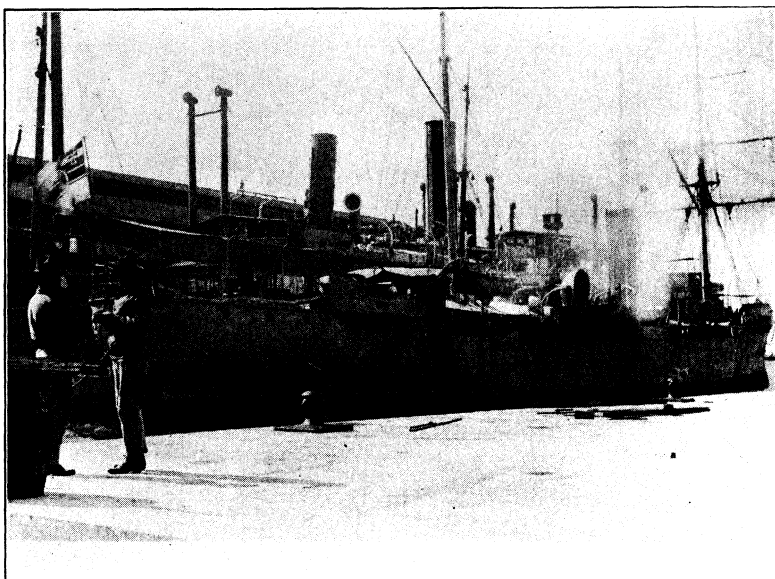
line; troops were ordered out and posted in commanding positions; machine guns were placed on a coal pile opposite the pier; the crew of the vessel made no move to put out the fire and refused to let anyone else do so. Captain George R. Clark, commandant of the 14th naval district, went on board the *Geier* and after a long conference Captain Grasshof surrendered his ship to the custody of the United States. The fire was then extinguished, the officers and crew removed and sent for detention to various army posts. On the following day the *Geier* and the *Locksun* were towed to Pearl Harbor.

The fire on the gunboat was a result of the efforts of her crew to ruin the boilers and machinery. Examination of the merchant vessels and the *Locksun* showed that the same process had been used on them, this being the explanation of the smoke that had been seen coming from the funnels of the steamers some days previously. "Boilers had been burned out by blazing fires after the water had been drawn; engines put out of commission by damaging steam chests and cracking cylinder heads; gauges and cocks had been battered by heavy hammers; holes pierced in pipes by heavy picks; valves smashed, dynamos wrecked, engine telegraphs ruined, navigating instruments thrown overboard." On the *Geier* the heat, radiating through the asbestos coating and the steel shell of the vessel, had ignited the wooden covering on the deck. An attempt had also apparently been made to destroy the ship's papers, logs, etc. Some of these, thrown overboard, were recovered by the United States officials. Parts of machinery thrown overboard were found by divers who examined the floor of the harbor along the slip.

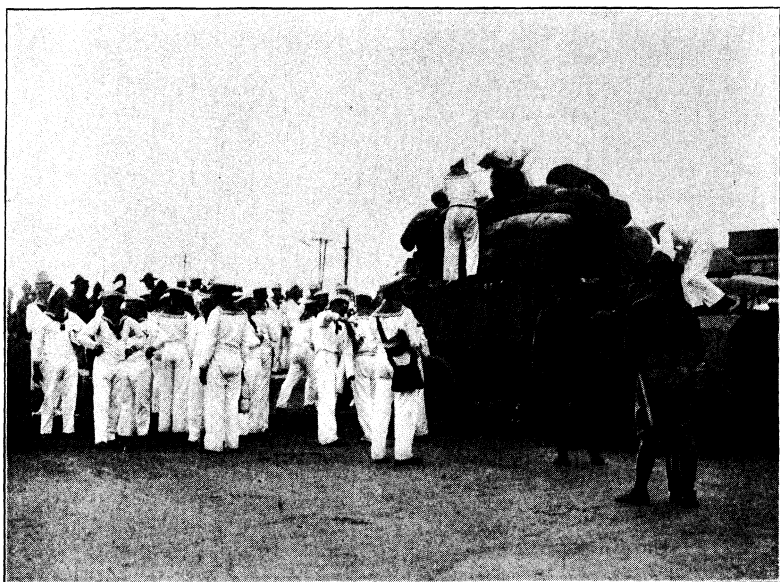
When the condition of the ships was disclosed, the officers and men of two of them, the *Pommern* and *Prinz Waldemar*, were arrested about noon on Sunday (February 4) on charges of attempted injury and destruction of their vessels in violation of Section 4602 of the Revised Statutes of the United States. Later in the day the crews of the other vessels were taken into custody, and all were placed in detention at the United States Immigration Station. The vessels were taken in charge by United States officials, deputy marshals and detachments of regu-



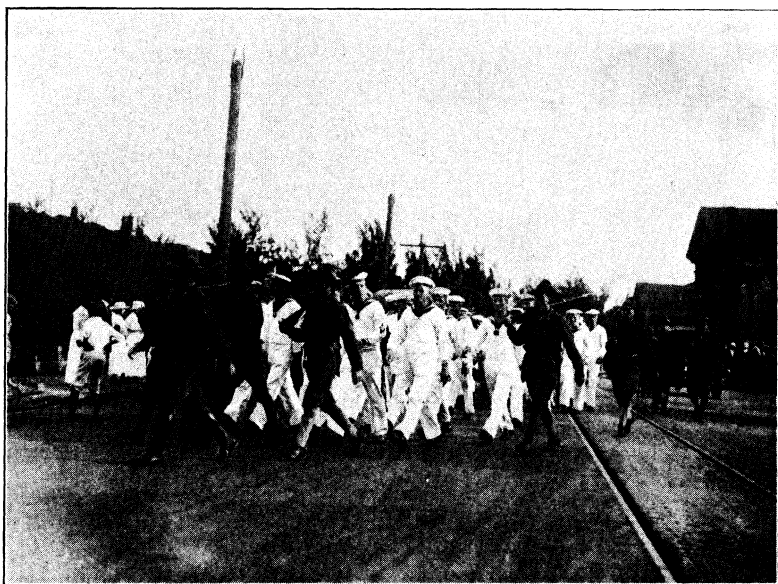
GERMAN SCHOONER "AEOLUS" AND HER CAPTOR THE  
JAPANESE BATTLESHIP "HIZEN"



GERMAN GUNBOAT "GEIER" BURNING IN SLIP



GERMAN SAILORS LOADING THEIR BAGGAGE ON ARMY TRUCK



GERMAN SAILORS BEING TAKEN TO IMMIGRATION STATION

lar troops were placed on board. It was subsequently explained that it was not intended, by this action, to take the control of the vessels out of the hands of their owners or agents; it was merely a precautionary measure to prevent their destruction or scuttling. At Hilo the crew of the *O. J. D. Ahlers*, whose machinery had also been disabled, were simply detained on board the ship under guard of two deputy marshals and a detachment of United States troops.

The captains of the ships at Honolulu, H. Hackfeld & Company as agents for the owners of them, and the German consul, Georg Rodiek, all entered vigorous protest against these proceedings, and representation was made to the State Department at Washington. The Secretary of State, after receiving a statement from Governor Pinkham, cabled to the governor, February 12, to the effect that the action in reference to the refugee German ships at Honolulu was not in accord with what had been done in other ports and intimated that it was not in line with the policy of the United States government, and he concluded his message with the words:

"In view of the practice in the United States and the present critical situation I venture to suggest that German merchant vessels warbound in Hawaiian ports be not seized by Hawaiian authorities nor their crews taken into custody and that action against them be limited to legal procedure for violations of law. Such practice would be consistent with the handling of similar cases in the United States and would not subject the government to criticism for initiating harsh measures."

As soon as practicable after the receipt of this message and instructions from the Department of Labor, the German sailors were all released from custody at the Immigration Station and allowed to return to their ships. The armed guards were still kept on the vessels, but two days later, on receipt of instructions from the Treasury Department to the Collector of Customs, these were also removed, the only restraint left being the presence of customs' inspectors on the wharves to examine everything that was taken on board.

## THE PROBLEM OF THE REFUGEE SHIPS

Of the refugee merchantmen left in the harbor at this time, five were berthed at the railroad wharves at the western end of the harbor, one (the *Hermes*) was moored in naval row, and two (the *Pommern* and the *Setos*) were tied up at territorial wharves. During the next month and a half the presence of these vessels within the port, and particularly the latter two, became a bone of contention between the Board of Harbor Commissioners and the agents for the ships, and a subject of heated discussion in the newspapers, in the legislature, and among the public generally. The chief objection to them was based upon the argument that they were a menace to the harbor and to commerce. The *Advertiser* in one of its numerous editorials on the subject said that in the event of war it was to be expected that "the loyal German citizens now in undisturbed and unguarded possession of the eight refugee German ships in Honolulu harbor will do their best to harm their enemy" by sinking the ships or blowing them up. "If they are blown up in the harbor serious damage to life and adjacent property will be done, and if they are sunk there, no matter at what point, they will most seriously damage the port. . . . There is an entire possibility, however, that they may be pulled away from their anchorages and sunk in the middle of the harbor, or even in the entrance channel, effectually blocking the port for months." In similar vein, the *Star-Bulletin* said, "Public sentiment here is absolutely against allowing these ships to remain at their piers. What happened on a Sunday of vivid memory not long ago; what happened at Charleston in the sinking of the *Lebenfels*; what happened at Boston in the disabling of the *Kronprinzessin Cecilie*—all this is merely a forecast of what may happen should the United States and Germany go to war. . . . Every thinking American must realize the danger to Honolulu harbor, to wharves, and to adjacent shipping."

The Board of Harbor Commissioners, reflecting public opinion, desired to have the ships removed from the harbor, and was especially concerned about the two which were tied up at



territorial wharves. On February 5, immediately after the crews had damaged the boilers and machinery of the vessels, the Board passed a resolution raising the charges against the *Setos* and *Pommern* from \$10 per day each to the rate of two cents per ton per day. This made the charge for the two vessels about \$120 per day. If these refugees were to be removed from the harbor, there were, from a practical standpoint, only two ways of disposing of them. One way was to take them to Pearl Harbor; the territorial Harbor Board repeatedly asked permission to do this, but the Navy Department refused to accede to the request. The other method of disposal was to anchor the vessels outside the harbor, far enough to one side so that they could not drift into the channel. In the absence of any other remedy, this plan was strongly advocated by many, including some members of the Board. Against it was the admitted fact that in case of storm the ships, because of the state of their boilers and machinery, would be helpless and almost certain to go to destruction on the reef. This argument was met by the statement that if the ships were in a helpless condition, it was their own fault—anyway, it was better to have them piled up on the reef than blown up or sunk inside the port.

Governor Pinkham, who was in frequent cable communication with the State Department, warned the Harbor Board against taking any action which would compromise the position of the United States, since we were not yet at war, and specifically pointed out the serious objection to anchoring helpless ships in an exposed situation outside. In this he was following advice from Washington which asked him to fully protect the vessels while also protecting the harbor. There is no doubt that Governor Pinkham was making an honest effort, under trying circumstances, to allay excitement and to keep the local record straight from the international standpoint, but in this, as in some other matters, he made the fatal mistake of not taking the newspapers sufficiently into his confidence to win either their active support or their silence on delicate points.

With each new crisis in the international situation and each report of ships sunk by submarines, the local demand for some

decisive action became more insistent. This was notably the case after the sinking of the *Laconia* (reported in the afternoon newspapers of February 26) and after the publication in the newspapers of March 1 of the story of German Foreign Minister Zimmermann's plan to form a German-Mexican-Japanese alliance for the purpose of making war on the United States. Under date February 27, 1917, Governor Pinkham wrote to Secretary of State Lansing:

"As soon as the blowing up of the British S. S. *Laconia* was known, I apprehended excitement, and sent for the Consul in charge of the Imperial German Consulate and suggested a mutually agreed watch be established quietly. This was acceded to, the agents of the S. S. *Pommern* and *Setos* concurring. The Commander of the Hawaiian Department stood ready to furnish guards. The Board of Harbor Commissioners called, and were insistent the disabled *Pommern* and *Setos* be immediately ordered outside the harbor. I stated drastic action was not the policy of the State Department and they might be in conflict with the authority of the Collector of Customs. I stated I would take such measures as possible, and they could rest for further instructions. I at once sought the Honorable Collector of Customs, Malcolm A. Franklin, who informed me he had cabled the Secretary of the Treasury for instructions; that, as he had positive instructions to remove the guards and had done so, he could not replace them without further orders. Unless there are explosives on board the German merchant vessels, all that could be done would be to open the sea valves and let them sink. The S. S. *Setos* is already grounded in mud, the S. S. *Pommern* is drawing twenty-five feet of water in a berth depth of thirty-five and could not possibly be fully submerged. So far as verbal assurances are of value, H. Hackfeld & Co., Ltd., assert nothing will happen."

In the legislature, Representative B. H. Kelekolio introduced a resolution (February 27) requesting the Board of Harbor Commissioners to move the ships outside the harbor. The resolution was referred to a committee and disappeared from the public view for some days while the committee investigated the

subject. On March 8 Representative Kelekolio introduced a second resolution, which was adopted, requesting the Harbor Board to inform the House why the ships could not be moved from the harbor.

In the meantime the members of the Board had been giving the subject very serious consideration. At first they decided to order the refugees outside, but on further thought voted (March 7) to allow them to remain where they were provided the agents for the vessels, H. Hackfeld & Company, would sign a \$500,000 bond to indemnify the territory in case the ships were blown up or sunk within the harbor. This was duly reported to the House of Representatives in response to Representative Kelekolio's first resolution. At the suggestion of the agents a joint board of investigation was appointed to search the vessels to determine whether any explosives were on board. No explosives were found, but the report of the investigating board did not completely reassure the public on the point. When the indemnity bond was ready, the agents, on advice of their attorneys, found many objectionable features in it and refused to sign, despite their earlier promise to do so. They suggested that another effort be made to secure permission for removal of the ships to Pearl Harbor.

Having failed in the matter of the indemnity bond, the Harbor Board next informed Hackfeld & Company (March 15) that the *Setos* and *Pommern* might remain at the territorial wharves, provided the masters, officers, crews, and other persons aboard were immediately withdrawn and the ships placed in care of watchmen furnished by and under control of the Harbor Board. The agents declined to agree to this arrangement on the ground that it would amount in law to an abandonment of the ships by their owners.

About this time a new plan for disposing of the troublesome ships was brought forward, the idea being to moor them to piles alongside the harbor shore between the Quarantine Wharf and the Inter-Island dock, in what was known as "Rotten Row." On March 15, Governor Pinkham wrote to the Harbor Board stating that the Hawaiian Department, through the Corps of

Engineers, would agree to this plan on condition that the piles were removed when the need for them was past. On the following day, but prior to receipt of the governor's letter, the Harbor Board passed two sets of resolutions: (1) Requiring the removal of the *Pommern* to an anchorage outside the harbor, to be taken out by the Harbor Master if the captain and agents refused to do it; (2) Permitting the *Setos* to remain where she was for the time being but instructing the Harbor Master to take additional precautionary measures to prevent her leaving her berth without a permit for so doing. It was also voted that permission be requested from the army engineers' office to drive "dolphins" (groups of piles) so that the *Pommern* could be brought in again and tied up with the *Setos* in "Rotten Row."

Hackfeld & Company, as agents for the owners of the *Pommern*, entered a vigorous protest against the first of these resolutions and wrote letters to all the towing companies threatening to hold them responsible for any damage that might happen to the *Pommern* if they towed her outside. None of the companies cared to assume the risk involved and the Harbor Board found itself unable to put the resolution into effect. The commandant of the naval station was approached with a view to obtaining the use of the naval tug *Navajo*, but he would not allow it, because he held the matter to be a purely local one and not within his jurisdiction; he could do nothing without specific instructions from Washington. The Board next requested Governor Pinkham to forward a dispatch by cable to Secretary of State Lansing briefly stating the situation and requesting permission for use of the tug *Navajo* to tow the *Pommern* outside. The governor refused to send this message; instead he cabled to Secretary Lansing a short summary of recent developments and again suggested that all the refugee steamers be removed to Pearl Harbor. To the latter suggestion he received the reply that the Secretary of the Navy declined to permit such action. The Harbor Board also asked the legislature to urge Secretary Lansing to render the territory the assistance requested, but the legislature declined to have anything to do with the matter.

To the proposition for mooring the two ships to "dolphins" at a distance from the wharves, Hackfeld & Company were favorably disposed. In fact they offered to drive the piles and re-locate the steamers at their own expense on condition that they be then released from payment of wharfage charges. In spite of this favorable disposition, minor differences and technical details intervened to prevent the carrying out of the plan. About the end of March the commandant of the naval station received instructions from Washington to render any assistance necessary to aid the civil authorities in placing the refugee German merchant steamers in safe berths, exclusive of Pearl Harbor. But the ships were not moved and when war was declared the entire number were in substantially the same locations they had occupied two months before. Just at the end of March a slight precautionary step was taken in the case of the *Setos* and the *Pommern*. In view of the near approach of war the Harbor Board requested the governor to take steps to have a military guard placed on the vessels. Governor Pinkham acted promptly. The agents of the vessels declined, in accordance with their rights under an old treaty, to allow military guards, but readily agreed to the placing of civil guards on the two steamers, and the matter was so arranged.

The presence of these German ships in the harbor and the controversy which developed over them created a great amount of irritation and dissatisfaction—and undoubtedly some uneasiness as well—among the citizens of the territory. The public generally could not understand why two foreign ships, unwanted and in defiance of all efforts to remove them, could remain undisturbed at the public wharves, where they were believed to be a menace to life and property. The government in Washington was criticized for its supposed failure to take cognizance of the local situation and permit removal of the ships to Pearl Harbor. The governor was criticized as an "obstructionist" because he seemed to be responsible in large measure for the lack of action. The members of the Harbor Board were criticized for not moving more swiftly and decisively—the *Advertiser* in one editorial referred to them as "men-afraid-of-

their-shadows." Most of all, the agents, H. Hackfeld & Company, were criticized for the persistence and success with which they thwarted all efforts to get rid of the troublesome ships. In the light of all the facts, it is probably not too much to say that none of this criticism was fully justified—but, unfortunately, at that time neither the public nor those in authority were in possession of all the facts.

#### WAR IS DECLARED

During the months of February and March the people of Hawaii anxiously watched the progress of events, noting the deliberate way in which the German imperial government, by its course of action, seemed to be inviting a declaration of war from the United States. The voice of the pacifist was heard here, as elsewhere, but did not make a very deep impression. The people generally felt that the time had arrived when war could not honorably be avoided and they were ready to assume whatever burdens it might impose on them. On the very day on which President Wilson delivered his memorable war message to Congress, the ground for his indictment of the German government was brought home to the people of this territory by news that five youths from Hawaii had lost their lives in the sinking of the *Aztec*.

The passage of the war resolution by Congress, April 5, 1917, and the issuance of the President's proclamation the next day declaring that "a state of war exists between the United States and the Imperial German Government," was the signal for Hawaii once more to declare its loyalty and pledge its unflinching support of the nation's cause. Appropriate resolutions were adopted by the legislature and by numerous clubs and organizations. At a special meeting of the Chamber of Commerce, at which that body passed a war resolution, President J. F. C. Hagens was enthusiastically applauded when he said, "Let us, therefore, place our full confidence in the course laid out by those chosen to lead us, those who are in control of the country's affairs, the President of the United States and his able advisers; let us follow them; let us support them, come what

may, a united Chamber, a united country." The newspapers, including those published in languages other than English, printed editorials strongly endorsing the action of Congress and the President and reminding their readers that they were in for war, not for patriotic speech-making only; that it was necessary to shoulder the gun—and the hoe—as well as to hoist the flag. "What Hawaii's response to the national call shall be, will determine what history shall say of the patriotism of Hawaii's people in 1917." *The Friend*, Hawaii's oldest periodical, made known its position in these words: "While continuing to stand for the principles of Universal Brotherhood and Peace, and proposing to uphold them until they are achieved, *The Friend* announces unequivocal support of the President and Congress of the United States in this national crisis and enlists for every service it may be able to render."

In anticipation of the action of Congress preparations were made for protecting the harbor and public property. A battalion of regulars came into Honolulu from Fort Shafter and camped in the Capitol grounds, where they remained until the middle of April. Guards were placed along the waterfront and on the piers. Late on Thursday, April 5, a strict censorship was placed on the wireless service; one curious result of this was that the outer islands were kept for a day or two in ignorance of the actual declaration of war.

In Hilo and the island of Hawaii, throughout February, March, and the early part of April, considerable uneasiness existed over the possibility of destruction of public property by German or other fanatics. About the end of March a guard of special police was placed over the wireless station at Kawaihae and over public works in and around Hilo. The governor was requested to call out some of the National Guard for patrol duty but no funds were available to pay for them. Governor Pinkham suggested to General Strong, commander of the Hawaiian Department, that part of the National Guard be mobilized in federal service, but he had no authority to do that. The citizens of Hilo also appealed directly to General Strong for a military guard. In response to these appeals a company of regular

troops was sent to Hilo about the middle of April for guard duty.

#### THE GERMAN SHIPS BECOME AMERICAN SHIPS

On the night of April 5, under instructions from Washington, the federal authorities took possession of all the refugee German vessels in Honolulu harbor, removed their crews to the Immigration Station, and placed armed military guards on each ship. On the following day the *O. J. D. Ahlers* at Hilo was likewise seized and at the earliest opportunity her crew was brought to Honolulu and joined the other German sailors at the Immigration Station. Later in the month the crews of two German merchantmen (*Solf* and *Elsass*), which had taken refuge at Pago Pago, Samoa, during the early months of the war, were brought to Honolulu, and in May the entire group of sailors, 116 in all, were taken to the mainland to be interned as enemy aliens until the close of the war. In September the crews of the *Geier* and *Locksun*, who had been kept at Schofield Barracks, were sent to the mainland and interned at Fort Douglas, Utah.

All of the German steamers in Honolulu harbor and the *Elsass*, which was towed here from Pago Pago (her boilers and machinery having been likewise damaged by her crew), were repaired and put into service for the United States Shipping Board under the American flag. Five of them were given a temporary overhauling at Honolulu or Hilo and towed to the coast for permanent repairs. Three of them (the *Staatssekretaer Kraetke*, the *Gouverneur Jaeschke*, and the *Elsass*) were given permanent repairs at Honolulu and went to the mainland under their own power and with cargoes in their holds. On going into the American merchant service all of these vessels were given new names as follows:

O. J. D. Ahlers.....	rechristened	Monticello
Pommern .....	"	Rappahannock
Setos .....	"	Itasca
Holsatia .....	"	Tippecanoe
Gouverneur Jaeschke ....	"	Watauga
Prinz Waldemar .....	"	Wacouta



Loongmoon .....	“	Coosa
Staatssekretaer Kraetke	“	Tacony (having been previously named Verdun)
Elsass .....	“	Appelles

Only the little motor schooner *Hermes* retained her old name and stayed in Hawaii. She was first used as a naval patrol boat and training ship for recruits, and subsequently converted to commercial use. She is still in service (1927), with Honolulu as her home port.

The gunboat *Geier* and collier *Locksun* were added to the United States navy, being repaired and placed in commission at the Pearl Harbor naval station. The *Geier* became the United States second-class cruiser *Carl Schurz*, named in honor of the German-born youth who became such a distinguished and valuable American citizen. Toward the end of the year (1917) the *Schurz* sailed to the Atlantic coast, where she was placed on patrol duty, having in her crew several island boys. In the latter part of June, 1918, off the coast of North Carolina, she was sunk as a result of a collision with the steamer *Florida*. One of the boys from Hawaii, Manuel Gouveia, Jr., was killed.

## CHAPTER II.

### MILITARY PARTICIPATION

#### I. The National Guard

##### PREPAREDNESS

WHEN the war broke out in August, 1914, the people of Hawaii did not foresee, any more than the rest of the world, the gigantic proportions which the struggle would assume. As months passed, the disregard of the rights of neutrals by the belligerent powers and the ravages of submarines brought home to many people the possibility that the United States might be drawn into the war, in spite of our will to avoid such an eventuality. A movement in favor of preparedness, whose small beginnings are discernible before 1914, gathered momentum and swept over the whole nation during 1915 and 1916. Military training camps for civilians were held in many parts of the country; "preparedness parades" marched through the streets of the cities; universal and compulsory military training was strongly advocated; the increase of the standing army and the navy was demanded. The enactment of the National Defense Act of June 3, 1916, was a direct response to the nation's call for more effective instruments of defense.

Hawaii felt the force of the movement for preparedness. In the legislature of 1915 a bill was introduced providing for compulsory military training of all male citizens. The Chamber of Commerce of Honolulu adopted a resolution favoring general military training and the establishment of training camps in all the states and territories. The establishment of a naval academy at Pearl Harbor was proposed. As signs of the times, the Honolulu School for Boys was changed to the Honolulu Military Academy, and Punahou School added military instruction to its curriculum. Hawaii had a special stake in the movement for preparedness, since the island of Oahu is a most important link in the chain of national defense. During these years the federal government announced plans calling for a great

strengthening of the military and naval establishments within the territory. Governor Pinkham, a most ardent advocate of preparedness, cooperated with the military authorities to the utmost extent of his ability and authority. One thing which he frequently cited as evidence of this cooperation was his action in having various tracts of land on Oahu set aside as camp sites for the use of the troops stationed on the island.

#### THE NAVAL MILITIA

In October, 1914, the Secretary of the Navy wrote to Governor Pinkham recommending the organization of a Naval Militia in Hawaii. Secretary Daniels followed this up with other letters urging the proposition as a matter of considerable importance. Governor Pinkham fell in with the idea but found there was no authority in territorial law for the proposed action. He therefore presented the subject to the legislature of 1915, which passed an act for the establishment of a Naval Militia but made no appropriation for its support. The latter difficulty was overcome by the governor through the use of his contingent fund. Organization was formally effected in January, 1916. Enlistment was started and equipment requisitioned; and the organization made its first public appearance on Memorial Day, May 30, 1916. Training was begun and in September the Naval Militia participated in a 15-day cruise on board the U. S. S. *St. Louis*. The commanding officer of the *St. Louis*, Lieutenant Commander V. S. Houston, one of Hawaii's own Annapolis graduates, was assigned by the Navy Department as Inspector-Instructor for the organization. At the end of 1916 the Naval Militia had a strength of 9 officers and 100 enlisted men.

Upon the outbreak of war between the United States and Germany the Naval Militia was almost immediately ordered into service. On being called to active duty the men were subjected to a very rigid physical examination, the number accepted being 7 officers and 43 enlisted men. The balance, 49 enlisted men, were discharged during the year 1918 for various reasons and the territory ceased to have a Naval Militia.

The men accepted for service were assigned to the U. S. S. *St. Louis* and sailed immediately for the Atlantic, where they served on the same ship until after the end of the war. Among the officers on the *St. Louis* was Lieutenant Commander Samuel Wilder King, another of Hawaii's Annapolis men. One of the naval militiamen from Hawaii, Lieutenant S. W. Tay, received the honor of being transferred to command of the converted yacht *Winona* in the Mediterranean. The record of the *St. Louis* is summarized in the "War Log of the U. S. S. *St. Louis*," which was published in 1919. The foreword says:

"A striking example of what the cruiser and transport force has accomplished is furnished by the first-class protected cruiser *St. Louis*, Capt. Gatewood Sanders Lincoln, U. S. N., commanding.

"Since the *St. Louis* left her peacetime station at Honolulu, 72 hours after Congress had declared a state of war existed between the United States and Germany, she has steamed over 120,000 miles. She participated in the first convoy of expeditionary forces to St. Nazaire, and in seven other outward convoys, totaling more than 100 ships, in which were carried thousands of soldiers and vast cargoes of supplies.

"From Halifax to Plymouth, through waters made perilous by skulking submarine and treacherous mine, she bore in safety a section of the famous commission of Colonel House, President Wilson's adviser.

"Meanwhile the *St. Louis* trained to efficiency over 1,200 men and 50 officers for armed guard and other duty. And lastly, the cruiser, unwearied by her long and grueling grind, and still 'making knots' as of old, aided in bringing home the laurelled warriors," serving as a troopship from December, 1918, to July, 1919.

#### BUILDING UP THE NATIONAL GUARD

The most conspicuous manifestation of the spirit of preparedness in Hawaii was the development of the National Guard. On June 30, 1915, the National Guard of Hawaii had an actual

strength of 58 officers and 919 enlisted men. One year later it had a strength of 233 officers and 4,811 enlisted men. This remarkable growth, giving the territory a military force, in proportion to population, far larger than any of the states, was the result of a recruiting campaign carried on during the year ending June 30, 1916; a campaign which was originated by Governor Pinkham as the principal feature of his preparedness program. While the most active period of recruiting began about the first of September, 1915, it is possible to trace the inception of the campaign back at least to the end of January of that year. On January 30, 1915, Governor Pinkham wrote as follows to Secretary of War Lindley M. Garrison:

"As you are undoubtedly aware, we have quite a large, well equipped National Guard in the Territory of Hawaii, considering our size and the character of our population. I understand it to be the policy of the War Department to increase the National Guard in numbers and efficiency. Our Legislature convenes February 17th and I am given to understand quite a faction will be very lukewarm, to say the least, relative to making appropriations for our National Guard of Hawaii, taking the view the large number of regular troops, now here and coming can be depended on to maintain local order as well as defend this island. My own idea is preparedness is the solution of our situation, and that the Territory owes it to the national government, as well as to itself, to amply provide for the support of the present force, and such additions as will meet the standard contemplated. The Honorable Secretary of the Navy has requested the formation of a local Naval Militia. It would aid me in my representations to the Legislature if I could have a cablegram from you indicating your desire that the National Guard should be maintained in its present force, as organized, and to be increased as men are available."

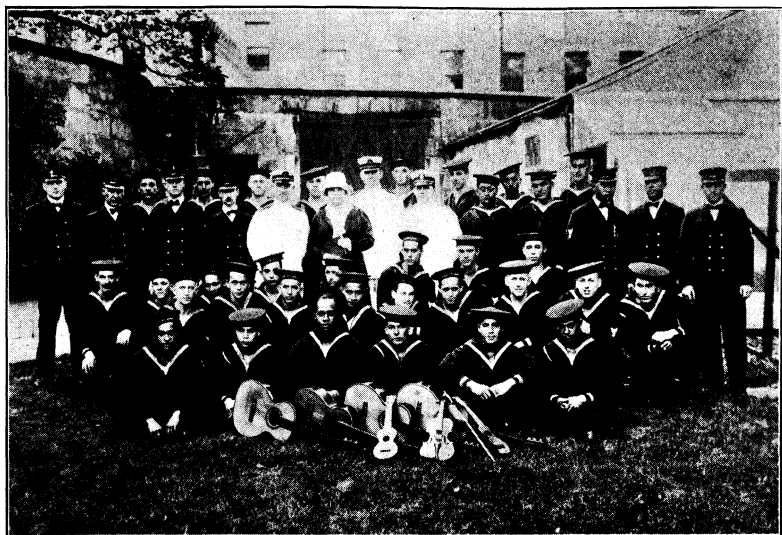
To this letter Governor Pinkham, on February 17, received exactly the reply he desired, in the form of a cablegram from Secretary Garrison, reading: "Department anxious Hawaii maintain increased militia strength and efficiency. Territory

owes it to itself and national government to do this. Suggest you present matter legislature."

The message of the Secretary of War was given suitable publicity and proved a powerful factor in stirring up interest not only in the National Guard but in the general subject of preparedness. The appropriation for the National Guard by the legislature of 1915 showed a substantial increase over that made in 1913, although as matters developed it proved to be wholly inadequate. The Governor directed the Adjutant General to investigate the possibility of organizing new companies of the Guard on the outside islands and stated that it would be the policy of the administration to raise at least a battalion (of four companies) on the island of Hawaii and one or two companies on Maui and Kauai. The investigation revealed considerable enthusiasm and showed clearly that new companies could be organized without much difficulty.

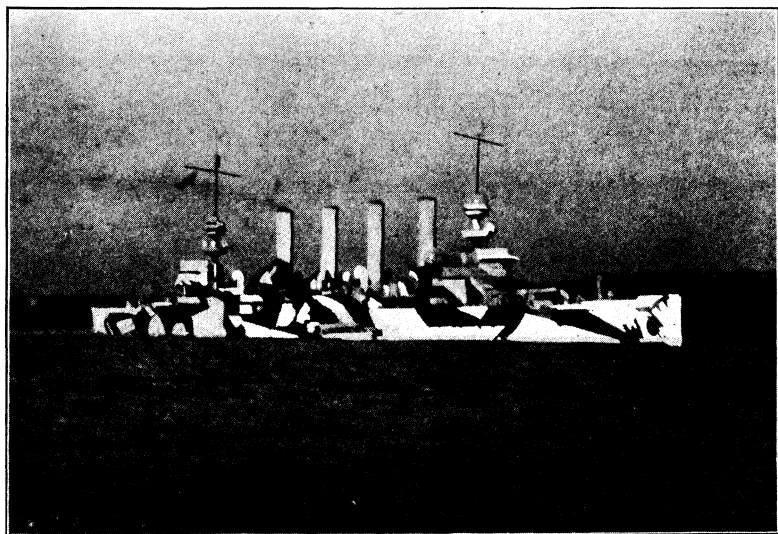
In order the better to carry out his adopted policy, Governor Pinkham on August 13 appointed Colonel Samuel I. Johnson as Adjutant General and instructed him to proceed immediately with the work of building up the National Guard to the maximum strength and efficiency that it was possible to attain. Colonel Johnson was well fitted for the task. He was born in Russia of a well known Cossack family and was educated for a military career, had traveled widely and had a most romantic personal history. He had lived in Hawaii for many years, serving much of the time in the National Guard, in which he attained the rank of Colonel and the command of the First Regiment. He then retired and at the time of his appointment as Adjutant General was in business on the island of Hawaii. Prior to this appointment he had done much to stir up interest in the National Guard. Governor Pinkham evidently had him in mind for some months before the appointment was made, for in March he wrote to the Adjutant General then in office:

"In case we have the means to increase the militia on Hawaii to four infantry companies and one cavalry company, I desire you to carefully consider the advisability of placing again on the active list Col. Samuel Johnson, retired. He, at



FORMER HAWAII NAVAL MILITIAMEN SERVING ON U.S.S. "ST. LOUIS" ENTERTAINED AT A PICNIC PARTY BY MRS. RUSH (FORMERLY MISS JENNIE HARE OF HAWAII), WIFE OF CAPT. WM. R. RUSH, U.S.N., COMMANDANT OF BOSTON NAVY YARD DURING THE WAR

In the center (left to right): Lt. Com. S. W. King, Mrs. Rush, Lt. (j.g.) J. A. McKeown, Ensign H. W. Engel



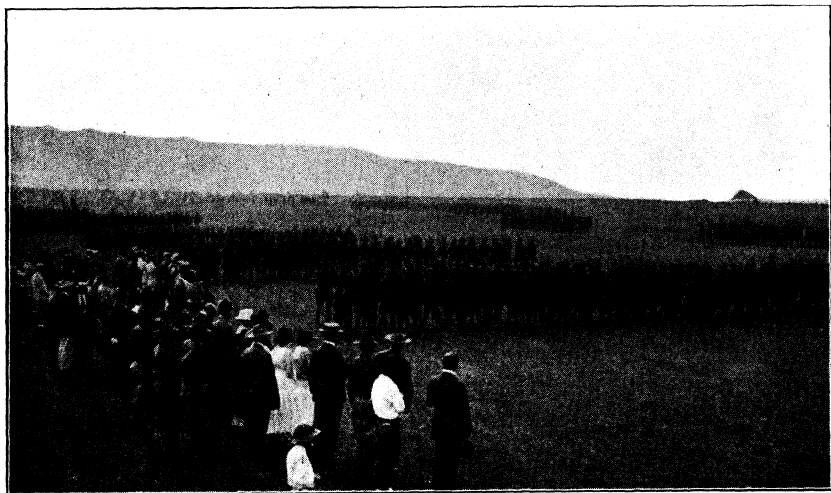
U.S.S. "ST. LOUIS" IN HER WAR DRESS



BRIG. GEN. S. I. JOHNSON  
Adjutant General of Territory



"ROOKIE" SAM JOHNSON  
In Trench at Officers' Training  
Camp



HAWAIIAN NATIONAL GUARD CAVALRY AND INFANTRY ON  
REVIEW AT CAMP LILIUOKALANI



one time, was a very keen officer. His capacity and enthusiasm are such he should receive our best thought as to securing his services."

Colonel Johnson possessed the qualities most needed for the task to which he was now called—capacity for hard work, administrative ability, and contagious enthusiasm. After he had been advanced to the rank of Brigadier General, the following comment was made about him by Colonel J. D. Easton of the Second Hawaiian Regiment, in connection with the inspection of that regiment in January, 1917: "While the officers of the regiment have worked hard to get the men out, a great deal of credit is due General Johnson for the assistance he has given us. The General has been up early in the morning and stayed up late at nights helping us round up the men. When it comes to instilling enthusiasm, the General is in a class by himself, and enthusiasm seems to pour from his finger tips, and is taken up by all with whom he comes in contact."

The recruiting campaign was actively begun about the first of September, 1915, and was prosecuted with great vigor during the next eight or ten months. The governor gave unfailing support to the enterprise, and the newspapers and business interests cooperated most heartily. The results of the campaign can hardly be better summarized than in the words of the official reports of the Adjutant General to the governor. In the report for the fiscal year ending June 30, 1916, he says:

"The fiscal year 1915-1916 was probably the most important in the history of the National Guard of Hawaii, marking not only an increase in strength and in number of organizations, but also a great increase in general interest in National Guard matters throughout the Territory. The returns of June 30, 1916, show more than five times as many officers and enlisted men as were on the rolls June 30, 1915. The organizations are distributed between Oahu, Hawaii, Maui and Kauai, almost every community having representation in the military service of the Territory. During the year the National Guard expanded not only numerically and geographically, but in the matter of auxiliary troops as well. Composed formerly of only Infantry

and Hospital Corps, the National Guard of Hawaii now includes Cavalry, Coast Artillery, Engineers, and Signal Corps.

"The policy of National Guard expansion was inaugurated by the Governor, and active recruiting was commenced soon after the appointment of the present Adjutant General, . . .

"The organization of twelve new Infantry companies and one troop of Cavalry on the island of Hawaii was accomplished within the first few weeks of the recruiting campaign. Four new companies on Maui and six new companies on Kauai were organized soon after the Hawaii units, and on November 12, 1915, the organization of an Infantry brigade was announced in Executive Orders. The Adjutant General, promoted from Colonel to Brigadier General, being assigned to its command in addition to his other duties.

"A company of Engineers (pioneer) was organized at Honolulu during September, 1915, and in January, 1916, a Field Company of Signal Corps was also organized.

"In the original brigade organization, the 3rd Infantry was divided between Maui and Kauai, each island supporting six companies, with headquarters on Maui. The officers of both islands announced their ability to support a full regiment, and received authority to organize six additional companies, and the necessary headquarters detachments, on each island. On February 24, 1916, the organization of the 4th Infantry, island of Kauai, was announced in general orders, and on March 18, 1916, the 3rd Infantry, island of Maui, was completed, and its organization announced in general orders.

"A Coast Artillery Corps was organized in May, 1916, the Corps numbering 200 on June 30, with one company organized and drilling, and two other companies in process of organization.

. . .

"In the reorganization of the National Guard of Hawaii, the plantation interests have been most liberal in securing the enlistment of their men, and in actual donations to assist in organizing and maintaining new units. It is estimated that the National Guard of Hawaii has received from plantations and public subscriptions over \$200,000, during the last fiscal year,

computing the value of land donated for rifle ranges and camp sites; storehouses; temporary and permanent armories; and the guarantee of transportation for men to and from assembly points. In figuring this total the cost of such transportation for one year has been considered. ‘

“Although increases in the National Guard of Hawaii have been at the direct request of the War Department, sufficient funds have not been available to even partially equip all new organizations. At the present time the lack of equipment is the most serious single obstacle the National Guard has to overcome. . . .

“The National Guard of Hawaii, backed at all times by the loyal support of the Governor, has made great progress during the fiscal year, just closed. The work of reorganization is by no means over, however, and the year 1916-1917 will be a crucial one for the organization. To weld together the new units into a smooth-running military machine will require time and labor, which must be backed by a spirit of co-operation throughout the entire Guard. Ultimate success is largely dependent on the issue of equipment to organizations which, in some cases, have been waiting nine months for their arms and uniforms. . . .”

In his report for the two years ending December 31, 1916, Adjutant General Johnson said:

“Certainly the National Guard of Hawaii has grown to proportions which would have been considered impossible a few years ago. The general sentiment for preparedness which has swept the country within the past year has undoubtedly helped local recruiting, but it must be remembered that Hawaii set the pace in this regard and that National Guard increases were well under way before continental United States, as a whole, took up the matter of increased national defense.

“As to efficiency, it is a tremendous undertaking to make finished soldiers out of raw recruits under the best of circumstances, and in the National Guard, where drill periods are limited to a few hours a week and where competent instructors are comparatively few, the task is many times more difficult. It is believed that good progress has been made and that much

better results can be expected now that equipment is available, or soon to be available for all organizations.

"The lack of clothing and equipment has been a great setback to National Guard progress during the past year and a half. The small appropriation to the Territory for the fiscal year 1915-16, based on the former National Guard strength of one regiment, was insufficient to purchase supplies for new organizations and the War Department was only able to furnish equipment for 12 new companies during that period. It was not until August 29, 1916, that the Army appropriation bill became a law and that funds for the National Guard of Hawaii became available. Due to the troubles on the Mexican border, all available equipment and military supplies were needed for the Militia of continental United States, and only towards the close of 1916 did equipment for Hawaii arrive.

"The faithful drilling and unflagging enthusiasm of both officers and men belonging to National Guard organizations which had little or no equipment is greatly to be commended. The spirit which carried these men through the many disappointments of the past year and a half is sure to produce the desired results now that the Federal Government has been able to meet the needs of Hawaii. . . .

"In proportion to the population of military age and available for service, Hawaii leads every State in the Union in the matter of its organized Militia. This fact has been widely commented on by newspapers and periodicals both at home and abroad, and aside from military considerations, the National Guard has proved a splendid medium of publicity for Hawaii."

As a result of the recruiting campaign Hawaii's military establishment had been brought up from one regiment to a brigade containing four regiments of infantry (one on each of the four principal islands) together with auxiliary organizations. By July, 1916, Governor Pinkham decided that the size then reached (just over 5,000 men) was as much as the territory could sustain; he so informed the Adjutant General and instructed him to direct his efforts toward maintaining the existing numbers and organizations and bringing them into a

high state of efficiency. That was no easy undertaking, for besides the ordinary difficulties encountered in turning raw recruits into disciplined soldiers, there were several circumstances which tended to dishearten the guardsmen and break down their interest and enthusiasm.

Foremost of these was the delay in providing equipment, referred to in the Adjutant General's reports. A second discouraging feature was the delay and uncertainty in the matter of the pay to be received from the national government after the federalization of the National Guard under the National Defense Act of June 3, 1916. This was due in part to conflicting opinions about the oath required of guardsmen by that act and in part to delay in promulgating the regulations governing payment. The net result was a good deal of dissatisfaction among the members of the Guard organizations and a tendency to let down in attendance at drills. The annual inspection of the National Guard in 1917 was set for January and February, a month earlier than usual. In a special communication to Governor Pinkham, Brigadier General Johnson pointed out that it would be much better if the inspection could be held at the usual time, since a large amount of long delayed equipment was just about to arrive and its distribution would revive the flagging interest of the men. A later inspection would also interfere less with the grinding season of the various sugar plantations. The inspection was held, however, according to schedule at the earlier dates and turned out very satisfactorily, due to the hard work and enthusiasm of the Adjutant General and an encouraging message from the governor.

A third difficulty which interfered with keeping the National Guard up to maximum strength and efficiency was the uncertainty as to the status of Filipinos in the matter of eligibility for citizenship. The theory on which Governor Pinkham based his preparedness program was that Hawaii should make full use of her available man power. There were in the Territory some 12,000 to 15,000 Filipinos of military age, most of whom were good material for the Guard. In view of the precedent afforded by the Philippine Scouts and Constabulary, the gov-

ernor believed that Filipinos should be permitted and encouraged to join the National Guard of Hawaii. The same belief was held by successive commanders of the Hawaiian Department of the United States army. This belief was strengthened by the decision of United States District Judge C. F. Clemons in the case of Marcus Solis, March 25, 1916, holding that Filipinos were eligible for United States citizenship. The eligibility of Filipinos had been strongly questioned, and there were many lawyers and students who doubted the correctness of Judge Clemons' decision. Nevertheless, as a result of the encouragement given them Filipinos enlisted in large numbers; by the end of 1915 nearly 600 of them were enrolled, and by the end of 1916 Filipinos comprised more than half the enlisted strength of the National Guard of Hawaii. With proper training they ranked high in efficiency. The commander of the Hawaiian Department wrote to the Adjutant General of the Army in August, 1916, "I have observed the work of Company M, 1st Infantry, National Guard of Hawaii, composed of white officers and Filipino enlisted men, and consider it the best company in the regiment. The senior inspector-instructor informs me that it is the best trained company in the Hawaiian National Guard and that the men take great interest in their work."

The National Defense Act of June 3, 1916, under which the National Guard was federalized, provided that the members of the Guard should be citizens of the United States or persons who had legally declared their intention of becoming citizens. Early in July the Militia Bureau of the War Department wrote to Adjutant General Johnson, failing to recognize the Filipino guardsmen, apparently basing the action on the National Defense Act and ignoring Judge Clemons' decision. The Militia Bureau had already suggested that congressional action should be sought to allow enlistment of Filipinos in the Hawaiian National Guard. Governor Pinkham immediately sent a wireless message to Secretary of War Baker urging such action, reinforcing this with long letters to Secretary Baker and Secretary Lane. The commander of the Hawaiian Department wrote to the Adjutant General of the Army to the same effect. The representations

to the Washington authorities soon brought a message from the Militia Bureau conveying an approved opinion of the Judge Advocate General that "if Filipinos are being admitted to citizenship by courts the question is determined in their favor and they may qualify as respects citizenship for membership in National Guard."

That settled the matter for the time being; but on December 30, 1916, United States District Judge H. W. Vaughan handed down a decision to the effect that Filipinos were not eligible for United States citizenship. Governor Pinkham again appealed to the Secretary of War, recommending and urging an amendment to the National Defense Act to permit the enlistment of Filipinos in the National Guard of Hawaii. The matter was favorably considered by the War Department and on April 3, 1917, Secretary Baker replied as follows to the governor's letter:

"The War Department appreciates your effort to build up and render efficient the National Guard of Hawaii. It believes also that Filipinos have demonstrated their loyalty and efficiency as soldiers. Upon the recommendation of the Judge Advocate General a proviso expressed as follows, to be added to Section 69 of the National Defense Act, will be recommended to Congress for consideration during its coming session: 'Provided, That in the Territory of Hawaii the National Guard may include citizens of the Philippine Islands.' Pending action upon such recommendation, citizens of the Philippine Islands already enlisted in the National Guard of Hawaii should not be discharged."

#### SHALL THE NATIONAL GUARD BE MOBILIZED?

The action of the United States government at the beginning of February, 1917, in breaking diplomatic relations with Germany—an action which was almost universally looked upon as only a prelude to a declaration of war, which in fact came two months later—seemed to negative all the assumptions on which Governor Pinkham had based his National Guard policy. His aim had been to prepare for defense against an enemy who would come from across the Pacific and attack Hawaii as the

first blow directed at the United States. In a letter written in April, 1917, he said, "The Governor, in trying to build up the National Guard had no reason to anticipate any declaration of war with a Trans-Atlantic country, and only a possibility of one with a Trans-Pacific country. In the latter position he was cooperating with the United States War Department and the Hawaiian Department." The ideas underlying Governor Pinkham's preparedness program can be gathered from his letters and speeches. In a personal and confidential letter to the Secretary of War written in October, 1915, he says:

"As you are aware our position differs from any other political division of the United States. The Territory essentially is comprised of four islands, located 2,100 miles from the mainland with limited water transportation, three of which need Territorial policing in times of trouble. One only, the island of Oahu, has stationed thereon the regular United States Army and Navy, which in time of war should not be compelled to do local police duty. The island is so small, 598 square miles, there would be no opportunity for anyone to retreat, hide, depart or avoid action. Our conception of the duties and use of the National Guard in Hawaii is to perform police and constabulary duty on three islands, maintaining local island law and order; on the island of Oahu to first maintain law and order, thus relieving the Regular Army of that care. This being secure, to turn into active warfare, assisting the regular forces as may be directed. In case of war, this island community of Oahu would be so unavoidably exposed, everyone able to use a rifle or be otherwise useful, would have to take a hand in defense without military technicalities. This is so obvious the community is willing to prepare itself, as are the other islands, for their own local security."

The governor's plans, therefore, did not contemplate that the National Guard would ever be called for service overseas; nor did he expect the organizations on the outer islands to be called even for service on Oahu, except in case of grave emergency. In this position he was encouraged by the action of the War Department. It was the announced policy of that Department



to consider the National Guard of Hawaii as a force organized and trained primarily for insular defense. In a letter written by Colonel F. F. Baldwin, commander of the 3rd Hawaiian Infantry, to Brigadier General Johnson, April 12, 1917, appears the following significant passage:

"In February, 1916, you will remember that the Alexander & Baldwin people were very much exercised over the fact that so many of the plantation people on Maui and Kauai were joining the National Guard, and you will remember that at that time you arranged a conference at the Army headquarters to which Mr. Alexander and I were invited to discuss National Guard affairs with you, Major Conklin and Major Lincoln. At that meeting we were assured by Major Conklin, then Chief of Staff in Honolulu, that the National Guard organizations on the different islands would not be taken from their respective islands unless the Island of Oahu was being attacked. After the assurances we received at that time, we felt perfectly safe in getting as many as possible of the plantation and railroad men into the Guard."

The federalization of the National Guard under the provisions of the National Defense Act of June 3, 1916, somewhat altered the relation of the Hawaiian Guard to the problem of national defense in general; and the events of February, March, and April, 1917, put an entirely new face on the local situation. It was freely predicted that the National Guard would soon be mobilized on Oahu and many believed that at no very distant date it might be ordered to duty overseas. Governor Pinkham did not share the latter belief, although he recognized the possibility of such action. The members of the National Guard, particularly the commanding officers, were eager for mobilization, if for no other purpose in order to have a period of intensive training. As early as September, 1916, Adjutant General Johnson had suggested to the Chief of the Militia Bureau that part of the Hawaiian Guard be sent to the Mexican border along with the militia from other states, or if that was not done, that the island organizations be mobilized at Schofield Barracks for a period of intensive field training. This suggestion was not

approved; but the military authorities gave some thought to the subject of mobilization after the break with Germany. How mobilization would effect the island of Maui was shown in a report to the Chief of the Militia Bureau by Captain R. P. Harbold, 25th Infantry, Inspector-Instructor Hawaiian National Guard, April 11, 1917. He said:

"The present situation regarding the probable mobilization of the National Guard of this Territory on the Island of Oahu has forcibly presented the glaring faults in its organization on this Island [Maui] . . . . An Island with 2,000 male voters and 1,500 Filipino laborers is attempting to maintain a regiment that may be called away from the Island at any moment. The composition of this regiment is about as follows: Whites, 100; Hawaiians and part-Hawaiians, 250; Portuguese, 100; Filipinos, 557; total strength, 1,007. By a comparison of the figures we find that approximately 29% of the white voters, 20% of the Hawaiians, and 25% of the Portuguese are in the Guard, and approximately 37% of the male Filipinos on the Island are enlisted. These figures are startling and serious. The men now enlisted represent the able-bodied and most physically fit on the Island. Those holding commissions are the representative business and professional men. To remove this regiment would be a drain on labor conditions, industrial management and supply, and community welfare that has seldom been equalled in the history of the United States. This Island is attempting to carry too large a burden, a burden that was assumed without knowing the possibilities that might arise . . . an organization that is of great importance so far as local conditions may require its use and presence, but which would cause excessive industrial calamities by removing it to Oahu for any other purpose than that of grave imminent danger."

Captain Harbold therefore recommended that the regiment on Maui be reduced to a battalion of 400 men, which he considered a practical figure. The same considerations, though to a less acute extent, applied to the other outside islands. It must be observed, also, that all the Hawaiian regiments were far below their authorized peace strength. Under the National

Defense Act it was necessary for them to be considerably augmented. With war actually begun against Germany, it was the policy of the War Department to bring all organizations up to war strength. For the National Guard of Hawaii this would mean recruiting about 4,000 additional men, giving a total strength of approximately 8,500 men. Governor Pinkham on April 14 issued a proclamation appealing for enlistments in the Guard, and on the same day Adjutant General Johnson directed the commanders of the several regiments to secure all possible volunteer enlistments in order to bring the organizations to war strength. The legislature, by an act approved April 27, appropriated \$1,000 "for expenses necessary to carry on a campaign of publicity in the interest of securing volunteers to the Hawaiian national guard in accordance with the policy of the War Department and proclamation of the governor of Hawaii."

As a preliminary to mobilization the War Department on April 9 issued a general order for the discharge of all enlisted men of the National Guard having families dependent upon them for support. Before this order was received in Hawaii, the commander of the Hawaiian Department and Governor Pinkham had sent cablegrams to Washington requesting authority for just such discharges on the ground that it was for the best interests of the government and the industrial situation in the islands. The order for these discharges was transmitted to Governor Pinkham from Hawaiian Department headquarters on April 25 with a memorandum in which it was stated, "Due to the fact that mobilization will probably be ordered in the near future it is important that the action in this matter be expedited in every way possible." There were other hints of an impending mobilization; most of these were of a general character, without specific application to Hawaii, but they were generally interpreted as forecasting mobilization of the Hawaiian guard. However, no orders for mobilization were received. On May 15 Adjutant General Johnson reported that 1,324 men with dependent families had been discharged, leaving a strength of 3,074, and making it necessary to recruit 5,663 men in order to bring the four regiments up to war strength. He added that a recruit-

ing campaign was being planned, but that it was difficult to secure recruits due to the uncertainty as to mobilization. The discharge of men with dependent families had taken out of the Guard many non-commissioned officers and a large number of the most experienced men.

In the meanwhile, some other influences had been brought to bear on the National Guard situation. In March and April, when it began to seem likely that the National Guard would be mobilized, resulting in taking a large number of laborers from the sugar plantations, the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association made an effort to secure transportation upon United States army transports for Filipinos to replace in part those called into service. This was done with the full knowledge of the commander of the Hawaiian Department. At the time there were several hundred Filipinos waiting in Manila for passage, the Pacific transportation lines not being able to give space; but army transports were returning from the Philippines with steerage practically unoccupied. The War Department replied that the proposition could only be considered on the request of the governor of the territory. The matter was then presented to Governor Pinkham, who, after some deliberation, on April 26 sent the following cablegram to the Secretary of the Interior:

"Owing to Filipino labor being absorbed by National Guard and lack of commercial transportation Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association request relief through Quartermaster General directing transports sailing light from Manila to accept recruited labor for passage to Honolulu. The difference if any between commercial cost and transport fare will be deposited for care or return home of Filipinos. I recommend granting request on specific signed terms and agreements."

A second message to similar effect was sent about two weeks later. The request was refused by the War Department for legal and other reasons; but the cablegram quoted above had an effect which the governor did not anticipate or relish, as will presently be seen.

The night before Governor Pinkham dispatched the cablegram just referred to, he had received the following message

from Secretary of the Interior Franklin K. Lane: "Please urge upon your people fullest possible use of all land this year. Make yourselves as nearly self-supporting as possible in food-stuffs and increase your surplus available for continental consumption." This appeal focussed attention upon a question which had already received serious consideration and resulted directly and quickly in the creation of the Territorial Food Commission. The work of this Commission will be described in detail in a later chapter; in this place we are concerned only with its influence upon the status of the National Guard. The Food Commission believed that one of the greatest services Hawaii could render to the nation and to the Allies was to produce maximum sugar crops, and that it was therefore of great importance to interfere as little as possible with the general industrial situation and particularly with the supply of plantation labor. They faced squarely the dilemma, "Sugar or soldiers?", and concluded that the facts of the local situation ought to be placed before the Washington authorities. On May 11 the Commission asked Governor Pinkham to forward to Secretary Lane a message which it had prepared setting forth briefly the effect which it believed the mobilization of the National Guard would have on the sugar industry and urging that the mobilization be deferred if possible until September, by which time the harvesting and planting rush would be over and opportunity would have been afforded to introduce more farm laborers.

Governor Pinkham refused to send this message; but the members of the Food Commission, in view of the expected mobilization and of the projected campaign to recruit the National Guard to full war strength of over 8,000 men, informed the governor of their intention to cable to Secretary Lane on their own responsibility and handed him a copy of a new message they had prepared for transmission, in which they reviewed the situation more in detail, repeated their recommendation that mobilization be deferred until September, and in addition urged that the National Guard be reduced to two regiments.

All of this correspondence was brought to the attention of

Brigadier General F. S. Strong, Commander of the Hawaiian Department. General Strong had also before him Captain Harbold's report and recommendation on the Maui National Guard, and he was aware of the views of the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association, and conversant with the current discussion of the question in the press and elsewhere. Several conferences were held and it was concluded that the best practical solution of the problem would be to reduce the National Guard by consolidation to two regiments, which at war strength would take a little over 4,000 men. It was in effect agreed that if this reduction were brought about, there could be no legitimate objection to mobilization. On May 16 General Strong cabled to the War Department, earnestly recommending "that National Guard organizations Hawaii be reduced, by consolidation, to two regiments of Infantry, two companies Coast Artillery, one company Signal Corps, one troop Cavalry, and one company Engineers, which is believed to be maximum number Hawaii can maintain at war strength. . . . The Governor of the Territory and the Territorial Food Commission, recently appointed, concur in this recommendation."

In view of the uncertainty as to mobilization, Adjutant General Johnson on May 21, with the approval of General Strong, cabled to the Chief of the Militia Bureau, stating that the best recruiting results would be obtained if the National Guard were immediately drafted and asking directly whether the Hawaiian guard was to be called, and if so, when. A reply was received the next day: "Not present intention to mobilize, call, or draft National Guard in Hawaii. They will be held in reserve." This was a hard blow to the Guard and not to be accepted as final without an effort to reverse the decision. General Johnson conferred with General Strong and the latter immediately wrote to the War Department strongly recommending "a reconsideration of this decision and a mobilization of the National Guard of Hawaii at the earliest practicable moment at least for a period of three months intensive training." General Strong pointed out the importance, as a general proposition, of having a strong and efficient National Guard in Hawaii, and showed that "pursuant

to orders from the Militia Bureau all married men have been discharged. This reduces most of the organizations below peace strength and makes recruiting imperative if the guard is to continue to be recognized. . . . The cable speaks of holding the guard as a reserve. If it is not recruited up and trained it will not be worth anything as a reserve either in point of number or efficiency; without mobilization it would be virtually impossible to secure the necessary recruits." He argued that the National Guard should be in position to relieve the regular army units in garrison on Oahu in case the latter were ordered overseas. "In no other way than by mobilization can the guard of Hawaii be trained and made into a force of any value." In conclusion he stated that under the consolidation recommended in his cablegram of May 16 a relatively small number of men would be taken from the plantations. General Strong's letter was a cogent statement of the case for mobilization. Adjutant General Johnson supplemented it with a personal appeal to Brigadier General Mann, Chief of the Militia Bureau.

In spite of the arguments presented, the decision already made was not reversed. General Strong's letter was returned with an endorsement to that effect; and General Mann, replying to General Johnson under date June 11, 1917, informed him that he could not, in view of all the facts and circumstances involved, recommend any modification of the decision not to mobilize, call, or draft the National Guard of Hawaii. "That decision," he said, "was rendered by the Secretary of War after careful consideration of the several important features involved in the question of how to treat the Hawaiian National Guard in its relation to vital economic affairs in that Territory, and not until statements or recommendations of the Delegate from Hawaii and the Territorial Food Commission and others had been presented and considered. Of course, the War Department appreciates the patriotic zeal and loyalty of the Hawaiians so laudably manifested in their response to your plans to increase the National Guard contingent to a total number in excess of the proportionate obligations of their territory, but when it became so apparent that the withdrawal of the Hawaiian Na-

tional Guardsmen from their usual civic avocations would affect so radically the business and economic conditions of the territory as to render necessary the Governor's application to have laborers imported on United States transports from the Philippine Islands to take their places, especially in the sugar industry, there could be but one decision, and as long as the conditions remain unchanged, I don't see how anyone could reasonably ask to have the decision changed. What has been done was for the best interests of the Territory, and I am sure that when this fact is made known, the people at large, including the members of the National Guard, will not fail to appreciate the situation."

This was definite and made it clear that there was no immediate prospect of mobilization. As General Mann expressed it, the status of the National Guard of Hawaii was to be "regarded as one of readiness to meet any local or outside exigency that might arise, being authorized meanwhile . . . to receive field instructions and to be otherwise improved and encouraged." In the early part of June Governor Pinkham received word from the War Department that the National Guard of Hawaii would not be drafted into federal service for service outside the limits of the territory, and would not be called at all unless a local emergency arose.

It has seemed necessary to go rather fully into this matter of the failure to mobilize the National Guard in 1917 because the question of who was responsible for it became subsequently a matter of heated controversy, relatively as important as the more famous question, "Who killed Cock Robin?" One of the local newspapers fiercely accused the governor of "spiking the guns of the National Guard;" the governor in turn tried to fix the blame on the Territorial Food Commission. The Delegate to Congress and the Sugar Planters' Association came in for a share of criticism, though each of them categorically denied the charge. When all the available evidence is examined, it seems clear that the responsibility really rests on a set of circumstances over which no single individual or single group of individuals had complete control. It is besides entirely probable that



the War Department did not at any time during the spring and summer of 1917 have any intention of calling the Hawaiian National Guard into active service.

#### REORGANIZING THE NATIONAL GUARD

At the end of May General Strong received from the War Department cabled orders authorizing him to consolidate and reduce the National Guard organizations of Hawaii in accordance with the recommendations contained in his cablegram of May 16. Plans were immediately laid for carrying out the necessary reorganization. Under the new arrangement the three regiments on the outer islands were reduced to one regiment, to be known as the 2nd Regiment, and each of the three islands (Hawaii, Maui, and Kauai) was called upon to furnish one battalion of four lettered companies of infantry. The headquarters of this regiment was on Hawaii and that island furnished the headquarters company, machine gun company, and supply company required for the regiment, in addition to its battalion of four lettered companies. Although the island of Oahu continued to furnish the entire 1st Regiment, it was considerably reorganized. Under the old arrangement the whole regiment had been drawn from the city of Honolulu; under the new plan, four lettered companies were recruited from the country districts, the four companies being located at Aiea, Ewa, Waialua, and Waipahu.

In reorganizing the regiment on Oahu it was the aim, as far as possible, to keep the different races in separate companies. So there were Hawaiian, Filipino, Portuguese, and Anglo-Saxon companies, and finally a Japanese company. The enlistment of the latter company represented a change of policy in National Guard affairs. During the recruiting campaign of 1915-1916 the Hawaiian-born Japanese had not been encouraged to join the Guard. While no actual discrimination was practiced, and a few enlisted, there is evidence to show that they were not much wanted. But under the changed conditions of 1917, when Governor Pinkham found, from the records of the Selective Draft, that about 600 Hawaiian-born Japanese had

registered, nearly a third of them on the island of Oahu, he suggested to Adjutant General Johnson the feasibility of recruiting a Japanese company for the 1st Regiment. The plan was most favorably received and little difficulty was experienced in carrying it out. This, the first Japanese company under the American flag, was mustered in about the middle of August.

During the fall of 1917, an active recruiting campaign was carried on, with a fair degree of success. In view of the decisions of the War Department affecting the local Guard, Governor Pinkham and Adjutant General Johnson requested permission to enlist again married men with dependent families, providing their pay on active service would be sufficient to support their families. The permission was granted and proved very helpful, since it made possible the enlistment of plantation and other laborers earning small wages. At the close of the year the enlisted strength of the National Guard was 3,273 men. This was about 1,000 less than the strength at the end of March, on the eve of the drastic changes which the Guard experienced throughout 1917.

During the latter part of the year some units of the 1st Regiment had a taste of active service. About the beginning of October typhoid germs were discovered in the Nuuanu water supply. Long before this, the *Advertiser* had suggested the advisability of placing a guard over the city water system, but nothing was done until it was found that the water was contaminated. Then the Mayor and Board of Supervisors became quite active and a request was sent to Governor Pinkham to have guards placed. The recently organized Japanese company was given the honor of being first called to duty. On the afternoon of October 13 a detachment of 60 men under Second Lieutenant D. L. Mackaye was sent up the valley along the pali road and around the reservoirs. The men laid out a camp, pitched and floored their tents, cut trails, and worked out an efficient patrol system. It was hard work under disagreeable weather conditions, but it was well done. At the end of ten days the Japanese were relieved by another detachment and they in turn by others. The Nuuanu water patrol was maintained by the National

Guard from October 13 to January 31, when the work was taken over by the police department of the city and county.

The outstanding feature of National Guard history during the last half of the year 1917 was the annual encampment held at Kawaihoa, Oahu, November 9-27. The entire brigade participated, each organization being in camp for a period of at least fifteen days, as required by the National Defense Act. The aged Hawaiian Queen was honored by the official order giving to the Guard camp the name "Camp Liliuokalani;" on the opening day the former sovereign of the islands passed away, and the National Guardsmen went into camp with the flag at half mast. A large corps of commissioned and non-commissioned officers from the regular army was detailed to the work of instructing the territorial soldiers and much benefit resulted from the encampment, although, for various reasons, the benefit was not as great as had been anticipated. The commander of the Camp, General Johnson, was a student in the Reserve Officers' Training Camp then in progress at Schofield Barracks and was absent from Camp Liliuokalani about two-thirds of the time. Due to the recent changes in the National Guard organization a very large proportion of the men were virtually raw recruits and many of the officers were inexperienced. Discipline was somewhat lax, and the regular schedule of drill and instruction was interfered with by preparations for a review of the brigade by a group of visiting Congressmen which was held November 22 and by the taking of pictures. An unsuccessful attempt was made to have the encampment extended to a period of two or three months.

The two weeks spent by the Guard at Kawaihoa revealed various defects which needed correction, and this work was taken in hand promptly and effectively. Beginning the first of January a rigid drill schedule and a series of officers' instruction classes were gotten under way under the supervision of Captain E. F. Witsell of the regular army, senior inspector-instructor for the Hawaiian National Guard. This intensive training was kept up for a period of several months, practically to the time of mobilization, and resulted in bringing the Guard to a relatively

high state of efficiency. Much credit is due Captain Witsell for the effective work done by him during this period. During these months some changes in organization were made, particularly in the 2nd Regiment; there were also changes in personnel, designed to give the two regiments greater effectiveness and availability. In February, Brigadier General Johnson received a commission as Major in the National Army with assignment to Camp Fremont, California. His place as Adjutant General was taken by Major Will Wayne, first as Acting Adjutant General and then as Adjutant General under presidential appointment with the rank of Colonel.

#### THE NATIONAL GUARD IN FEDERAL SERVICE

As the crisis of the war approached, with American troops pouring into France by the tens and hundreds of thousands, the Hawaiian Guard became restless under its enforced inactivity. The reorganization effected during 1917 had removed all local opposition to mobilization, and the patriotic citizens of the territory were as anxious as the guardsmen to see them in service. At the end of January, 1918, the officers of the Guard sent to the Secretary of War, through the governor, an urgent appeal for mobilization. The reply received was that the "War Department has utmost confidence in loyalty, valor and patriotism National Guard of Hawaii and has considered its present status as constituting an efficient reserve for service in Islands. Call or draft of organizations depends on disposition of Regular troops now stationed in Islands. At present definite plans for disposition of these Regular troops not perfected, but when such has been done utilization National Guard Hawaii will be taken up. Expressions of board of officers Hawaiian Guard of willingness that organization to serve greatly appreciated." In May an Associated Press dispatch stated that part of the Philippine Islands National Guard were to be sent to France. With this as a text, a cablegram to the Secretary of War, signed by the Delegate to Congress, president and speaker of the territorial Senate and House of Representatives, Governor Pinkham, and Governor-to-be McCarthy, again urged mobilization and closed

with the words, "National Guard of Hawaii has waited patiently for call into active service for past year and despite delay are bending every effort towards efficiency when call comes. Should Filipino organizations get first chance Hawaiian guardsmen will seriously feel apparent discrimination." Three days later, on May 25, a message was received which sent a thrill through the whole territory:

"Arrangements are being made to call out shortly National Guard and drafted men Hawaiian Islands."

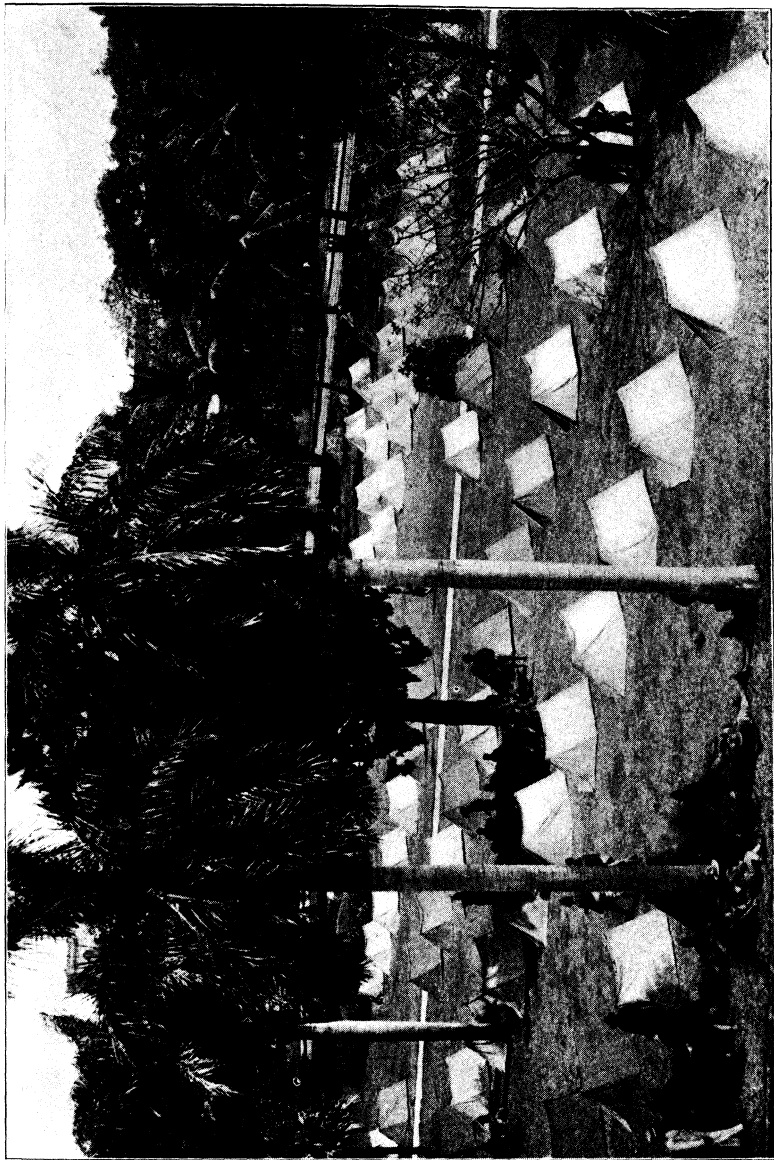
National Guard officers were immediately summoned to the Guard headquarters to receive instructions and discuss mobilization procedure. Enlisted men in Honolulu were called to the armory to receive necessary field equipment and to pack and arrange it in readiness for the call to duty. June 1 the call came, in the form of an order from Brigadier General A. P. Blocksom, Commander of the Hawaiian Department, drafting into the service of the United States on and from June 1, 1918, for the period of the existing emergency, the 1st and 2nd Regiments, Hawaiian Infantry, National Guard, and all members of the Medical Corps of the Hawaiian National Guard. The troops of the 1st Regiment were ordered to report at the Mobilization Camp on the morning of June 5; and the troops of the 2nd Regiment were ordered to proceed to Honolulu by the first available transportation. It will be seen that the Hawaiian National Guard was not drafted as a whole; the headquarters and certain auxiliary units were not included in the call.

At the same time General Blocksom issued orders for the establishment of a Mobilization Camp on grounds of the United States Immigration Station adjoining Fort Armstrong in Honolulu. Within four days a complete regimental army post had been created, and the Red Cross had set up its establishment in four tents. In this camp the only permanent buildings were the mess hall (in a building which was already on the ground) and the kitchen; everything else was under canvas. The officers detailed in charge of the Mobilization Camp were: Colonel William C. Bennett, 2nd Infantry (regulars), camp commander; First Lieutenant James L. Ballard, 25th Infantry, camp adju-

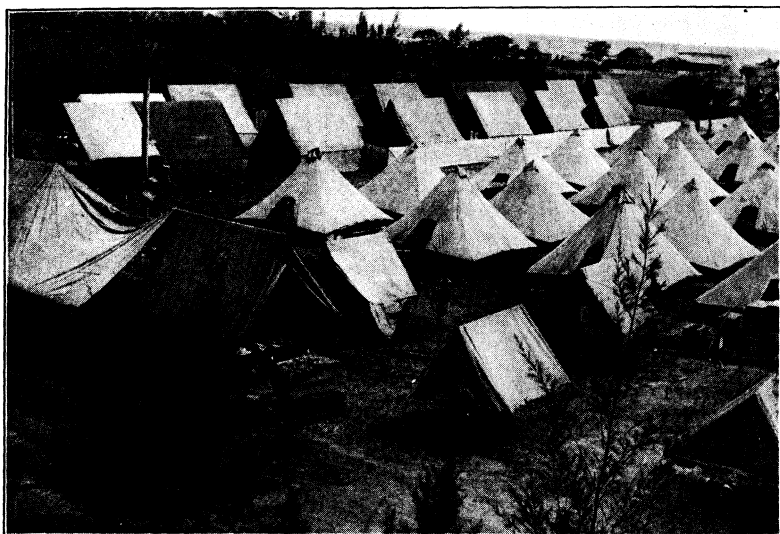
tant; Major James D. Dougherty, Q. M. C., camp quartermaster; Major Charles B. Cooper, Medical Reserve Corps, camp surgeon; and Captain Edward F. Witsell, Aviation Section, Signal Corps, senior mustering officer. Not all of these officers remained until the end of the mobilization period.

As soon as the call was received from General Blocksom on the morning of June 1, Colonel W. R. Riley, commander of the 1st Regiment, issued orders for the first and third (Honolulu) battalions to assemble at the armory at noon the same day. By 5 o'clock that afternoon these battalions were in temporary camp under shelter tents on the Ewa side of the Capitol grounds, where they remained until the morning of the 5th. Mess arrangements were made with restaurants in the city for the few days the men would be in this temporary camp. No official name was given to the camp in the Capitol grounds, but it was popularly called "Camp McCarthy" in honor of Colonel C. J. McCarthy, territorial treasurer, an old friend and one time member of the Guard, who was soon to become governor. The second (country) battalion of the 1st Regiment was ordered to assemble in camps at the home stations of the several companies, and on the 4th they came into Honolulu and camped on the Waikiki side of the Capitol grounds. During the temporary encampment in the Capitol grounds the guardsmen were daily given intensive training consisting largely of drill by squads and companies and instruction in the manual of arms. Suitable orders were issued to the three battalions of the 2nd Regiment and a schedule arranged, with the cooperation of the Inter-Island Steam Navigation Company, for bringing the companies of that regiment to Honolulu as promptly as was practicable.

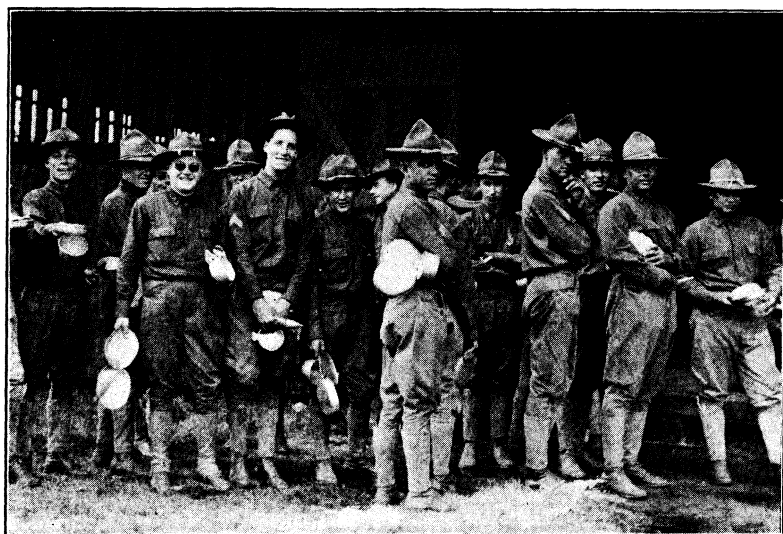
On the morning of June 5 the 1st Regiment broke camp and marched to the Mobilization Camp at Fort Armstrong, where the men quickly set up the pyramidal tents and prepared for the ordeal of the physical examination which would determine whether they were to remain in the army or be discharged. Along one side of the camp a row of tents had been set up for the medical officers and each officer and enlisted man had to pass through these tents, where he was stripped and examined



CAMP MCCARTHY



PART OF MOBILIZATION CAMP AT FORT ARMSTRONG



NATIONAL GUARDSMEN AT MOBILIZATION CAMP LINED  
UP FOR "KAUKAU"



from top to toe, inside and out. All the officers were first examined and all were accepted. Next came the enlisted men of Company H; out of 134 men all but 28 passed successfully and were mustered in; the 28 were given honorable discharges. The company then went to Schofield Barracks. Day by day this process went on. Within a few days after the 1st Regiment moved to the Mobilization Camp at Fort Armstrong, units of the 2nd Regiments began to come in from the outside islands and take their stations temporarily in the Capitol grounds. As the companies of the 1st Regiment moved out from the Mobilization Camp to Schofield Barracks, companies of the 2nd Regiment moved in from the Capitol grounds to take their places. Other companies in turn came and pitched their "pup" tents in Camp McCarthy; and thus a more or less regular movement was kept up until the mobilization period was over.

By the middle of June the examination of the 1st Regiment was completed and that regiment, somewhat depleted in numbers, was stationed at Schofield Barracks. By the 25th of the month the 2nd Regiment was likewise in garrison at the big Leilehua post. The object of calling these territorial soldiers into federal service was stated in an authorized bulletin issued at Washington: "They will form the nucleus of a force to which drafted men in the islands will be added. . . . It is hoped they will develop, with the drafted contingents, into a force that will be able to relieve some of the United States regular army forces now in the islands for duty elsewhere. At any rate, the intention is to utilize the Hawaiians for service at home." In accordance with this plan, the 1st, 2nd, and 32nd Regiments of regulars were, during June and July, transferred from Oahu to the mainland, and the barracks at Schofield and Fort Shafter formerly occupied by them were taken over by the Hawaiian regiments. In the final arrangement the entire 2nd Hawaiian Regiment and two battalions of the 1st were located at Schofield Barracks, the remaining battalion of the 1st Regiment being stationed at Fort Shafter. In October the two regiments were consolidated into an Hawaiian Brigade, with Brigadier General J. W. Heard in command.

In the process of mobilization of the National Guard regiments, 20 per cent of the enlisted men were rejected and discharged, some because they were physically unfit and some for other reasons. The following table shows the strength of the two regiments as drafted into federal service:

	OFFICERS			ENLISTED MEN		
	Re- ported	Re- jected	Ac- cepted	Re- ported	Re- jected	Ac- cepted
First Regiment	52	0	52	1,384	377	1,007
Second Regiment	53	4	49	1,741	288	1,453
Total	105	4	101	3,125	665	2,460

The two regiments were, therefore, much below war strength. In order to bring them to war strength they were built up with men drawn into service through the operation of the Selective Service System. Under this system the first call for drafted men to be furnished from Hawaii was issued in June, 1918, the date set for the draft being July 1. On the mainland the calls began in the summer of 1917; Hawaii was not included in these early calls because the territory had enlistment credits (for men in the National Guard and regular army) to the number of 1,994 in excess of her gross quota (2,403) under the first levy of 687,000 men called for by the President. Hawaii's record in this regard was unique, and the fact was widely commented on as a proof of the territory's patriotism and preparedness.

## CHAPTER III

### MILITARY PARTICIPATION

#### II. The Selective Draft

##### THE SELECTIVE SERVICE SYSTEM

THE Act of June 18, 1917, authorizing the President to increase temporarily the military establishment of the United States (commonly called the "Selective Draft Act") was passed by Congress after a sharp debate over the respective merits of the two methods (volunteering and conscription) proposed for raising the military force needed in the prosecution of the war against Germany. The method adopted and authorized in the act referred to was a modified or "selective" conscription, intended to accomplish the following objects as stated in the report of the Secretary of War for 1917:

"1. To provide in successive bodies adequate numbers of men to be trained and used as combatant forces.

"2. To select for these armies men of suitable age and strength.

"3. To distribute the burden of the military defense of the Nation in the most equitable and democratic manner, and to that end to recognize the universality of the obligation of service.

"4. To reserve to the public authorities power so to control the selection of soldiers as to prevent the absorption of men indispensable to agriculture and industry, and to prevent the loss of national strength involved by the acceptance into military service of men whose greatest usefulness is in scientific pursuits or in production.

"5. To select, so far as may be, those men for military service whose family and domestic obligations could best bear their separation from home and dependents, and thus to cause the least possible distress among the families of the Nation which are dependent upon the daily earnings of husbands and fathers for their support."

In organizing the Selective Service System the aim was to utilize existing local agencies so far as possible and to place the administration directly in the hands of the people. In his second report, Provost Marshal General E. H. Crowder says: "The system was peculiarly democratic in that it lodged the maximum of authority with the smallest unit practicable. It was essentially the people's institution, subjecting our form of government to the severest test and resulting in its triumphant vindication." "I am certain that no great national undertaking was ever begun which depended so utterly upon faith in a people for its execution; and undoubtedly no faith has ever been more completely justified and no confidence more abundantly rewarded." In each state or territory the governor was the draft executive, charged with the full responsibility for the administration of the system in that particular state or territory.

The operation of the Selective Service System in Hawaii presents a number of differences in detail from its operation throughout the rest of the country. Besides some minor points, the following important differences may be specially noticed: The registration days were all later in Hawaii than on the mainland. This territory, alone among all the states and territories, was not required to furnish any men for the first draft in 1917; and, partly for that reason, the method of selection used for that draft was never used in Hawaii, all the men drafted in Hawaii being selected by the method which became effective December 15, 1917 (the questionnaire and classification method). The order numbers for Hawaii's registrants were not determined by the drawings held in Washington, but by special drawings held in Honolulu. The account here given, therefore, is of the system as it was put into operation in Hawaii; always, of course, under the authorization and direction of the Provost Marshal General in Washington.

#### SELECTIVE SERVICE ORGANIZATION IN HAWAII

At the head was the governor, on whom rested the responsibility for the successful working of the system in the territory. Assisting him, and in direct charge of the work, was a draft

executive. From the beginning (June, 1917) up to January 11, 1918, this position was held by Francis J. Green, but under varying titles; at first he was executive officer of the Central Board of Registration, then chairman and executive officer of the District Board; in October he resigned from the District Board and was at once commissioned by Governor Pinkham as Major in the National Guard and assigned to the duty of supervising the draft work throughout the territory; somewhat later, he was commissioned by the President as Captain in the National Army and detailed as military aide to the governor with the same duties as before. Green carried on the work most efficiently, but early in January he was removed, under instructions from Washington because of financial irregularities, and H. Gooding Field placed in charge of draft work in Hawaii. Field was commissioned by the President as Captain in the Quartermaster Corps (later advanced to the rank of Major) with the same assignment that had been given to Captain Green. Field therefore had charge of the draft work during its most active and trying period, and made a record which fairly entitled him to the promotion he received.

The actual work of selection of men to be drafted into the armed forces of the United States was done by the District and Local Exemption Boards. The duties of the District Board were twofold: First, to review the decisions of Local Boards upon appeal; second, to hear and determine as courts of first instance all questions of accepting or excluding from the draft persons engaged in necessary industries, including agriculture, or other necessary occupations or employments. The instructions required that the composition of the District Board should be as follows: "One member who is in close touch with the agricultural situation of the district, one member who is in close touch with the industrial situation of the district, one member who is in close touch with labor, one physician, one lawyer." Before the appointment of this board, Governor Pinkham recommended that in Hawaii it be limited to three members, excluding the agricultural and labor representatives, but this was not allowed. The governor then nominated and

the President, on August 16, appointed the following members of the District Board for the territory of Hawaii: Francis J. Green, chairman; Dr. James R. Judd, Charles R. Hemenway, Percy M. Pond, and Clarence L. Crabbe.

In the report previously cited, Provost Marshal General Crowder says: "To the ordinary citizen the selective service law was personified by the Local Board engaged in dispatching to the camps his friends and neighbors. In the mind of every registrant the memories of the draft will be centered in that Local Board. . . . The duty of the Local Board was to mobilize the selectives as directed. . . . Except for the initial registration of June 5 [July 31 in Hawaii], 1917, the Local Boards had charge of every one of the steps in the transit from home to camp. . . . In short, the duties of the Local Boards, even when considered merely in the dry enumeration of their several details, constituted a complete and intricate administrative system. . . . It will be seen that the responsibility of Local Boards was staggering. . . . It is an irrefutable proof of the high capacity of our people for self-government, and an everlasting vindication of true democracy, that a system so intimately affecting the lives of our people should have been intrusted to untrained representatives of the local community and that it should have been so well executed. . . . Whatever of credit is accorded to other agencies of the selective service law, the Local Boards must be deemed the corner-stone of the system."

In Hawaii there were six Local Boards, the areas included within their jurisdiction corresponding to the six representative districts in the territory. The two Honolulu boards had five members, the others had three. The original members of these local exemption boards were nominated by the governor and appointed by the President September 16, 1917. In each local district there was a Legal Advisory Board; the original appointments on these boards being made by the President, on nomination of Governor Pinkham, in December, 1917. Each Local Board had also a Medical Advisory Board; these were appointed at various dates during the spring of 1918, as the need for them arose. In the latter part of January, and prior to the appoint-

ment of any of the Medical Advisory Boards, the President detailed Major Charles B. Cooper, Medical Reserve Corps, as medical aide to the governor to assist in the organization and instruction of Medical Advisory Boards. During February, March, and April, while the physical examination of Class I registrants was in progress, it was considered advisable, because of local conditions, to have a special Traveling Medical Advisory Board, composed of army doctors. The appointment and work of this board is described in a report by Major Cooper, which is printed in the appendix.

Finally, there was in each Local Board district a Government Appeal Agent, whose duty it was to appeal on behalf of the government from rulings and classifications by the Local Board which he considered erroneous; under the regulations which became effective December 15, 1917, it was likewise the duty of the appeal agent to protect the interests of ignorant registrants, by informing them of their rights and assisting them in making appeals where necessary.

During the period in which the boards above mentioned were in existence, there were a number of changes in personnel. The Local Board for the county of Kauai was the only one which retained its original membership clear to the end. In no case was a member removed for cause, but the resignation of one member of one of the boards was requested by the governor on the stated ground that he was not big enough for the job. In the appendix is given a list which contains the names of all who served on these boards, with dates of appointments and resignations, so far as the available records show.

#### REGISTRATION

For the men most directly affected by the Selective Service System, the first detail in its operation was the registration. For Hawaii President Wilson, on recommendation of Governor Pinkham, by proclamation named July 31, 1917, as Registration Day, and on that day all men in the territory between the ages of 21 and 30, both inclusive, except members of the National Guard and those in regular service, were required to present

themselves before the registrars in their respective precincts and submit to registration. For the purpose of this first registration a simple organization was created. A Central Board of Registration was appointed for the whole territory, consisting of Will Wayne, chairman; Francis J. Green, executive officer; and Judge Antonio Perry. Major L. W. Redington was also appointed on this board, but resigned almost immediately because of being called into active military service. In each county there was a county board, consisting of the sheriff, as chairman; the county clerk, and the county physician; and for each precinct one or more registrars were appointed.

In order to insure a complete registration, an extensive publicity campaign was carried on. The President's proclamation was translated into Japanese, Chinese, Korean, Portuguese, Spanish, Hawaiian, and the three Filipino dialects of Visayan, Ilocano, and Tagalog, and distributed broadcast over the territory, as were also circulars explaining in detail how to fill out the registration card. The campaign included advertising in practically every newspaper in the territory, posters, window displays, displays in street cars and on the screens of all motion picture theaters. Local artists, D. Howard Hitchcock, Charles W. Bartlett, Ambrose Patterson, and Twigg Smith, painted picture posters of a patriotic character which were made the central feature of window displays in leading stores in Honolulu. This advertising campaign was arranged by Charles R. Frazier; his services and the entire campaign being donated to the cause. By common consent Registration Day was a public holiday; and the saloons were ordered closed for the day. On July 27 a Registration Luncheon, sponsored by the Honolulu Chamber of Commerce and Ad Club, was held on the roof of the Alexander Young Hotel, attended by several hundred patriotic citizens. The feature of the luncheon was a stirring address delivered by former Governor George R. Carter. Ten thousand copies of this address were printed by the Chamber of Commerce and given to men who registered on July 31.

The following account of Registration Day in Honolulu is



taken from the Honolulu *Advertiser* of August 1. It typifies the spirit of the day everywhere in Hawaii.

“‘Hawaii registered with a shout of joy at the opportunity to do something.’

“That is the way that Francis J. Green, executive officer of the central registration board, described the attitude of the city and Territory toward the duties of Registration Day. Certainly a tour of the booths scattered about the city failed to reveal any serious grouches, though hundreds upon hundreds of men were forced to stand in long, weary, and dust-covered lines for hours, . . . For the most part the day went smoothly and according to schedule as mapped out by the central committee, although there were times when it looked as though the organization so carefully builded was going to fly to flinders under the unexpected heavy pressure to which it was subjected. . . .

“This was particularly true in the rush hours of the morning, when all the world turned out to register, . . . The booths scattered about the city were the sluice gates that caught this flood of humanity and held it for a time. But soon they gave signs of becoming submerged and frantic calls for assistance were sent in to Green, waiting at headquarters, his hand on the throttle, for the emergency. The system the board had created allowed for expansion and Green and his fellow workers, Judge Perry and Will Wayne, began to expand it instantan. The Y. M. C. A. came to their assistance and a hundred extra registrars, already sworn in, were despatched to the threatened districts, together with interpreters and clerks to assist. Business houses also helped, and private individuals, appealed to over the telephone, dropped their holiday plans and hustled off to the sweating booths, shelled their coats and buckled down to the hard work of the next few hours. This stemmed the flood in some of the precincts, but in several even this measure was not sufficient, and Judge Perry called into service the automobiles that had been placed at the disposal of the committee and hustled off to the congested places, where he began moving the mass of packed humanity to the other and less crowded booths.

“In this way Aala Park precinct sent several hundred, esti-

mated between three and four hundred, men from the long strings that had been hanging about its doors to the tenth precinct of the fourth district, and Banyan Tree precinct. This served for a time but even that measure failed to give all the help needed, and before long the chief registrar, J. E. Higgins, decided that another station there would be necessary. A hurry call to the Y. M. C. A. brought additional help and a branch registration booth was opened in the band stand in the park, thus splitting the line into two. In spite of all that could be done, however, the congestion at this precinct was frightful for hours. All day long the polyglot throngs poured in one door of the booths and out of the other, while the babble of tongues inside made of the place a modern Babel. . . .

"For the most part, after the first rush of the day was over, and the machinery got into working order, the booths went along without a hitch, filling the names in rotation. Two factors helped tremendously in this smooth accomplishment of the work. The first was the women of Honolulu. 'You can't possibly say too much for the way in which the women of the city have turned to assist us in this work,' said Mr. Green last night, in summing up the work of the day. 'They have been simply invaluable. Without them and their cheering sympathy the tedium of the work would have been quadrupled. They supplied the lunch for our workers, and did it in such a dainty fashion that the tired men actually could eat with real enjoyment. Each lunch was packed in a separate package, and was most enticing. But better than the purely material assistance they gave us was the sympathetic appreciation they showed of the work we were trying to do. Dozens of them turned out early in the day and stood in front of the booths in the hot sun, pinning the tiny red, white and blue badges on the coats or shirts of the men as they registered. This may not sound like much, but try standing in the sort of a sun we had today for any length of time, and you'll soon see that it was no easy task these ladies assigned to themselves. If the Y. M. C. A. did more than its share in today's work, so did the women of the Y. W. C. A. and their friends throughout the town.'

"The Boy Scouts deserve something more than the customary 'special mention.' Under the command of their new leader, Commissioner Burnham, these soldiers of the common good threw themselves with their usual efficiency into the thick of the work of the day, and marvelously well did they do what fell to their part. They were the messengers of the different precinct workers, and were to be seen flitting about the city all day. They formed efficient guards at the doors of the booths and prevented impatient men from crowding in upon the already overworked registrars and clerks. . . .

"[The Veterans of Foreign Wars] offered their services in any capacity and were asked to visit the booths to cheer on the men registering. Accordingly, in a number of automobiles, supplied by the Schuman Carriage Company and the von Hamm-Young Company, and preceded by the Second Regiment Band, they went all over town from booth to booth, and at each booth the band played patriotic airs. The Alexander Young Hotel served an elaborate luncheon to the old soldiers and the bandsmen."

At the close of the day it was found that 26,335 men had registered in the six districts of the territory. With the addition of late registrants (including National Guardsmen, who were not at first required to register) the number amounted to more than 27,000. After the preliminary sorting and tabulation of the cards, the registration boards, as such, went out of existence. The succeeding work was done by the permanent selective service organization.

July 31, 1918, Hawaii's second registration occurred, corresponding to the registration of June 5 on the mainland, for men coming of age since July 31, 1917. The number who registered was less than 2,500. There was no registration in Hawaii corresponding to that of August 24, 1918, in the states.

The biggest registration of all was that called for by the action of Congress in extending the draft ages downward to 18 years and upward to 45. On the mainland this registration was on September 12, 1918. In Hawaii the date was October 26. In view of the size of the job, preparations for it

were begun early. The local boards were given careful instructions and every detail was carefully worked out in advance. The day was proclaimed a holiday by Governor McCarthy. Large numbers of volunteer workers were enlisted; since the day was Saturday, a great many school teachers offered their services; the entire machinery of the bureau of labor and statistics of the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association was placed at the disposal of the draft officials. Wide publicity and the force of a united patriotic public sentiment were brought to bear on the problem in order that there should be no slackers on this crucial day. "Father and Son Registration Day" it was called and the name was not inappropriately given. The total enrollment for the day in the six districts was more than 41,000.

#### "SERIAL" AND "ORDER" NUMBERS

After the registration, the next step in the process of selection was the assignment of serial numbers to the registrants. The registration cards for each local board district were numbered in a single series from one up. For the purpose of assigning these numbers the cards were not arranged in any special order, but were consecutively numbered without regard to alphabetical or other arrangement. Immediately after the numbering of the registration cards, each local board caused to be prepared five identical lists of the names of all persons whose registration cards were in its possession. The lists contained the names and serial numbers of all such persons, arranged in the order of their serial numbers. One copy of the list was retained for the records of the board; one was posted in a conspicuous place in the office of the board; one copy was made accessible to the press with a request for publication; one was furnished to the territorial draft executive; while the remaining copy was transmitted to the Provost Marshal General. There were thus obtained six different lists of registrants in the territory, each numbered from one up. The highest serial number in any of the six local board lists at this time was 8,205. The registrant's serial number and the name of his local board were the means by which he was identified in the selective service system. The

serial numbers were naturally a matter of great interest to the men registered, as well as to their families and friends. The local newspapers published the lists for their districts, and the Honolulu *Star-Bulletin* in October published the six lists for the entire territory.

To designate the order in which the men should be called when needed for military service, each registrant was given an order number which was determined by lot in a public drawing. For the mainland states the first drawing was held in Washington on July 20, 1917, at which time 10,500 numbers were drawn. In order to insure absolute fairness and prevent the possibility of improper manipulation of the order of service, it was necessary that this drawing be held after every local board had completed the assignment of serial numbers and had mailed the lists to the Provost Marshal General. Since the registration in Hawaii was later than the national drawing in Washington, it was necessary to have a special drawing for this territory and the President directed that this drawing be held in Honolulu under the supervision of the governor. The date of the drawing was November 1, the place was the senate chamber of the Capitol, and the procedure was as follows: All the numbers from 1 up to 8,208 were printed on slips of paper; each of these slips was then enclosed in a gelatine capsule; the capsules were deposited in a glass jar, thoroughly mixed, and drawn out one by one, the numbers contained in them being immediately written down on three identical master lists.

The first number, 16, was drawn by Governor Pinkham shortly before 9 o'clock in the morning. This meant that the six men in Hawaii having the serial number 16 would be the first called for service in this territory, unless they were exempted. The drawing was then continued by Boy Scouts in relays. As the capsules were drawn from the glass jar they were handed to clerks, who removed the slips and read off the numbers; a second set of clerks recorded the numbers on the master lists. The drawing continued until 9:45 in the evening, the last number being 3,803. "While the senate chamber was never crowded, and the aisles and lanais were only partially filled, yet most of

those in attendance were among the young men who registered on July 31 and who frequently drew their register cards from their pockets to scan the numbers which their ears endeavored to catch as the readers called the numbers. One and then another would bolt from the hall, his number having been called. One came forward with his card long before his number was heard and said that he was ready right then to go to the front."

After the drawing, each local board prepared a new list giving the names and serial numbers of all registrants arranged in the order designated by the drawing.

For the registration of July 31, 1918, a drawing was held September 4, seven hundred numbers being drawn. The drawing for the "18 to 45" registration was held November 7, 1918, at which time 15,000 numbers were drawn. On each of these occasions the first capsule was taken from the glass bowl by Governor McCarthy.

#### CLASSIFICATION AND PHYSICAL EXAMINATION

The method used in selecting the men for the first draft in 1917 may be briefly described. After the number of men to be called had been announced, quotas were assigned to each local board. The registrants were then called before the board in the sequence of their order numbers and physically examined; if found physically qualified for military service, their claims for exemption were considered and they were at once either accepted or exempted, having a right to appeal from the decision of the local board. If finally accepted for military service they were sent directly to the training camps. Since Hawaii was not included in the first draft, the only experience the district and local boards in the territory had with this first method was in handling the few cases which came before them of men temporarily in Hawaii registered with mainland boards and called by those boards while they were still in the islands.

The real work of the exemption boards in Hawaii began after December 15, 1917, when the questionnaire and classification system was put into operation. Under this system each registrant, unless already in service, was required to fill out and

return to his local board a long questionnaire which called for complete information in regard to his social and economic status. From a study of the questionnaires the local board placed each man in one of five classes. Class V contained those who were wholly exempt from military service. Classes I, II, III, and IV contained those who were considered available for service, arranged in the order of their availability—the order in which they would normally be called, Class I including those most available and Class IV those least available. Within each class there were subdivisions numbered A, B, C, etc. The men of highest availability—the ones to be first called—were placed in subdivision A of Class I. After the registrants had been thus classified, provisionally, those in Class I were called before the local board and given physical examinations, as a result of which a final classification was made. Within each class and subdivision the men were arranged in the order required by their order numbers.

On the questionnaire was a place for the registrant to make a claim for exemption or deferred classification if he wished to do so; claims for exemption on the ground of dependent relatives or of physical condition were decided by the local board, but claims based on the ground that the registrant was necessary to industry or agriculture had to be decided by the district board. The registrant had a right to appeal from the decision of the local board to the district board, and, under certain conditions, from the district board to the President of the United States. In Hawaii there was only one appeal taken to the President. In that case the decision of the district board was modified; later, on application of the district board, the case was re-opened and was still pending when the termination of hostilities brought the work of the selective service system to an end.

The first questionnaires were mailed to registrants on January 7, and for several months after that date the work of classification, examination, and hearing of appeals went steadily on. During the first weeks a large number of persons, lawyers and others, volunteered to assist registrants in filling out their

questionnaires. In Honolulu the physical examination of Class I registrants began on February 18, a number of physicians volunteering to assist in the work, the arrangements being made by the Medical Society of Hawaii. At the same time the Traveling Medical Advisory Board previously mentioned began the work of hearing appeals from the preliminary physical examinations.

In the appendix is given a table showing how the July, 1917, and July, 1918, registrants were classified by the six local boards in the territory.

#### ROUNDING UP DELINQUENTS

In the operation of the selective service system there were delinquencies for various reasons. First, there were men within the draft ages who failed to register. A considerable number of these were apprehended by the police and the United States marshal and his deputies soon after Registration Day. By far the largest groups of delinquents were composed of those registrants who failed to fill out questionnaires or failed to report for physical examination or failed to get their final classification cards. In the six districts the total of these delinquents numbered several hundred—it was not possible to tell exactly how many, because some Filipinos and Japanese, apparently delinquent, had left the territory and returned to their former homes. The Provost Marshal General urged that a vigorous effort be made to round up the delinquents, both for the moral effect on the community and in order that slackers and wilful evaders might be detected and sent to mobilization camps if the circumstances would permit; and he suggested to Governor Pinkham that the services of the American Protective League be utilized in connection with such a round-up, as was done on the mainland. Since there was no chapter of the American Protective League in Hawaii, the governor thought it would be better to secure the cooperation of the Hawaiian Vigilance Corps of the American Defense Society than to start a new organization.

In the latter part of April plans were made for a systematic round-up of delinquents. The Vigilance Corps appointed a com-



mittee headed by Ed Towse, which was of great assistance in mapping out and carrying through the campaign. Publicity was given to the projected round-up, so that delinquents might have an opportunity to come in and straighten their records. Next the police raided the pool rooms and other hangouts in Honolulu and in one evening brought to the armory over a hundred men, some of whom had not registered, and others who had failed to fill out their questionnaires. Finally, on the night of April 25, both Honolulu battalions of the National Guard were ordered out, formed a cordon, and went through the whole city, bringing in all men who could not show their cards. As a result of this drive, five or six hundred men were brought to the armory. A majority of them were able to make satisfactory explanations and were released. A good many others, who were delinquent for no other reason than ignorance, were allowed to complete their classification. About fifty, who had failed to register, were sent to jail but were subsequently released and allowed to register and be classified. Similar drives were made in the country districts and the outlying islands. There was some criticism because a large enough clerical force was not provided to give prompt attention to the men detained; but the general effect of the round-up was undoubtedly beneficial in giving a better understanding of the seriousness of the selective service requirements.

In July, 1918, while Hawaii's first draft contingent was being mobilized, a new type of delinquency occurred, the failure of drafted men to respond to the induction call. On the night of July 23 another big round-up was held in Honolulu, in which the 1st and 2nd Hawaiian Infantry, recently drafted into federal service, participated. Nearly a thousand men were brought in, but only about 300 of them were detained over night, and after the latter had been investigated the net result, in additions to the military force, was not very impressive.

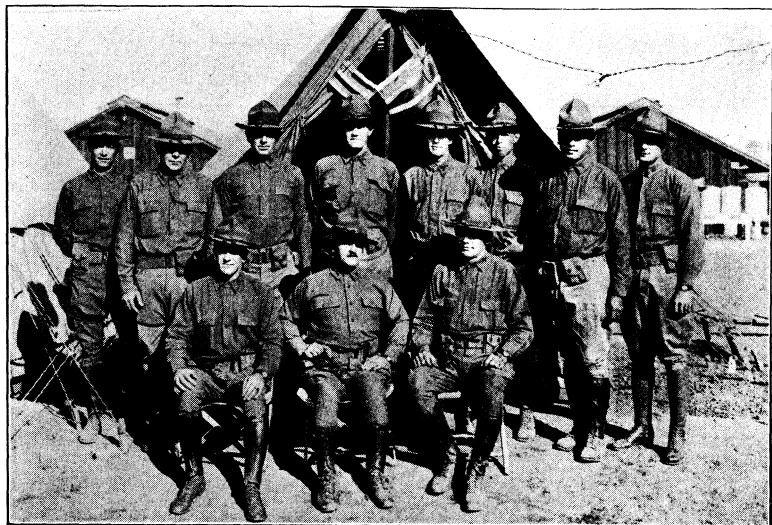
The great mass of Oriental laborers in the territory, large numbers of whom were unable to speak English—many of them totally illiterate—made it inevitable that many would be delinquent through simple ignorance, and that there would be many

errors in the filling out of registration cards and questionnaires. In order to assist these ignorant but non-culpable delinquents, to straighten out difficulties due to failures of drafted men to receive their induction papers, and to help men who were in trouble for any other reason, W. D. Westervelt, with the approval of the draft executive, established a "Draft Questionnaire Bureau" at the armory in Honolulu. For four or five months in the summer and fall of 1918, Mr. Westervelt was a friend in need to hundreds of registrants and draftees. He was in reality doing much work which should have been handled by the government appeal agents.

#### THE DRAFT

The question as to whether a draft call would be issued for Hawaii was asked almost as frequently as the question whether the National Guard would be mobilized. And there were the same conjectures and rumors in reference to both. The two queries, running along simultaneously, were in reality but two phases of the single question, whether Hawaii's man power was to be called into active military service. On October 23, 1917, Governor Pinkham, in the course of a cablegram to Provost Marshal General Crowder, said, "In view nonmobilization National Guard, request that Hawaiian quota be determined in proportion to its population . . . and be fully supplied by draft. There is a steady popular demand for full representation in National Army and such course would meet with universal approval." The terms of the law required that credit be given for voluntary enlistments (in National Guard, etc.) and Hawaii, therefore, could not be included in the first draft; but General Crowder issued a public statement calling attention to Governor Pinkham's request as an evidence of the remarkably patriotic spirit of Hawaii and congratulating the people of the islands on their loyalty and devotion. In Washington, Prince Kuhio, the territory's Delegate to Congress, urged that a draft call be issued for Hawaii.

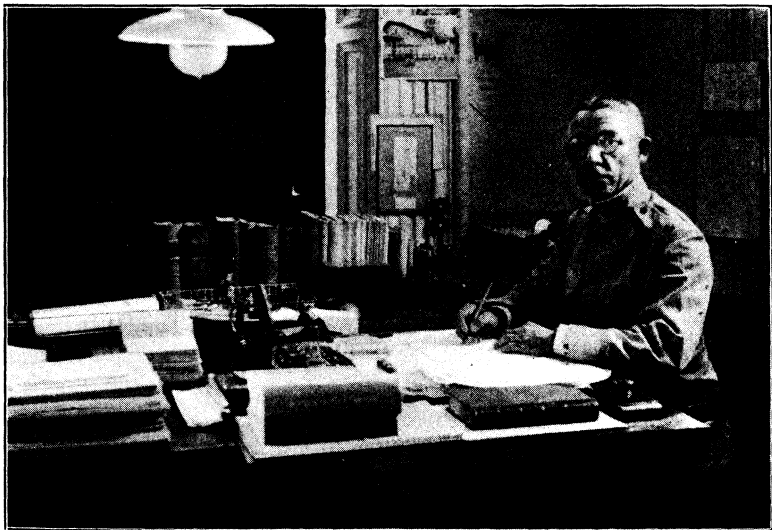
During the spring the War Department speeded up its program and in April and May, General Crowder informed both



FORMER HAWAII NATIONAL GUARD OFFICERS AT CAMP  
FREMONT, CALIFORNIA, AUGUST 17, 1918

Seated (left to right): Capt. Wm. Hampton, Maj. S. L. Johnson, Capt.  
Lewis Abshire

Standing (left to right): Lts. L. T. Lyman, R. D. King, A. C. Betts,  
W. A. Anderson, E. S. Cushingam, Harry Brown,  
H. P. O'Sullivan, O. W. Gibson



MAJOR H. GOODING FIELD

Selective Draft Officer, at His Desk in Capitol Building



FIRST GROUP OF DRAFTED MEN LEAVING ARMORY FOR  
MOBILIZATION CAMP

Captain H. Gooding Field in Lead (at left)



DRAFTED MEN AT MOBILIZATION CAMP LINED UP FOR  
PHYSICAL EXAMINATION

This Is a Group from Kauai

Prince Kuhio and Governor Pinkham that the time was approaching when Hawaii would be called upon to contribute a quota of fighting men. On June 1 the National Guard was drafted into federal service and on June 11 the Provost Marshal General cabled to Governor Pinkham an induction call (Number 772) upon the Territory of Hawaii: "On July 1, mobilize 4,336 registrants to report to commanding officer, Fort Armstrong, Honolulu." At the same time appropriate instructions were issued to the commanding general of the Hawaiian Department.

Mobilizing 4,000 unorganized registrants, most of them without any military training whatever, was a much bigger job than mobilizing the two National Guard regiments. The plans were very carefully worked out by the draft executive in cooperation with the officers of the Hawaiian Department of the army. For Captain Field and his assistants the first task was to assign quotas to the six local boards. The call was for 4,336 men, but from this was to be deducted a credit of 434 due to voluntary inductions and National Guard enlistments, leaving a net current quota for the territory of 3,902. To this were added 10 per cent to allow for possible rejections. The resulting total of 4,292 was divided among the local boards as follows:

Honolulu, Division No. 1.....	636
Honolulu, Division No. 2.....	1,181
Hawaii, Division No. 1.....	1,184
Hawaii, Division No. 2.....	441
Maui .....	574
Kauai .....	276

Schedules were arranged so that the men would go to the mobilization camp not all at once, but in groups. Those from Oahu went first to the armory in Honolulu to be checked off; but the draftees from the outer islands went direct to Fort Armstrong as soon as they arrived at Honolulu. A company of regulars from the 25th Infantry was detailed for duty at Fort Armstrong during the mobilization period. The largest number of drafted men in the mobilization camp at any one time was about 500 or 600. At the camp the general plan of handling

the men was similar to that used in handling the National Guard, with one important difference, however, due to the fact that the draft men had to be outfitted. An interesting account of the outfitting process is given by a writer in the Honolulu *Star-Bulletin*:

"The draftees at the mobilization camp at Fort Armstrong are given everything but motherly care by the soldiers of the 25th Infantry. From the time they file through the gates, an awkward collection of rookies, until they leave, trim, neat and soldierly in their new uniforms, they are coaxed, petted, cajoled and shoved into line by the seasoned regulars. In the outfitting tent this phase is most noticeable. The men enter this long tent from the doctors' shelter, clad only in long, flowing army blankets. As they enter they are fitted to a campaign hat and pass on to a long table, covered with shirts, underwear, socks, belts, breeches and coats. At regular intervals are stationed members of a special detachment of the 25th, who, with infinite patience and cheerful smiles hand out the above mentioned articles.

"The draftee next receives his individual equipment record and passes on to a huge tub, where he is ordered to wash his feet. This pedal ablution performed, he puts on his underwear, pants, socks and shirt and steps over to a bench, where the most important part of the proceeding takes place. His shoes are tried on and they must be just so; snug, but not too snug; roomy, but not too roomy, and with the big toe exactly three-quarters of an inch from the end of the shoe. Next come the leggings, and these also must be tried on, the recruits in most cases being unable to fasten their own. Lieut. R. B. McGrew, in charge of the outfitting, says that they can turn out from eighteen to twenty men per hour, fully and properly equipped."

The drafted men were assigned to the 1st and 2nd Hawaiian Infantry, in order to bring those regiments up to war strength. Accordingly, as the successive groups were examined and outfitted, they were sent to Schofield Barracks or to Fort Shafter, being added in alternation to the two former National Guard regiments. Before the mobilization began, orders were re-

ceived from the War Department authorizing the enlargement of each regiment to the new war basis strength of 3,442 men. When all the drafted men had been mustered in, except those who failed to pass the physical tests, the 1st and 2nd Regiments were still far short of their authorized strength. The Provost Marshal General issued a second induction call (Number 1113) calling for 1,084 additional men. The local quotas under this call, allowing for credits and probable rejections, were as follows:

Honolulu, Division No. 1.....	100
Honolulu, Division No. 2.....	280
Hawaii, Division No. 1 and 2.....	718
Maui .....	227
Kauai .....	81

Considerable difficulty was experienced in filling this call, due to the exhaustion of Class I and the policy of the Provost Marshal General not to call men outside of that class. In order to meet the situation two expedients were resorted to. First, the local boards were instructed to carefully re-examine the questionnaires with a view to re-classifying registrants into Class I. This failed to produce enough men, and it was therefore necessary to call some Class I men from the July, 1918, registration. At the end of August, the mobilization camp at Fort Armstrong was closed, and men drafted after that date were sent direct to Schofield Barracks or Fort Shafter. At the conclusion of the armistice the two Hawaiian regiments were still somewhat below war strength.

A report made by Major Field to the Provost Marshal General, December 13, 1918, gives the following statistics regarding the men drafted from the first (July, 1917) registration:

Total ordered to entrain.....	5,130
Rejected at camp.....	454
Failed to report at camp.....	233
Accepted at camp.....	4,443

In the appendix is given a table, taken from the final report of the Provost Marshal General, showing the total number of men called, inducted, accepted, and rejected in Hawaii.

## RIGHT OF DRAFTED MEN TO VOTE

During the fall of 1918 the question arose, whether drafted men had a right to vote in the territorial election. The legislature of 1917 had passed an act (Act 197) which provided "that no registered voter shall be deprived of his right to vote . . . by reason of his absence from the precinct in which he otherwise would have the right to vote, provided such absence . . . is caused by being called into the service of the Territory or the United States by virtue of orders issued by either the governor of the Territory of Hawaii, or the president of the United States of America."

The wording of several sections of the act gave some ground for the view that the law applied only to members of the National Guard who were called into service and that drafted men could not claim a right to vote under the provision of this act. The Attorney General's department rendered an opinion to that effect. In order to correct the difficulty, Delegate Kalaniana'ole introduced a bill in Congress to extend the provisions of Act 197 to drafted men. Since it was very doubtful whether this bill would be passed in time, if at all, a test case was prepared and submitted to the Supreme Court of the territory on an agreed statement of facts. A mandamus suit was also brought in the Circuit Court to compel the city and county clerk to place the name of a certain drafted voter on the list of qualified voters for the forthcoming election. The case before the Supreme Court was argued pro and con, and the judges rendered a decision upholding the right of drafted men to vote by virtue of Act 197.

## CLOSING UP THE DRAFT WORK

At the time of the signing of the armistice the draft boards in Hawaii were just preparing to send out the questionnaires to those who registered in the "18 to 45" registration. For a time some uncertainty existed, due to conflicting messages from Washington, as to whether the work of classification should be



continued. Finally, definite instructions were received to discontinue all such work and close everything up as soon as possible. Major Field was called upon to prepare various reports and to carry on, in connection with the office of the United States District Attorney, an investigation of all cases of delinquency and technical desertion, such as those who failed to respond to the induction call, or who failed to complete other details in compliance with selective service regulations. There were several hundred such cases, but a large number were of the "unwillful" type, due to ignorance or to removal from the territory. Actual work of the draft boards was practically finished at the end of May, 1919, and by the middle of July all offices were closed and the records of the draft sealed and forwarded to Washington, there to be filed in the archives of the national government.

#### DEMOBILIZATION

Very soon after the conclusion of the armistice, the policy of the national government to return the men in military service to civil life as soon as possible was indicated in a message from the chief of staff of the army, speaking for Secretary of War Baker, to the commander of the Hawaiian Department, which said:

"The signing of the military armistice enables us to suspend the intensive military preparation in which the country was engaged. It does not, however, signify the formal end of the war and it will therefore be necessary for us to keep under arms a substantial army until we are certain just what the military needs of the country will be. The men in the service of the United States will be demobilized as rapidly as is consistent with the needs of the government and the War Department is working with the other agencies of the government toward a rapid reestablishment of normal business conditions and the restoration of the soldiers to their homes and occupations.

"In the meantime I desire to express to the officers and soldiers under arms in the United States the appreciation of the department for their patriotic zeal and service. That they were not called upon to go abroad and not permitted to participate in the historic struggle in France leaves them none the less a part of the great army of our nation and entitled to the thanks of the nation for their readiness to serve. All officers and men can rely upon the sympathy and activity of the department in their early return home. Both officers and men will realize that it is their duty to continue with the training and work and to maintain in the highest degree the discipline and soldierly conduct which is the great glory of the great army of which they are a part."

Orders were issued making possible the discharge of officers and enlisted men from the army and navy where urgent reasons existed for such discharge; and steps were taken to find out what men desired to be discharged and their reasons therefor. Beginning the first of January, every man in the two Hawaiian regiments was questioned on this point. Under instructions from Washington arrangements were made to demobilize one regiment during January and February. After all the men in the two regiments and auxiliary units had been canvassed, lists were prepared of men in the various organizations who were to be discharged at this time. The 2nd Regiment was designated as the "discharge regiment" and all men to be discharged were transferred to it, while men of the 2nd who were not to be discharged immediately were transferred to the 1st. A list prepared in the middle of January showed a total of 3,602 men to be discharged, 1,728 in the 1st Hawaiian, 1,411 in the 2nd, and the remainder in auxiliary units.

Transfers were made and on January 27 the actual work of demobilization was begun. In order that the men might get back to their homes and their jobs with as little delay and difficulty as possible, it was arranged for representatives of the Oahu Railway, the Inter-Island Steam Navigation Company, and the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association to be on hand

while the demobilization was going on, and the schedule was made out in such a way as to fit in with the sailings of inter-island boats for the other islands. The mustering out of the men of the 2nd Hawaiian Regiment was accomplished in about two weeks' time. The regiment thereupon went out of existence. The 1st Regiment continued in service for five months longer. On July 3 orders were received for its demobilization and within about three weeks that organization also went out of existence with the discharge of its commissioned and enlisted personnel.

The demobilization of these regiments containing chiefly plantation laborers came at an opportune time to relieve the labor situation throughout the territory. Discharging the men from the army was only one-half of the problem. To get them back into productive activity was the other and more difficult half. Some trouble was inevitable due to readjustments in industry after the men were called into service and in a few cases because employers were unable or unwilling to take back their former employees. Some of the men, having ready money, did not wish to go back to work at once. This trying period of transition from a war to a peace basis was, nevertheless, passed through with a surprising lack of friction. The community as a whole recognized its debt and its duty to the men who had borne the military burden. Any who did not do so willingly and gladly—and these were very few—were coerced by the better sentiment of the majority. Under the auspices of the Y. M. C. A. a business men's demobilization committee was formed, with Charles R. Frazier as chairman, to give force to the idea that business men were expected to have old positions ready for the men who were leaving the army and that the returning service men were expected to look for their old jobs. "Returned Service Flags" appeared in the windows of business houses. The Y. M. C. A., through its various branches of work, and particularly through the activities of its special demobilization secretary, A. H. Tarleton, performed a conspicuous service both to the men and to the

community during the demobilization period. The work of the Y. M. C. A. and the War Camp Community Service during this period is more fully described in a later chapter.

In the meantime, Hawaii's other service men—those who had enlisted in the regular army or in the navy, or had volunteered on the mainland, or had gotten into uniform in any other way—were returning to the islands, individually and in groups—all through 1919 and on into 1920 they were coming back, adding a further factor to the complicated process of readjustment. And those who did not come back, but who died for their country on the battlefield, in camp, or on the high seas—they also added a factor—a poignant one—to the problem of adjustment in the new world that existed after the war.

## CHAPTER IV

### MILITARY PARTICIPATION

#### III. Officers' Training Camps

##### THE NEED FOR OFFICERS

WHEN the United States entered the war the greatest handicap which faced the War Department was the lack of officers to command the vast military force that had to be raised. The military leaders of Germany confidently predicted that this country would be unable to play any effective military role in the conflict because, they said, it was impossible to create an army without officers, and officers could not be supplied without years of training. The German military leaders were badly mistaken in their prediction, as they were forced to admit long before the 11th of November, 1918. The building up of the commissioned personnel of the army from less than 10,000 at the beginning of 1917 to nearly 200,000 when the armistice was signed was one of the greatest war-time achievements of the United States. An analysis shows that out of every six officers in the army during the war, only one had had previous military training either in the regular army or in the National Guard; two went into service practically without military training (doctors, business and technical experts, etc.); while three (or half of the total) went in through the officers' training camps.

##### OFFICERS' RESERVE CORPS

Even before the outbreak of the war in 1914 the need for a trained officers' reserve to be available in time of emergency had been recognized by many Americans; out of this grew the Plattsburg plan for the training of civilians. The National Defense Act of June 3, 1916, provided for an Officers' Reserve

Corps, to afford a means by which a large number of men could be selected and trained as officers for use in an emergency. Commissions in the reserve corps were granted only after examination and upon the recommendation of the examining boards, concurred in by the heads of staff corps or department commanders.

In Hawaii, through the fall of 1916 and up to the summer of 1918, a large number of men received commissions as reserve corps officers, among them being some of the leading business men in the community. The sections in which these men were commissioned were chiefly the Quartermaster, Engineer, and Medical Reserve Corps, though a few were in the Infantry and other sections. As the national military program developed, the reserve officers in the territory were called into active service from time to time individually or in groups. Among the first to be called in June, 1917, were Majors C. R. Forbes and C. W. C. Deering and Captains G. E. Schaefer and P. M. Smoot. In August Captain F. E. Howes was called; in October, Captains G. K. Larrison and H. E. Murray; in November, Major F. L. Putman; in December, Captains P. A. Swift, T. M. Church, and J. T. Phillips; in January, 1918, Major C. B. Cooper and Captains Arthur Coyne, H. L. Freeman, and A. G. Hawes; in June, Major A. C. Cornelison, Captain C. B. Andrews, and 1st Lieutenants H. A. R. Austin and J. C. Morgan; in July, Captains J. R. Galt, W. F. Dillingham, H. G. Dillingham, Bruce Cartwright, J. K. Butler, G. H. Angus, and J. F. C. Hagens. The splendid service rendered to the nation by these men, in Hawaii, on the mainland, and overseas, was of the most varied character.

In the spring of 1917 the Honolulu Y. M. C. A. arranged an instruction class for the benefit of citizens desiring to pass the examinations for commissions in the officers' reserve corps. The class was divided into two sections, one under Captain P. M. Smoot, Officers' Reserve Corps, and one under Lieutenant E. F. Witsell of the regular army. The Y. M. C. A. also had a class in first aid with special attention to the military

side; and physical training classes especially designed to prepare young men for military service. At Schofield Barracks a number of classes or training courses were conducted for reserve officers in certain sections—Ordnance, Medical, etc.

Besides the men who went into active service through the reserve corps, four or five National Guard officers were called into federal service prior to the general mobilization and assigned to duty at Hawaiian Department headquarters. But Hawaii's largest contribution of officers, aside from those in the National Guard, came from the graduates of the three officers' training camps which were held at Schofield Barracks. As early as the summer of 1915 a suggestion had been made for the holding of a training camp in Hawaii on the Plattsburg model for the benefit of civilians desiring to receive military training. The subject was agitated from time to time as a result of the preparedness movement. In the spring of 1916 it was promoted by the Rotary, Commercial, and Ad Clubs of Honolulu, and several thousand dollars were subscribed for buildings and rifle ranges on the Punchbowl site which had been set aside for the use of the National Guard. The civilian training camp did not materialize, however, the military energies of the people being largely absorbed in the upbuilding of the National Guard.

#### FIRST OFFICERS' TRAINING CAMP

The first series of officers' training camps in the states began on May 15, 1917, continuing for a period of three months. At the close, out of nearly 40,000 men attending these camps, 27,341 were found qualified to receive commissions. Hawaii had no part in this first series of camps; but for the second series, to begin August 27, ten civilians of the territory were selected by the army authorities to attend the camp at the Presidio, San Francisco. Nearly all of these men had had previous military experience; one of them, A. L. C. Atkinson, was a former secretary and acting governor of the territory. On July 18, this arrangement was revoked, and the

commander of the Hawaiian Department was authorized to establish a training camp at Schofield Barracks for 100 candidates. The men previously selected to go to the Presidio were expected to attend the local camp. Announcement of the plan for an officers' training camp in Hawaii was received with enthusiasm, and 150 men applied for admission. When the list of those selected to attend the camp was made public, it was found that the candidates were distributed as follows: Honolulu, 63; Oahu outside Honolulu, 5; Maui, 14; Kauai, 4; Hawaii, 6; army, 8; one Japanese and one Chinese were included in the number, and several members of the National Guard; nearly all the professions and various walks of life were represented. Among the candidates were a dozen or more reserve officers who had not yet been called to active duty and were, in accordance with the policy of the War Department, required to attend the training camp and demonstrate their fitness for commissions.

The training camp opened August 27, with Captain Elvid Hunt of the 1st U. S. Infantry in command. Before the close of the camp, Captain Hunt was promoted and ordered to the mainland; Captain (later Major) Charles F. Leonard was then appointed as commander of the training camp. The course of training was identical with that given at the mainland camps, the primary aim being to develop capacity for leadership. Captain Hunt said, "We are going to impress upon them all the necessity of learning to command. The detail work, of course, is important and should be learned by all means; but if the men have not learned to take command when the school is finished our work has not been well done." The work was planned in such a way as to make the men hard and fit physically, to give thorough drill in the ordinary routine of military life, training in practical warfare under modern conditions, including a course of trench digging and trench fighting, and the theoretical instruction necessary for officers up to the grade of Captain. To accomplish all of this in three months



required a strenuous round of activity and intense study from early morn till late at night.

At the end of the three months of training, 75 of the candidates were awarded commissions, 12 as captains, 43 as first lieutenants, and 20 as second lieutenants. The Japanese candidate, Kinichi Sakai, was among those who received commissions as second lieutenants. Five of the number were commissioned in the National Army and 70 in the Officers' Reserve Corps, but all were immediately assigned to active duty in the Hawaiian Department. Two of the new officers were commissioned in the quartermaster department and two in the signal corps; all the others in the infantry. The latter were attached to the 1st, 2nd, 25th, or 32nd Regiments of regulars, and many of them were transferred with their regiments to the mainland in the summer of 1918.

#### SECOND OFFICERS' TRAINING CAMP

Before the close of the first training camp, announcement was made regarding the second one, to open January 5, 1918. The candidates for the second camp were all selected from the enlisted personnel of the Hawaiian Department or from the Hawaiian National Guard, the total number being 225, about 50 of whom were guardsmen. Major Robert M. Lyon, 25th Infantry, was appointed by General Wisser as commandant of the camp, but before its conclusion he was ordered to the mainland and Major Thomas H. Lowe was appointed to succeed him in command. One of the instructors was Second Lieutenant J. Atherton Gilman, who had received his commission in the first training camp. When the course of training ended, April 19, the 62 successful candidates—42 from the regular army and 20 from the National Guard—were not immediately commissioned, but were given certificates of eligibility for commissions as Second Lieutenants, to be given as rapidly as they were needed. They were all sent to Camp Gordon, Georgia, where they were temporarily assigned to replacement regiments with the rank of sergeants.

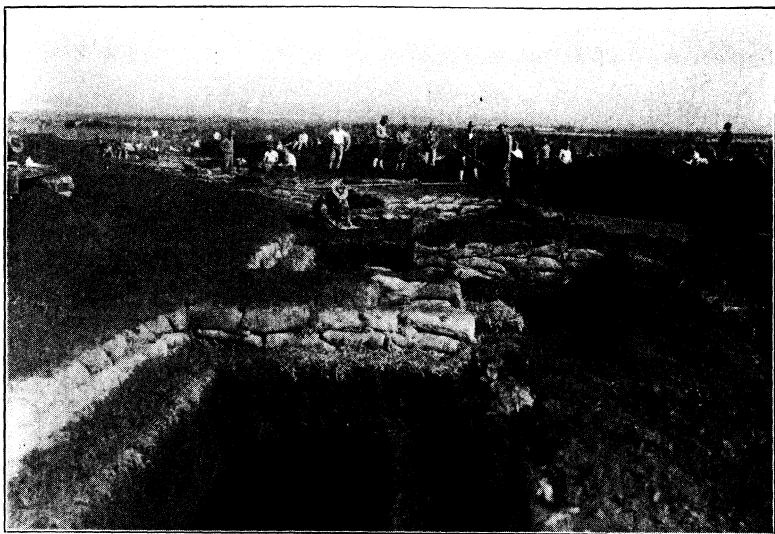
## THIRD OFFICERS' TRAINING CAMP

On May 15 a third training camp was opened, with Major Lowe in command. The original order from the War Department for the establishment of this camp stated that the candidates should be enlisted men of the regular army or civilians who had already received at least one year of military training in educational institutions under the supervision of army officers; National Guardsmen not in federal service were not to be admitted. In an effort to secure the admission of members of the National Guard, cable messages were sent to Washington by Delegate Kalaniana'ole and by the Honolulu Chamber of Commerce. In response to these appeals the War Department consented to allow not to exceed 50 Guardsmen to be admitted to the camp, but only on condition that they obtained their discharge from the National Guard and enlisted in the regular army for the duration of the war. The camp opened with an enrollment of 191, of whom 36 were from the National Guard and 7 were civilians. When the camp closed, in August, 108 successful candidates, including 15 local men, were commissioned as Second Lieutenants and assigned temporarily to the 25th Infantry, but within less than a month they were ordered to the mainland and stationed at Camp Grant, Illinois.

While the third officers' training camp was in progress, it was announced that no more would be held in the territory, the new policy being to have centralized training camps, all in the South. During the fall about 150 service men, including many island boys, were selected and ordered to various training camps in Arkansas, Kentucky, and Georgia, where most of them remained until they were mustered out after the armistice.

## REGIMENTAL OFFICERS' SCHOOL

The enlargement of the 1st and 2nd Hawaiian Regiments after the calling of Hawaii's draft contingents resulted in a great shortage of officers in those organizations. In order to

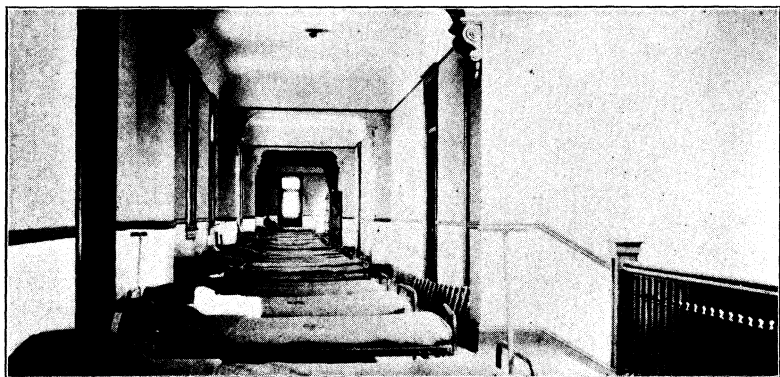
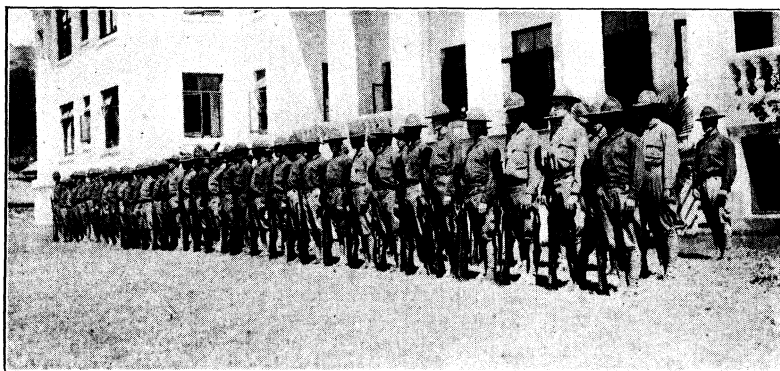


Trenches Made by Officer Candidates



Signal Drill

OFFICERS' TRAINING CAMP AT SCHOFIELD BARRACKS



# S. A. T. C. AT COLLEGE OF HAWAII

Above: Tent Quarters of Student Soldiers. Middle: Company at Attention.  
Below: Beds in Upper Hallway of Hawaii Hall following Kona Storm of  
December 3, 1918

meet this pressing need, a school for officers was established in July, 1918, at Fort Shafter and Schofield Barracks, under orders issued by General A. P. Blocksom, commander of the Hawaiian Department. About 100 candidates were selected from the two regiments, and after two months of intensive training, 50 of them were awarded commissions as Second Lieutenants. In accordance with the policy of the War Department, those who came from the 1st Regiment were transferred as officers to the 2nd Regiment, and vice versa. Later in the fall a second officers' school was begun with fifty candidates under command of Captain Frank E. Midkiff, but after about two weeks it was discontinued due to the reduction of military preparation following the armistice.

#### COLLEGE OF HAWAII S. A. T. C.

Although the College of Hawaii was a land grant school and as such was expected to give military training, instruction along that line had not been given prior to the fall of 1918 because of the small number of students. During the collegiate year 1917-18 a small unit might have been formed, but the necessary authorization for equipment could not be obtained. Plans were made for the formation of a unit in the fall of 1918, despite the fact that 50 per cent of the male students had either enlisted or been called out in the National Guard or draft. In accordance with the plans of the War Department a Students' Army Training Corps was established at the College with the opening of the collegiate year 1918-19. This necessitated the postponement of the opening from September 9 to the first of October and required some readjustment of the academic calendar for the year. The placing of the College on a military basis also involved some revision of the curriculum to provide for the military drill and special courses of instruction stipulated by the War Department. All male students of 18 years or over were inducted into the United States army as regular soldiers with the status of privates, receiving pay, equipment, housing, subsistence, training, and tuition at the College.

As there were no facilities at the College for housing, it was planned to erect temporary barracks, the governor agreeing to supply the necessary money from his contingent fund. Until the barracks could be provided, the college soldiers were housed in regulation army tents loaned by the Hawaiian Department. In the tropical storm which swept over the island early in December, the tent quarters were so badly disarranged that the college soldiers had to use the hallways of Hawaii Hall as dormitories for the remainder of the term. The college dining room served as a mess hall. General Blocksom appointed Lieutenant George H. W. Barnhart, 1st Hawaiian Infantry, as Commandant of the Students' Army Training Corps. Lieutenant Barnhart was a graduate of the College of Hawaii, and had gone into federal service as a sergeant in Company L, 2nd Regiment, Hawaiian National Guard. He received his lieutenant's commission in September as a graduate of the regimental officers' school of the 2nd Hawaiian Infantry.

On Tuesday, October 1, fifty-four young men were inducted into the S. A. T. C. and on that and the following day were given their physical examination at Fort Shafter. Four were rejected. There were some later additions so that when the corps was demobilized it had a membership of 62. On Thursday the tents were set up on the college campus and the men began to get settled into their new environment. Drill was begun the following Monday and a strict military regime inaugurated. Besides their ordinary classes, instruction was given in military correspondence and army paper work, and all students in the College were required to take a course in war aims, which was given by President Dean.

After the signing of the armistice, instructions were at first received from Washington to continue the S. A. T. C. work without interruption regardless of the termination of hostilities, but other orders came before long to the commander of the Hawaiian Department instructing him to demobilize the

corps at the close of the term then in progress. In pursuance of these orders the student soldiers were mustered out December 20, receiving pay for the time they had been in service; subsequently, each of them received the \$60 bonus granted to those who had been in service and discharged since April 6, 1917. By vote of the College faculty, students who made satisfactory grades in the military work during the term were allowed four credits towards a degree.

#### BEGINNING OF THE R. O. T. C. IN HAWAII

The National Defense Act of June 3, 1916, provided for the establishment and maintenance in civil educational institutions of a Reserve Officers' Training Corps, consisting of a senior division organized at universities and colleges, and a junior division organized at other public or private educational institutions. The courses of theoretical and practical military training for units of the Reserve Officers' Training Corps were prescribed by the War Department and the whole system thoroughly supervised by the same authority.

In Hawaii the first R. O. T. C. unit was established at the Kamehameha School for Boys. Since 1908 this institution had been recognized as a military school by the War Department and an army officer detailed for duty at the school. As soon as the National Defense act became effective, application was made to the War Department for the establishment at the school of a unit of the Junior Division of the Reserve Officers' Training Corps, and in November of 1916 this application was granted and the unit recognized.

Mention has already been made of the introduction of military instruction at Punahou School. The course was begun at the opening of the winter term 1915-16 (January, 1916). The military department was in charge of Frank E. Midkiff, with Captain W. E. Hunt, 2nd U. S. Infantry, as instructor in military drill and tactics. Placing military drill in the curriculum of this old missionary institution was looked upon with some misgiving by various of its friends and supporters.

These objectors argued that Punahou, because of its history and traditions and because of the peculiar conditions existing in Hawaii, ought to be preserved as a centre and rallying ground of civil liberty and international friendship, and they expressed the fear that the institution would be "militarized" in an aggressive and harmful sense. The test of experience, however, failed to justify the anticipatory alarm felt by these well-meaning objectors, and after two years it was announced that military instruction would be continued permanently. In the fall of 1918, on application of the school authorities, Punahou was designated by the War Department as a unit of the Reserve Officers' Training Corps, Junior Division, and an officer of the United States Army detailed as instructor in military science and tactics. The first commandant and instructor of the corps under this new system was Lieutenant Harry Smith, C. A. C.



## CHAPTER V

### MILITARY PARTICIPATION

#### IV. Men of Hawaii in Regular Service—Volunteers— British Recruiting

##### IN BRITISH FORCES

**B**Y A CURIOUS IRONY, the very first men who left Hawaii for the battlefields of Europe were a couple of German reservists who sailed from Honolulu during the first week of August, 1914, but were captured by the British before they got across the Atlantic. There were some other German, Austrian, and French reservists called from Hawaii, but their number was very small and the data in reference to them are exceedingly scanty.

It is quite a different story when we come to speak of the men who volunteered for service in British armies. Their number was large and while the information about them is not extensive, it is yet sufficient for the present purpose. It was, in large measure, these men who supplied the basis for Hawaii's personal interest in the tremendous struggle prior to April, 1917. Up to that time open recruiting for the British armies could not be carried on in the United States; nevertheless, there was some organized effort in Hawaii to encourage British subjects (and others who were so inclined) to volunteer. Money was raised to aid such volunteers and their families. No particular attempt was made to conceal these operations; on the contrary, the newspapers gave them considerable publicity. As a result of these efforts, and independently of them, Britishers (using that term in its broadest sense) came forward in large numbers to offer their services to the empire—among them men from all walks of life, business and professional men, mechanics, plantation technicians and

lunas, students, laborers—in age scattered through the whole range of military availability. One of the earliest to go was the organist of St. Andrew's Cathedral in Honolulu; another was an executive of one of the leading trust companies; a little later, the manager of the Honolulu Gas Company and secretary of the Ad Club; and so it went. In January and February, 1915, two groups, of 9 and 12 respectively, took their departure. In May of that year it was reported that 43 men had already gone from Hawaii to join the British forces. Included in the number were several native Hawaiians, who thus testified to the traditional friendship between Hawaii and England. The greater part of these men joined the Canadian army, but some went direct to England or Scotland, while a few reached France as members of Australian or New Zealand contingents. It was some of these early British volunteers whose names were first written on the roll of Hawaii's honored dead in the great struggle.

With the entry of the United States into the war, British recruiting entered on a new phase. An agreement between the two countries opened the way for an active campaign by a British recruiting commission for the purpose of enlisting British subjects resident in the United States in the British forces. In Hawaii work was begun in July, 1917, following instructions received from General White, of the British Army, director of the British Recruiting Service in the United States. British Consul E. L. S. Gordon called a meeting of prominent members of the local British Club and an executive committee was organized, with Consul Gordon as its head. Sub-committees were formed on the outside islands, and finance committees which raised funds to assist the families of the men recruited and sent away. Advertisements were published in the newspapers.

The first contingent, consisting of 22 men, left Honolulu August 20, 1917. The second contingent, 39 men, sailed September 21; and the third contingent, 7 men, went off a month later. About that time instructions were received from New

York to discontinue recruiting on account of the expense. In January the campaign was reopened and in March a final contingent of 20 men left for Canada. A summary of the results of the organized recruiting showed that 19 men were recruited and accepted for the English army, 74 for the Canadian forces, while 26 who volunteered were rejected because of physical disabilities. Taking into account the men enlisted during this recruiting campaign and those who had previously gone forward, it was estimated that 25 per cent of the British-born population of the islands was in service and that 30 per cent had volunteered.

In memory of the men from Hawaii who thus offered their services and their lives "for God, king, and country," a shrine made of teak-wood from H. M. S. *Britannia* with a large copper cross in the centre was presented to the British Club of Honolulu by Consul E. L. S. Gordon. On the panels of this shrine were inscribed the names of the volunteers. When the war was over and the final reckoning made up, this shrine contained the names of 186 men and 4 women (Red Cross nurses). Twenty of these men had their names marked with stars, showing that they had made the supreme sacrifice.

#### IN U. S. SERVICE

Long before the United States entered the war a good many young men of Hawaii had gone into the army or navy. The proximity of the naval station and the military posts on Oahu suggested a natural avenue of service to island boys. The preparedness movement of 1915 and 1916 and the creation of new army units (such as the 32nd Regiment, formed in the Hawaiian Department in 1916 by contributions from other organizations and new enlistments) stimulated the ordinary rate at which the youth of Hawaii entered the military and naval forces. With the United States actually in the war this local interest was greatly increased. The motives of patriotism and love of adventure came into play. In proportion to its citizen population, Hawaii had a large representation in the army and navy.

At the beginning of February, 1917, an active navy enlistment campaign was started on the U. S. S. *St. Louis* and *Alert* and was prosecuted with considerable success over a period of several months. Part of the recruits obtained were placed on these ships and saw service with them throughout the war. Some were sent to the coast for training or transferred to other ships. It has already been noted that Hawaii's naval militiamen, called into active service in April, 1917, served on the *St. Louis* until after the armistice. Some young men from Hawaii enlisted in the navy at other places in the United States. The merchant fleet, also—of supreme importance in this war because of its world-wide scope and the destructive activity of enemy submarines—claimed a substantial body of recruits from these islands.

But it was the army which made the strongest appeal to the young men of the Hawaiian Islands. Their military ardor was by no means satisfied by enlistment in the National Guard, though, as we have seen, the National Guard of Hawaii had a most remarkable and unique record in the matter of enlistment. The failure to mobilize the Guard in 1917 caused a large number of men to enlist in the regular organizations, in the hope and belief that they would in that way sooner get to France. This was especially noticeable toward the end of 1917 and in the spring of 1918. For similar reasons, some men went to the mainland to enlist with the idea of getting as close to the scene of action as possible. Men with special qualifications used their talents to open the door of opportunity—an interesting example was the Honolulu artist, Twigg Smith, who served in France in a camouflage battalion of engineers.

Students from Hawaii in mainland colleges answered their country's call with alacrity. To this class, and to others as well, the aviation section of the signal corps made a special appeal and many sons of well-known island families entered that branch of service. Others enlisted in the regular army or in mainland National Guard organizations or in the navy. A

considerable number volunteered and were accepted for officers' training camps in the states, winning commissions and, in some cases, assignment to organizations that were sent overseas.

Since the Hawaiian National Guard and Hawaii's draft contingents were not used for foreign service, the territory's representation on the battlefields of Europe went there in the ways just indicated. It was largely a matter of individual initiative. During the early months of 1918 a special opportunity was afforded for young men not of draft age to see service in France, through a call for volunteers for the engineers—both the regular section and the “gas and flame” section. This resulted in the enlistment of two contingents of volunteers who constituted one of Hawaii's most interesting contributions to the winning of the war. The first company sailed from Honolulu on April 8. The *Advertiser* gives this description of their departure:

“Hawaii's roll of honor was lengthened by thirty-four names yesterday when just that many red-blooded Americans, nearly all Hawaiian born, left Honolulu for San Francisco to be placed in regiments believed to be ready for service in France, followed by the strains of Aloha Oe and the cheers of hundreds of people who packed the street in front of the wharf. Every man in the company of volunteers was below draft age, some just eighteen, none above twenty-one, and all volunteered in order to get to the front as soon as possible. Every youth resembled a human flower garden, so covered with leis as to be almost hidden. They responded to the cheers of friends by singing battle songs and the melodies of Hawaii nei.”

The departure of the second contingent was an even more notable incident. This group, consisting of 64 young men, nearly all of them below draft age, was scheduled to sail on May 14. A suggestion was made that they should be honored with a parade and a special farewell program. This idea appealed to the public, which was just then eagerly waiting for Hawaii's citizen soldiers to be called out, and glad of any opportunity to express in a tangible way its patriotic fervor.

Plans were accordingly made to send off these boys in a manner that would warm their hearts. The governor and the mayor issued proclamations requesting all citizens to participate in the Aloha Parade "as a mark of appreciation of the spirit of valor and patriotism shown by the young men who have volunteered in the various branches of the Engineer Corps for service abroad." Almost at the last moment their sailing was countermanded and the volunteers instructed to wait for the next available transport. This entailed a financial hardship on some of the young men until they were sent to Fort Shafter and made up into a detachment. Their departure finally occurred on June 7 and at that time they were honored with the farewell planned for the earlier date. The following account of the "Aloha Parade" is a composite description put together from the reports published next day in the *Advertiser* and the *Star-Bulletin*:

"Yesterday's parade was unlike the military pageants that Honolulu has seen. These recent warlike spectacles stirred strong emotions and called for bursts of patriotism and pride in the nation's strength, as exemplified by swinging ranks of khaki-clad men with their flashing bayonets and accoutrements. No military units save the departing engineers marched in yesterday's parade. Instead, as though to give a reason why marching ranks of fighting men are seen in the city's streets, thousands of school children and some hundreds of women trod the way to the vessel which carries away Honolulu's own boys to the battlefields of France.

"In the line of march behind the youths who are leaving their homes came a little company, obviously unused to show or parade. It might have been called an ill-assorted group and it did not keep step, but, with ranks awry, marched along together, men, women, and children. This group was made up of the relatives of the boys who were leaving. . . . There were tears shed here, but none faltered on the march and the manner of the farewells that were given at the last leave-taking when the boys turned their steps toward the waiting

vessel told simply that Hawaii is ready to make her sacrifice with the rest of the nation."

"Thousands of persons marched in the great parade, and thousands lined the streets to applaud and cheer as the contingent of 'Hawaii's Own' passed by, each member loaded down with leis, Hawaii's 'Aloha' symbol. The parade itself was a kaleidoscopic picture of color. Stands of American colors were flaunted in the breeze, side by side with the standards of the Allies and the service banners of individuals, corporations, schools and other organizations.

"A veritable riot of color marked the delegation of Daughters of Warriors of Hawaii, which gave a distinct touch of Hawaii of the olden days to the pageant. More than 50 women marched, each wearing the feather cape or robe of royalty. Mayor J. J. Fern and Delegate J. K. Kalaniana'ole were at the head of the recruits. A dozen recruits held the edges of a huge American flag as they marched along.

"There were three bands in the parade, the Hawaiian band, St. Louis College band and the Salvation Army Girls' band. It is estimated that nearly 8,000 school children marched. Schools represented were Kauluwela, Kalihikai, Pohukaina, Royal, Kaiulani, Liliuokalani, Kaahumanu, Normal and McKinley High.

"The Red Cross section was a distinct feature of the pageant and was applauded heartily all along the line. The Red Cross flag was carried by Miss Ruth Anderson.

"More than 100 members of the Hawaiian Vigilance Corps, each carrying an American flag, marched. Kamehameha cadets, cadets from the Honolulu Military Academy and Boy and Girl Scouts marched in large numbers.

"The parade is one which Honolulu will not soon forget. It was illustrative of the war-time spirit in Hawaii. At the dock Attorney Frank Thompson delivered a ringing patriotic address in which, on behalf of all Hawaii, he bade the young Engineer Corps recruits Aloha. Here the recruits were reviewed by

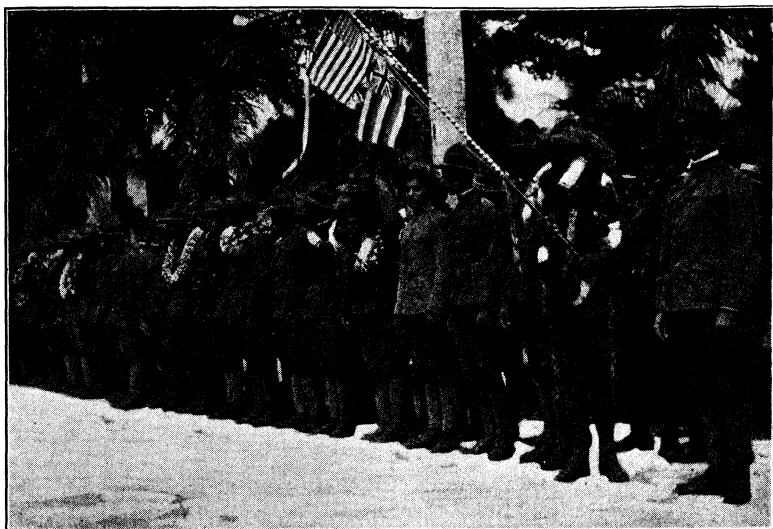
Governor L. E. Pinkham, and Major H. R. H. Prince Arthur of Connaught and members of the latter's party."

Each of the two engineer contingents was kept for a time in training camps on the mainland. By the middle of July the first was in France and before another month had elapsed most of the second group had also arrived overseas. These young volunteers had battle experience. One of them was killed in action, two or three were wounded, and one died of disease.

It is not possible to make an absolutely complete and accurate tabulation of the number of men from Hawaii in military and naval service during the war. The records of the Adjutant General's office show a total of approximately 9,600 in the two branches, about 500 in the navy and 9,100 in the army. This includes all divisions and both officers and enlisted men. It likewise includes the score or more of young women who served in the navy as yeomanettes. The figures given are subject to correction, and the actual total may be a little higher than 9,600. To this number must be added the men who went from Hawaii into the British armies—nearly 200—so that the grand total falls only a little short of 10,000.

Despite the fact that Hawaii's own military organizations were not called away from the islands, the territory was represented in practically every theatre of action—on the shell-torn and blood-stained fields of France and Flanders—in the mountains of Italy and Macedonia—at Gallipoli and in Palestine and Mesopotamia—in tropical Africa and the frigid wastes of Siberia. And everywhere the men who went from these peaceful isles of the sea faced gun and bayonet with the same undaunted courage as their comrades from other lands. They did their work with an efficiency and fidelity that brought to many of them well-merited promotion. They performed deeds of valor that won for them citations and decorations. And when the time came, they laid down their lives with the devotion that characterizes brave and loyal men.

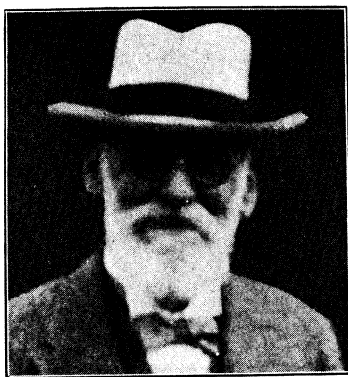




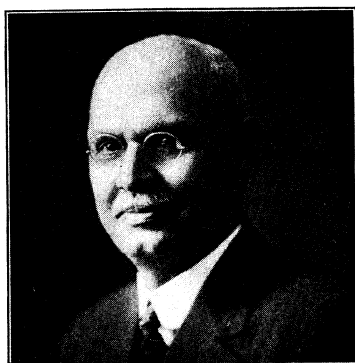
PART OF ENGINEER VOLUNTEERS OF "ALOHA" CONTINGENT



ENGINEER VOLUNTEERS IN "ALOHA" PARADE



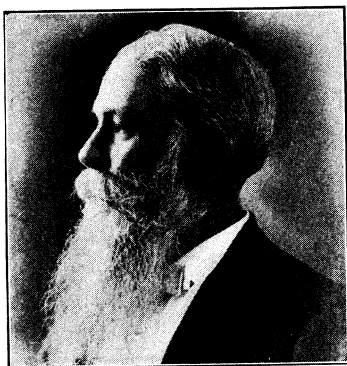
W. R. Castle



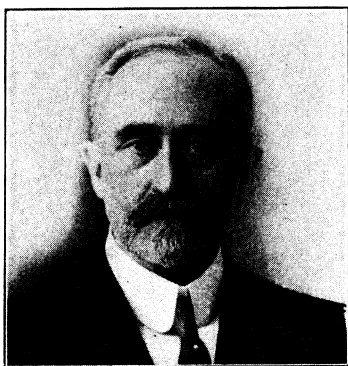
J. A. Rath



W. R. Farrington



S. B. Dole



C. J. Hedemann



C. K. Ai

MEMBERS OF WAR RELIEF COMMITTEE

## CHAPTER VI

### WAR RELIEF COMMITTEE AND HAWAIIAN ALLIED WAR RELIEF COMMITTEE

#### "HAWAII'S GOLDEN OPPORTUNITY"

THE echo of the German guns battering at the gates of Belgium had scarcely rumbled around the world when the territory confronted the first real issue caused by the European war. "Hawaii's Golden Opportunity!"—a cry raised in the summer of 1914—was given two interpretations and started two distinct channels of thought, each of which had a lasting effect on social and economic conditions in the islands.

Directly in line with a discussion carried on by various individuals and civic organizations as to the advisability of holding the annual midwinter carnival in Honolulu, came the realization, expressed editorially in the *Star-Bulletin* of August 15: "Hawaii now faces a golden, a stirring, an unprecedented and a never-to-be-repeated opportunity to go after and get a large share of the world's tourist traffic." A. P. Taylor, mainland secretary of the Hawaii Promotion Committee with an office in San Francisco, was also awake to the effect that the European war would have on Hawaii's "tourist crop." "A very large part of the \$200,000,000 spent for tourist travel in Europe will be directed to the Pacific coast," he prophesied in a report sent to Honolulu. "This augurs well for our own business, as Hawaii is now the 'only safe tourist resort in the world' as I am advertising. Our steamship service is not likely to be interrupted. There certainly will be much travel to Hawaii. Inquiries already coming in indicate that new inquiries are made because of the war."

About the same time it was announced that the Honolulu Ad Club intended to open a campaign for additional funds for the use of the Hawaii Promotion Committee, using the slogan "Hawaii's Golden Opportunity is at hand and must be grasped." "The Ad Club wishes to impress upon the public of Honolulu

that its efforts are for the benefit of all and that the proper time to strike is NOW. With Europe racked with war the tourists will turn Hawaii-ward provided they are advised that they can be given the care and attention that the tourist demands. We can attend to that and it is up to us to do it."

After almost a month of conscientious work by a group of men who had been in frequent session with members of the Promotion Committee it was decided to double the existing tourist fund of \$2,000 per month, Judge Sanford B. Dole, F. B. Damon, Ed Towse, J. W. Jones, H. L. Strange, J. F. Child, A. K. Ozawa, and Chuck Hoy being among those who shaped the more ambitious program.

Meanwhile letters were sent out by the Ad Club urging the contribution of funds for Promotion Committee use, and setting forth the good to be accomplished in boosting "Hawaii's Golden Opportunity." "With the marked changes brought about by our new industrial conditions, Hawaii and Honolulu in particular must look very largely indeed for circulation money to sources other than sugar dividends," the letters stated, with the explanation that, in the past year, \$24,000 had been obtained from various sources but it was hoped that from \$30,000 to \$50,000 per year might be secured for the next three years—"As this period will mean everything to Hawaii's future as a tourist resort . . ."

It was then that Theodore Richards, manager of *The Friend*, came to the fore, giving a new interpretation to the Ad Club's slogan and making a suggestion which, until long after the armistice was signed, was carried out to full effect in Hawaii.

"Your convincing appeal for help to bring tourists is before us," Mr. Richards wrote to the Ad Club Committee under date of August 24. "The Ad Club doubtless invites constructive criticism and we suggest the following by way of AD-DENDUM to your scheme:

"You call attention IN RED to the effect of WAR upon Hawaii's income. Sugar is clearly benefited, but the RED is most suggestive. With no straining at the dramatic, we

are justified in the statement that our increase in sugar profits is at the price of the blood of Europe.

"Say that we 'are not responsible' and that 'it is an ill wind, etc.' At best, does it not sound a little like the prayer of the children of the Newfoundland coast,—'God send us a wreck before morning,' for us to be talking too much of our blood-bought gains, if for ourselves alone?

"Now comes the Tourist plea, resting (in red) on Europe's frightful plight—their extremity, 'Hawaii's Golden Opportunity.'

"If the rich wreckage of Europe must needs come to our shores—and it would seem as though it must—in Humanity's name let us turn some of this blood money into channels for the good of mankind,—more specifically for those who suffer the most.

"Our suggestion ought not to hurt your plea. If you make use of it, WE WILL BACK YOU OUR BEST in an effort to secure the money. It is roughly as follows:

"1. Let us make Hawaii the bearer of a substantial gift to war-ridden Europe. This might be in the form of Red Cross assistance, or to some recognized Relief Society of the countries affected.

"2. We could start a relief fund in the event of a war in the Pacific.

"3. The Propaganda of Peace between Japan and America, already well started in the form of Peace Scholarships, could be further promoted.

"There are doubtless many other ways of using such a fund if created. Funds for any of the above causes could be raised from A DEFINITE PER CENT OF ALL PLEDGES PAID IN, or if some way could be thought out, BY ASSESSMENT LATER, WHEN THE RESULTS OF THE CAMPAIGN ARE MANIFEST."

Ed Towse, for the Ad Club, answered Mr. Richards on September 3:

"Your proposal to provide a 'substantial gift to war-ridden Europe' in connection with the present campaign on behalf of the Hawaii Promotion Committee Fund has received the consideration of the Honolulu Ad Club. For that organization I am instructed to thank you for your interest in its work, to disclaim any thought of securing advantage by the misfortunes of others at war or in peace, to volunteer cooperation in any worthy relief measure undertaken by our community, and to say that the merger you suggest does not appeal to us as being either practicable or timely."

"This need not close the episode as far as the Promotion Committee is concerned," Mr. Richards reiterated in *The Friend* of September, 1914. "We have not given up the idea. Since the fund is to be raised and go into the hands of the Promotion Committee, it would be better business, and in better taste to have them propose and handle any such fund. The fact of the matter is that the appalling nature of the calamity to the world HAS NOT COME HOME TO US YET. Mark you though, it is coming nearer to us all the time, and whether we feel the pinch in our purses or not, we are bound to come cheek by jowl to the dire distress of humanity yet. We will not be able to shunt it completely out of our sight with gay posters and bunting, much less dance it all down in the whirl of carnival.

"What is your 'Carnival' anyway," he asked, "if not a 'farewell to flesh'? The gay hordes that first named this function may have thought that they could square things with a good-humored Diety, and 'may He please excuse this one mad fling, before we come under the spell of the cross.' And what 'flesh' shall we bid farewell to? The carrion of a long line of battlefields with piles of human compost and blood-soaked earth such as this astonished world has never seen? And may our God of Gold please excuse us while we dance and play a bit, gathering up our white skirts from the soil of it, and trying with ukulele and singing girls to drown the noise of battle and the wails of women and children.

“‘Oh, rot, now you’re overdoing it.’ So be it, we’ll discount it. How much, pray? Shall we discount it, say 75 per cent, or even 90 per cent? That’s liberal enough for you, isn’t it? THEN THERE’S TEN PER CENT TO BE SAVED FOR THE WOE OF THE WORLD.”

“We have no desire to stand in judgment on the Ad Club plan,” Mr. Richards explained in the same issue, “but rather to foster it and turn into appropriate channels some of the fruits of the campaign. It seems to us that the claim is no mere sentimental one. First, it is a rightful first mortgage on the fund. Secondly—we are well-nigh ashamed to urge this consideration—it will be the best advertising idea for Hawaii ever put forth. Hawaii the great Peace center! HAWAII THE SYMPATHETIC, with gifts extended to war-cursed suffering and homeless ones. We submit that here most signally is HAWAII’S GOLDEN OPPORTUNITY. What will we do with it?”

As an outcome of this article a representative gathering of citizens was invited to the home of Judge and Mrs. S. B. Dole on the afternoon of September 26, 1914, in order to raise a war relief fund for the benefit of women and children who had lost their husbands, fathers, or other close male relatives in the European war.

Expressing himself as heartily in accord with the sentiments expressed by *The Friend*, Judge Dole stated that it was his belief also that the people of Hawaii who were fortunate enough to be far away from the scene of strife and suffering, and who had profited financially because of the war, should help to alleviate the distress. He was also of the opinion that the fund which it was proposed to raise could be directly applied in quicker time by not turning it over to the Red Cross, as that organization was busy in handling other matters, but that, in all fairness, an equal distribution should be made among the several nations at war. All present concurred and Judge Dole was appointed chairman of the meeting, Miss Emily V. Warriner being secretary.

W. R. Castle moved that a committee of five persons be given authority to plan the campaign for money and it was suggested that the committee consist of persons of each nationality engaged in the European contest—making it, as the *Advertiser* said later, an organization “cosmopolitan in scope and international in complexion.” W. R. Castle, C. J. Hedemann, C. K. Ai, W. R. Farrington, and J. A. Rath were selected as members of the committee.

Though prior to this time local British residents had been raising funds for the widows and orphans of England and local Germans had been seeking contributions to the German Red Cross, this launching of the relief fund movement for Hawaii was the first concerted effort for general work.

In regard to it *The Friend* remarked in October, under the heading “Hawaii’s Golden Opportunity.”:

“The fine public spirit shown by Judge Dole in calling a meeting of representative citizens to devise ways and means for turning the new wave of prosperity which the European war has sent flooding our Territory into channels of blessing for the unfortunate victims of the world-wide disaster is worthy of ‘Hawaii’s First Citizen.’ A Widows’ and Orphans’ Relief Fund strikes the imagination, carries captive the reason, stirs the heart and wins the approval of conscience. It is something new in a calamity of this nature and it has all the accuracy of exact science in getting at the very center of the need of stricken Europe. Our community now has the opportunity of leadership in a most unselfish movement for the advancement of human brotherhood. It accords both with the history and the genius of these Islands. We have been inter-racial in spirit as no other community on earth has been.

“The Hawaiian welcomed men of the white, yellow and black races to citizenship without distinction and careless of numbers. Thus he developed here a world-wide spirit. If we raise a large fund for the proposed relief, it will emphasize all that we stand for in altruism. The movement will serve notice also upon the mainland that this Territory is



worthy of its prosperity and turns it into channels of widest blessing. Let us all rally then according as God has prospered us to make this offering one of the most notable manifestations of the 'Spirit of Hawaii' that these Islands have ever known."

And again, in the same issue:

"The movement is now a community matter, having outgrown, as it was intended it should, its inception by *The Friend*."

#### WAR RELIEF COMMITTEE

The first meeting of the War Relief Committee of Hawaii was held at the office of W. R. Castle on September 30, 1914. Mr. Castle was made chairman and Mr. Rath, secretary-treasurer. As headquarters, Mr. Hedemann offered the empty office of the Honolulu Iron Works on Nuuanu Street below Merchant and undertook to have twenty-five lock collection boxes made at the foundry, which were to be placed about the business district. Later, these mite boxes, each bearing the inscription in English, Hawaiian, and Chinese, "Will You Help?", appeared in the principal business houses of Honolulu.

Mr. Castle announced that a contribution of \$1,000 had already been made.

It was the consensus of opinion that war relief operations should be extended throughout the territory, giving everyone, without regard for nationality or connection with warring countries, an opportunity to contribute; and that the newspapers should be asked to give all possible assistance, publishing the names of subscribers and, from time to time, the treasurer's accounts.

Letters were sent out to as large a number of persons as possible, the Japanese consul and his associates and representative Chinese throughout the islands were interviewed, and the help of the women and of the plantation managers was enlisted. One person in each district, it was determined, should appoint a sub-committee, the members of which were

not necessarily to be confined to citizens of neutral countries, to supervise the work and send the funds collected to Honolulu. Bearing the date of this meeting, the War Relief Committee issued its first statement, sending several thousand copies over the territory. It read, in part:

"It is at such times as these, when the world is convulsed by a war the horrors of which we cannot appreciate in quiet Hawaii, that the call is loudest and clearest for an exercise of our common brotherhood. For every soldier killed in battle, for each sailor sent to the bottom of the ocean, for the vast numbers killed by the war in other ways, and for the myriads who are disabled and thus condemned to a future worse than death, there are the wives and little ones, the old fathers and mothers, the aunts and sisters, suddenly deprived of loved ones, who are also the main and sometimes the only support in life. And all this has come suddenly, almost without warning. Europe is plunged into a grief which we cannot measure; but, in addition to this, starvation and intense suffering is ahead, and is even now upon thousands and thousands, mostly women and helpless children.

"To us the fortunes of war, so terrible to others, have brought a sudden and unexpected increase and bonus in the higher prices of sugar. This increased income does not go only to the holders of sugar stocks; it goes to the mechanic, the clerk, the laborer, to the dealer in foodstuffs and dry goods; in fact, all along the line some portion of this benefit is received. Many of those who are members of the warring nations are already contributing what they can to alleviate the penury and suffering of the widows and orphans, made such by this war. Can anything be finer, can any duty be more obvious, than for all others in Hawaii to contribute what they can toward this object? This is something that neutrals can do without violating any of the laws of war. Let us do it! . . .

"The countries engaged in war now are Austria-Hungary,

Belgium, England, France, Germany, Japan, Montenegro, Russia, Servia, and possibly Portugal and Roumania, and it is the desire of this committee, in carrying out the evident intent of the initial meeting, to divide whatever Hawaii may wish to give between them all, having reference, perhaps, to the greater or lesser needs of any of these states.

"It is also the determination of this committee to make as little expense as possible, to the end that the whole of our gifts may be applied to the desired end and alleviate all the suffering possible. Therefore, every committeeman and solicitor will give his or her time without charge. Nothing will be paid for office or desk room, and generally every other expense possible will be avoided. This is not a Red Cross matter. The funds secured will be used for the relief of widows and orphans of this great war.

"To have this matter thoroughly gone into, it is suggested that soliciting committees be appointed throughout the Territory for the purpose of soliciting and collecting whatever the good people wish to give to this very noble object.

"This memorandum was adopted as a practical statement of the principles and objects to be attained by the people of Hawaii, in doing what they can to alleviate the horrors of this terrible war."

Those who were asked to take an active interest in promoting the movement were addressed as follows:

"Your name has been suggested as one who will gladly help in raising money for the assistance of the widows and orphans of this terrible war. In the statement herewith sent you will see that it is the intention of Hawaii to do its best in this praiseworthy object. Of course the most and best we can do will not restore the lost husband, father, brother or son, but aside from the vast amount of actual suffering relieved, those who are helped will have the comfort of feeling that the brotherhood of man is understood and means something even off here in far Hawaii. Will you help?"

The aid of the newspapers was sought through a letter directed to their editors:

"We hope to interest you in the good work of the War Relief Committee.

"What we have undertaken is outlined in the accompanying statement prepared by Mr. W. R. Castle, chairman of the committee.

"We have thought it probable that you will be willing to open a list through your paper and accept contributions at your office for the Relief Fund, publishing the names of the contributors in your paper from time to time, and forward the funds to Mr. J. A. Rath, Secretary War Relief Committee, Box 514, Honolulu, Hawaii. We can assure you that every dollar contributed to this fund will mean a relief of suffering for the family of some poor fellow who is in the ranks of the nations now at war. We feel certain that you will help us, and we shall be very glad to receive suggestions from you for furthering the work."

Supporting the campaign editorially in its issue of October 2, 1914, under the caption of "Hawaii the Generous," the *Star-Bulletin* announced that it would receive contributions which it would acknowledge publicly and immediately turn over to the committee. A few days later the *Advertiser* made a similar statement.

Objections made to the fund for widows and orphans on the ground that the soldiers in the field, thinking that their families were provided for, would be more willing to fight and that the various governments, seeing the same situation, would prolong the war, were answered by the committee in a statement published in the newspapers of October 9, to the effect that the money donated would "not amount to a drop in the bucket" compared with the enormous expense incurred by the various governments in carrying on the war.

A second meeting of the committee was held at the office of Mr. Castle on October 12, in order to ascertain the views of the members in regard to the sending of funds immediately for the relief of Belgian widows and orphans. New York papers had stated that Messrs. J. P. Morgan and Company, bankers, were authorized to receive and to forward such funds for the relief

of Belgian sufferers, it not being specifically Red Cross aid. It was decided to take money which had been specifically contributed for Belgian relief, add enough to make \$2,000, and cable the amount to Morgan's at once. This was done and the Bank of Hawaii paid for the cable. Thus Hawaii's local benevolence became a feature of the national movement to aid a war-stricken people.

On October 21, 1914, with pledges, \$7,631.05 had been raised from all sources, \$1,261.50 having been specifically given for the relief of Belgium's widows and orphans. The Chinese alone had paid in \$1,220 in small sums. Four thousand dollars was then sent off, divided equally between Belgium, France, Serbia, and Austria, but as the amount previously sent by other agencies for the relief of English and Germans had been in excess of the collections for the committee, no help was extended to those countries at that time.

At the same time a letter signed by Mr. Castle and setting forth the great need for clothing in Europe was published in the newspapers. Its concluding paragraph, "The Committee hopes that people will not only read this letter, but will immediately act upon it. The need is great," received a generous response. The Committee arranged for wagons to visit different parts of Honolulu on specified days to collect the clothing which people might wish to contribute, the hauling being done without charge by the draying companies in the city. Before the end of the year forty-eight boxes were sent off, containing five tons of material for immediate use, to which must be added twenty boxes sent by the relief workers in Hilo. The steamship companies donated freight transportation.

On October 22, the committee, through Mr. Castle, asked the public for opinions as to the proper division of funds between countries. "Shall we include in our division of funds Germany and England, who, we have been informed, have had assistance from the territory of some sixteen or seventeen thousand dollars?"

On October 28, 1914, Mr. Castle spoke before an Ad Club luncheon meeting, stating that, on the day before, the fund of

the War Relief Committee had reached \$10,178.75, which, with the contributions of British and German residents, had brought Hawaii's entire donation for the relief of European war sufferers to \$45,000. The club immediately added \$100.

#### CHAMBER OF COMMERCE FUND FOR BELGIAN RELIEF

On the morning of November 4, 1914, a special meeting of the members of the Chamber of Commerce was held for the purpose of acting on a wireless message received from the Chamber of Commerce of San Francisco: "Have received cable committee London requesting shipload food relief starving Belgians. We are raising fund here for this purpose and urgently request your active cooperation in this grave necessity."

A letter had also been received by J. P. Cooke from W. M. Alexander, who was then on the coast, which contained a copy of a cablegram from a Mr. Rickard, head of the Belgian relief movement, explaining how funds and contributions for the stricken country were handled and requesting that Mr. Alexander lead a movement among the business men of Hawaii to procure for the commission a shipload of food free of charge.

Members of the War Relief Committee attended the meeting. They reported that the Committee had thus far received a total of \$11,545.25 for relief purposes and stated that they were ready to assist the Chamber or, if it seemed advisable, to turn their organization over to it for the relief of Belgium. It was unanimously decided that the Finance and Audit committee of the Chamber be instructed to make an immediate canvass for the purpose of sending funds for Belgian relief in as large an amount as possible, the sum to be placed at the disposal of the War Relief Committee of Hawaii. The San Francisco Chamber was notified that the Honolulu Chamber was cooperating with an already established movement for Belgian relief and Mr. Cooke's cable, explaining that war relief work had been proceeding in the islands for some weeks, was subsequently accepted as an explanation by the coast workers.

The Finance and Audit Committee, composed of E. F. Bishop, A. W. T. Bottomley, and F. J. Lowrey, sent out to the

members of the Chamber the following statement, under date of November 5:

"At a general meeting of the Chamber, held this day, the Finance Committee of the Chamber was appointed as a subcommittee in conjunction with the War Relief Committee of Honolulu to solicit subscriptions for the special purpose of AFFORDING RELIEF TO THE BELGIAN SUFFERERS.

"Will you subscribe, no matter how small the amount, and mail same to the Committee at once.

"On account of the urgency of this matter checks covering subscriptions should be in by November 15."

"It is unnecessary that this committee emphasize or enlarge upon the great need that exists as the appalling distress now prevailing in Belgium is a matter of world knowledge and calls for help from every civilized community," the firms were informed.

"It would seem that the standard of prosperity in Hawaii at the present time is such that a generous response to this appeal may be confidently expected."

The sugar plantations received a similar statement, with the suggestion, "It would seem that the SUGAR INDUSTRY OF HAWAII is eminently in a position to make a generous response to this appeal for suffering humanity."

In less than 24 hours after the initial appeal was made, subscriptions amounting to \$6,175 were received. By November 10, the Chamber had collected \$14,000 for the Belgians; two days later, 350 persons paid their way into the Hawaii Theater when it was announced that the proceeds of an entertainment by Miss Mae McKay and for which the Hawaiian Electric Company had donated the lights, would be given to the cause. The lepers of Kalaupapa sent in \$127.65.

At the close of the campaign, on November 17, the Chamber of Commerce handed to the War Relief Committee a check for \$34,000 to be used exclusively for the relief of suffering Belgians, and the amount was immediately cabled to New York. The fund raised by the Chamber of Commerce brought up the total receipts of the War Relief Committee to \$49,441.40, distributed as follows: Belgium, \$44,000; Northern France, \$2,500;

Serbia, \$1,000; Austrian Galicia, \$1,000; and small amounts elsewhere.

On November 19, the Committee decided "first, that for the present an active propaganda cease, but that the committee retain its organization and resume operations some time next year, probably early in the year, depending on the needs of sufferers from the war as such needs appear at that time; and that for the present, donations of clothing, etc., be suspended."

#### WAR RELIEF COMMITTEE, 1915-1917

At the beginning of January 1915, the War Relief Committee decided to resume its campaign with renewed activity. During the preceding six weeks small amounts had continued to come in, bringing the total receipts to about \$53,000. The greater part of this had gone for Belgian relief. Now the Committee felt that it ought to widen its sphere of action and do something for Northern France and Poland. On January 8 a new appeal for funds was issued. On that date the work of the Committee was represented on the outer islands by Mrs. Eric Knudsen of Kekaha, Kauai, Mrs. F. F. Baldwin of Puunene (for Maui, Molokai, and Lanai), Mrs. Robert Hind of the Kohala district, and Mr. and Mrs. E. E. Conant of the Kona district of Hawaii. Hilo had its own bureau, forwarding its own material.

A number of persons had pledged themselves to give small amounts each month, and about the middle of February, regular pledges amounting to \$5,000 per month were sought from business houses and citizens. A circular letter was sent to merchants and others and W. R. Castle attended the annual meetings of the sugar companies, making an appeal for monthly help from them. It was the aim of the Committee to have a fixed, permanent income as long as the war lasted, in order that the fund might not be dependent on spasmodic contributions. Inasmuch as Hawaii had benefited by the war, it was felt that she should help those who had suffered from the same cause.

A general summing up by Mr. Rath at the end of December, 1915, showed a total of \$84,343.75 of which the principal bene-



ficiaries had been Belgium, \$48,200; France, \$5,000; Serbia, \$7,725; Austria, \$1,000; Poland, \$16,725; the American Red Cross, \$1,773, and Armenia, \$3,300, which, with the other smaller donations, left a balance of \$491.60.

Judge Dole was elected chairman on February 4, 1916, taking the place of W. R. Castle on the Committee, and at his suggestion the following letter was sent to the sugar corporations on February 24:

"Since the beginning of the European war the Hawaiian community has contributed through the agency of the War Relief Committee of Hawaii \$84,852.15, and averaging about \$4,500 a month, not to speak of numerous other contributions for the relief of the distress caused by the war. About one-half has gone to Belgium, nearly a quarter to Poland and the rest, in smaller amounts, mainly to France, Serbia, Austria and Armenia.

"Without our instrumentality, this war with its deplorable results to European communities has brought and is still bringing to Hawaii unusual and unexpected prosperity. Is it not obviously fitting that while this status continues, we should generously tax ourselves for the relief of those who are impoverished by the very causes that have brought wealth to us?"

The committee suggested that "such corporations authorize their respective agents to assess their gross tonnage of production for this object, at such a percentage as shall be reasonable under the circumstances, conferring with each other on the subject so that such assessments shall substantially agree as to all of the corporations taking action in the matter."

During 1916 the work continued on much the same lines as before. A report in April showed that \$99,874.75 had been received by the Committee up to that time and it was estimated that Hawaii's total contribution for the relief of war sufferers was well over a quarter of a million dollars. In May a "tag day" was held for the Red Cross. In October, Mrs. A. B. Ingalls gave a benefit recital which netted \$170 for French War Orphans.

In July a meeting was held with the object of passing upon a request for funds from the Irish Relief Committee, Messrs.

John A. Hughes and Frank Creedon having stated the needs of Ireland as a result of trouble there. The following resolution was passed:

"Whereas the War Relief Committee was organized to distribute funds among the non-combatants of the countries swept by the forces of the great war,

"Resolved, that the Committee can go beyond this plan of action only through direct authorization of the donors of funds placed in its care."

An important point to be noticed in the second year of the Committee's existence is the large amount given for the relief of Poland and Armenia. During the first year the bulk of the funds contributed were for Belgian relief; in 1916 only \$500 of the Committee's fund went to Belgium, since other special movements for Belgian relief had been organized. At the beginning of October, Mr. Rath presented a financial report for the two year's ending September 30, 1916. This showed that for the last year the receipts had been \$45,813.40 and the disbursements \$45,602.25. For the two years since the Committee was organized the total receipts had been \$120,365.55 and the disbursements \$120,154.40, distributed as follows:

Belgium .....	\$48,700.00
Prince of Wales (British) fund.....	75.00
France.....	7,000.00
Serbia .....	9,725.00
Austria (Galicia) .....	1,000.00
Germany.....	43.00
Children's fund.....	11.15
American Red Cross.....	1,773.00
Arumiah (Armenia).....	500.00
Armenia .....	27,600.00
Poland.....	23,725.00
Wireless .....	2.25

In January, 1917, one thousand dollars were given to Mrs. Walter F. Dillingham for her French orphan's fund, systematic management of that branch of relief having been started in Hawaii and, through the American Red Cross, the Belgians were

given \$2,000; the Armenians, \$3,000; the Poles, \$2,000, and the Serbians the same.

"You are really wonderful in Honolulu," Miss Mabel T. Boardman wrote to Mr. Rath under date of January 19, "and we greatly appreciate the splendid assistance to the relief work in Europe. . . . May I ask if you will express to the generous donors the sincere thanks of the American Red Cross?"

On March 27, 1917, it was voted to pay, commencing as of January 1, \$365 a month to the fund for French war orphans to care for five orphans each month for two years. In April a tag day was held by the women for the benefit of French war orphans and the French Red Cross at which about \$600 was raised. On May 7 there was a balance of \$3,184.65, of which the French Red Cross was given \$400, the American Ambulance Society, \$1,000, and the work of Madame d'Eichthal for the blind soldiers of France, \$500. Total receipts of the Committee to the end of June, 1917, amounted to more than \$154,000.

With the entry of the United States into the war, relief work entered upon a new phase and many problems were presented for solution. These matters were considered by the Committee at various meetings throughout the spring and summer of 1917; the Committee was enlarged, reorganized, and brought into closer relationship with other organizations; and finally was made over into a chapter of the American Red Cross. Judge Dole resigned from the Committee in the early part of May and W. R. Castle came back for about two months. E. D. Tenney became a member and was elected chairman on May 22. At the same time C. R. Hemenway was added to the Committee. Later in the summer the membership was further increased by the addition of F. C. Atherton, James Wakefield, and G. R. Carter, Mr. Carter being elected vice chairman.

At the meeting of May 7 the matter of coordinating different war relief bodies at work in Honolulu was voted on favorably and Mr. Rath was instructed to approach other bodies with a view to bringing about such coordination. On June 30 a meeting was held for the purpose of considering the reorganization of the Committee. Chairman Tenney said he felt that if the Com-

mittee was to carry out its purpose it would be necessary to enlarge its scope; instead of merely being a committee to receive subscriptions that were made, it would be necessary to keep before the community the fact that the committee existed and that subscriptions were needed for the relief of suffering incident to the war. He added that A. L. Castle was anxious to do some definite work and had offered to serve as secretary, treasurer, and executive officer with authority to secure members on the other islands, carry on correspondence, and to keep before the public the subject of war relief and the needs of the American Red Cross. As Mr. Rath wished to be relieved of his duties as secretary and treasurer, Mr. Castle's offer was accepted and he was appointed secretary, treasurer, and executive officer of the Committee. At the same meeting it was voted that the War Relief Committee to be reorganized to the extent of authorizing the chairman to add to the Committee such persons as he thought advisable on Oahu and that there be added to the Committee not less than two persons on Hawaii and one each on Maui and Kauai. This reorganization was not fully carried out, due to the transformation of the Committee into a chapter of the American Red Cross, which took place very soon.

On the morning of July 20, 1917, was consummated the amalgamation of the War Relief Committee and the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee for the purpose of centralizing and making more effective general war relief work in the territory. The latter organization, composed of women who had been actively making and forwarding supplies since 1916, had, up to this time, completed 129,000 articles valued, at a conservative estimate, at \$31,000. The men's committee was to handle the funds for both branches of the work, thus centralizing the finances and relieving the public of the confusion caused by the similarity of the names of the two committees.

#### HAWAIIAN ALLIED WAR RELIEF COMMITTEE

Hawaii's women were working for the relief of European war sufferers as early as August, 1914, and in the fall of that year Mrs. Walter Dillingham headed a committee which collected

money for the American Red Cross and was also engaged in the making of hospital garments.

"Though funds are of the first importance for the sending of a trained personnel and the purchase of surgical and medical supplies," Mrs. Dillingham stated on November 7, "there will be need for a certain class of other supplies. Patterns and samples of material for night-shirts, which are especially needed, and instructions for knitting abdominal bands may be obtained at headquarters in the Y. W. C. A. rooms in the Boston building Wednesday and Saturday mornings between 9 and 11 o'clock, at which time the committee will also be glad of assistance in the cutting of garments."

Work would also be carried on, Mrs. Dillingham announced, by St. Andrew's Auxiliary with Mrs. Arthur Smith as chairman for the Episcopal churches; the Women's Society of Central Union Church with Mrs. Lorrin Andrews as chairman; the Punahou Guild, with Mrs. Peacock, chairman for the Catholic churches; and the Methodist guild with Mrs. Cooper, chairman. T. H. Davies & Company and Hackfeld & Company had generously agreed to furnish material at cost. Associations or individuals who wished to take part in Red Cross work were instructed to inquire at the Y. W. C. A. rooms. Owen Williams, general agent of the Wells Fargo Express, offered to send all money orders for the Red Cross fund either to New York or Washington free of charge, and much other assistance was given.

"Good for the Women" the *Star-Bulletin* stated editorially on January 15, 1915, when it was learned that a group at a "tea-party" had originated the idea of making baby clothes to be donated to refugees of the warring countries, each agreeing to form a group of her own. The chairman had proved that a single dress of gray fleece-down could be made in half an hour at a cost of 15 cents for material. Some women gave money, some gave their time, and others employed seamstresses. During December, 1914, this group spent \$87 for supplies, turned out a large number of garments and made 650 booties from the scraps left over. The express company donated crates and delivered the boxes to the docks of the American-Hawaiian Steamship

Company from which place they were sent, transportation free, to Red Cross headquarters in New York, thence to be forwarded to the neediest station in the war zone.

Toward the last of January a center for garment-making and knitting was established at St. Clement's parish house, the Women's Guild being responsible for all expense, and, at the close of Lent, 1915, the women of St. Andrew's Cathedral completed a case of hospital shirts which were forwarded to the American Fund for French Wounded.

A box of women's clothing for Polish relief was sent out during the first week in January (1916) by the Women's Guild of St. Clement's Church. In the Lenten season many more garments were finished by the women of the Cathedral and sent to hospitals in France, and, in June of that year, regular war relief work was established under the direction of Mrs. Restarick, wife of the Right Reverend H. B. Restarick, Bishop of Honolulu, who made such an earnest appeal to the women of the guild that they voted to make hospital supplies for the French wounded during vacation.

Throughout June and July only pajamas and other hospital garments were made, but meanwhile, Miss Eva Stevens was corresponding with and receiving instructions from the Bureau of Surgical Dressings, studying the made dressings which were sent to her and going twice a week to Queen's Hospital to learn from the nurses, and in August she felt competent to direct the younger workers.

So much material was donated to that group of earnest women that, in September, a large meeting and tea was held in the parish house and models of the garments were shown and explained. Enthusiasm ran high, especially when donated supplies came in which were specified to be used for the British, and on that day circles were formed to do work and send it in. The Kaimuki circle, gathered under the direction of Mrs. W. A. Welbourne, worked throughout the war and completed hundreds of perfectly made garments. Seventeen cases, containing 18,830 surgical dressings, 956 hospital garments, 129 knitted articles,

and 638 comfort kits, in addition to warm clothing, were finished and sent to the British Red Cross in October.

The work soon outgrew the rooms of the parish house and, on September 22, the Vacation War Relief Committee of St. Andrew's Guild outlined plans for activity on a much larger scale. Mrs. E. L. S. Gordon, the new chairman, was hostess at a tea which followed the meeting to which she had invited ninety-five women who had shared in the work of the committee during the summer as well as all others willing to volunteer for October.

On Monday morning, November 13, 1916, a number of women leaders of war relief work met at the residence of Mrs. W. R. Castle to form an organization by which it might be carried on along broader lines. Mrs. Gordon called the gathering to order, stating that it was quite unnecessary to go into details as the ladies all knew of the large number of cases of supplies that had been sent to Red Cross headquarters in England, and all felt that the time had come when the work should be carried on by an independent organization which was to be formed on that day. It had been suggested that a new war relief committee be organized to continue the splendid work done by the Guild, and it was hoped it might broaden its scope so that supplies might be sent to the allied nations during the continuance of the war.

The affairs of the association were to be placed under the direction of a chairman, two vice chairmen, a secretary, a treasurer, a finance committee, and directors of the various departments and units.

The following officers were unanimously selected: Miss Beatrice Castle, chairman; Mrs. Gordon and Mrs. Restarick, first and second vice chairmen, respectively; Miss Margaret Hopper, treasurer; and Mrs. W. A. Wall, secretary. The finance committee included Mrs. Henry Damon and Mrs. M. F. Prosser; Miss Mary von Holt was made director of surgical dressings and Mrs. H. Gooding Field of the sewing department; Mrs. M. L. Rice and Mrs. J. A. Cockburn were to direct the buying, Mrs. James Wakefield, the shipping, and Mrs. R. O. Matheson, the publicity.

Miss Castle then took the chair and called for an expression of opinion as to the best method of handling the work. Mrs. Restarick made a plea for warm clothing, as she had received letters from various places telling of that pressing need; the question of funds was discussed, and the finance committee recommended making an appeal for monthly pledges so that a steady income might be assured and the work be carried on in a regular and systematic way. Tentative plans were made for the extension of the work to other islands, in addition to the establishment of units in various parts of town.

Mrs. Cockburn and Mrs. Holmes were appointed a committee to find a suitable work room in a central location and it was agreed that, if shipping facilities allowed, supplies would be sent direct to the clearing house in New York, with the understanding that they were to be forwarded wherever they were most needed. Although the busy holiday season was imminent, it was felt that the work should be begun as soon as suitable headquarters could be secured and, after discussion, the organization was named "The Hawaiian Allied War Relief Society."

At the second meeting, held on November 17, 1916, the chairman suggested that the word "Society" be changed to "Committee" as more clearly representing the character of the organization and the name was then unanimously voted to be the "Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee."

Mrs. Damon, chairman of the finance committee, announced that \$500 a month was needed to carry on the work in the manner planned and that the members had decided to ask the banks, sugar factors and trust companies for funds rather than to solicit the merchants. So generous had been the response that already about \$4,000 of the amount needed for the year's expenses was in sight. She was given a vote of thanks.

Mrs. Wakefield reported that the Matson Navigation Company had agreed to take all shipments to San Francisco free of charge, there being no limit as to the number or size of cases, and that James Wakefield of Davies & Company had also guaranteed six months' freight by rail and had promised to provide packing cases and men to do the packing and hauling. The



offer was much appreciated since it was found that if it had been necessary to pay freight on the recent shipments to the British Red Cross, the charges from Honolulu to New York would have been \$314.50.

Mrs. Cockburn of the buying committee reported that supplies were available for all materials needed and 60 pieces of bandage material were being held for delivery. She was asked to buy six bandage rollers so work might be started as soon as rooms were available and it was decided that, if possible, work should begin on Thursday, November 23. All details were to be left in the hands of the chairman and committee meetings were to be held on the second Monday in each month.

On December 11, 1916, money amounting to \$500 per month had been assured until the end of June and cash on hand was \$2,517.23. A large quantity of clothing had been collected and was being fumigated by the Board of Health but, as there was no wool for knitting, Mr. Wakefield notified the buying committee that all prices were rising and suggested putting aside the material needed for a year's work.

A committee from Central Union Church, in charge of rooms formerly used by the Kilohana Art League at Beretania and Miller streets, had given permission to use them five days a week, free of charge. The Honolulu Iron Works, Lucas Brothers, James Nott, the Hawaiian News Company and other firms donated the necessary fittings. Miss McAllister was given charge of the workrooms at a salary of \$30 per month. In February a second paid worker was employed. It was decided that details should be carried on by a board of directors composed of the officers and two directors at large, to be appointed by the chairmen; that they meet when necessary; and that general meetings be held quarterly.

The Kilohana Art League rooms opened at 9 o'clock on the morning of November 23, 1916, and were kept open for three hours on five days a week, members of Central Union Church being responsible on Tuesday mornings, members of St. Andrew's on Wednesdays, and members of St. Clement's on Fridays. Twice a week or oftener members of the Navy League

were allowed the use of the rooms in the afternoons for first aid classes and lectures, and other individuals conducted work in their homes, Red Cross activities being paramount.

The first quarterly meeting of the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee was held at Miss Castle's home on April 3, 1917. During the past three months over 37,000 articles (21 cases), including material from Honolulu, Hawaii, and Maui, had been packed for shipment. Four of the cases contained warm clothing. Since the beginning of the work, over seven tons had been sent to New York free of charge. After April 2, it was learned, railroad transportation amounting to nine dollars a case would have to be paid, but the steamship companies would continue to carry the shipments to San Francisco free of charge. The units, particularly the one superintended by Mrs. Welbourne, were all doing splendid work, and Miss Sterritt, superintendent of the Girls' Industrial School, had offered the help of the girls in the cutting of small scraps of material to fill hospital cushions.

With the entrance of the United States into the world war at the beginning of April, 1917, the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee decided that its activities were automatically extended to this latest of the allies and that three cases of hospital supplies should be held in reserve from each shipment; these three cases to be sent on with the following shipment and others then held in reserve, so that the committee would always have on hand three cases of supplies destined for the United States.

On May 14 it was learned that expenditures since the last meeting had been \$636.44. The committee then purchased from the Navy League all the gray yarn available and decided that all mufflers and mits were to be held and sent directly to the American Navy League headquarters. Knitting machines were ordered, and the request of Mrs. Seymour Van Cleeve to give her lecture on war relief work in London in order to raise money for the committee was granted; this was given at Mission Memorial Hall on the evening of May 20 and netted \$129.37.

On May 18, 1917, Miss Castle urged the amalgamation of all organizations producing hospital supplies, issuing the following statement:

“The Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee was established to work for those actually suffering at the front and in the warring nations. Now that America has done its duty and has taken sides with the Allies the question is asked, ‘Why are you not working for the American Red Cross?’ The Committee is working for America—it is an Ally; a certain number of cases of supplies are held here in the Islands always for emergency; knitted mufflers and woolies of various kinds are to be sent to the United States Navy; the other cases—and more and more are being filled each month—are being sent to The Clearing House for France and her Allies in New York and from there are forwarded to Europe and distributed among the most needy hospitals and relief rooms in the Allied Nations, where the things are at once used in relieving pain and suffering. Surely, if America sends men to the firing line, these supplies will be more needed in Europe than in the United States. But the minute the Committee receives word from the proper authorities in Washington that supplies should be held in America, this will be done. Cannot all the relief work in the Islands in the line of hospital supplies, etc., be under the direction of the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee, thus concentrating and strengthening the work and benefiting by the reduced prices and transportation? This statement is merely to make clear the purpose of the work for those who question.”

At the second quarterly meeting, held at the Kilohana building on July 9, Mrs. Damon reported that she had received the endorsement of the Chamber of Commerce on the work done during the first quarter, average expenses having been \$586 per month; for the last quarter they had averaged \$910.67 and were expected to be even larger, and thus it would be necessary to have more money for the year's work. The sugar factors and corporations, having given large donations the year before, were prepared to duplicate the amounts for the coming year; but until that time some other means would have to be used to make up the required sum. Thirty-five cases had been shipped during the quarter. Mrs. Damon then prepared a circular letter asking for extra aid which was sent to all workers and interested persons.

On July 20, 1917, at a special meeting held to hear a proposition made by A. L. Castle in regard to the amalgamation of the committee with the War Relief Committee, Mr. Castle stated that, as the similarity of names was confusing to the public it would be advantageous in every way if the two organizations were to unite. In case that were done, the men's committee would take over the financial responsibility and the work would go on as before. After consideration it was decided that the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee associate with the War Relief Committee of Hawaii; and Mr. Castle assured the women that they could count on a sum sufficient to carry on their work satisfactorily, adding that his committee expected soon to become an auxiliary of the American Red Cross.

Following the amalgamation of the two relief committees the activities of the women's committee and the various units in the making of hospital supplies and clothing continued as before. Expenditures for the women's work rose to \$1,063.89 in July. Under the supervision of Miss Elizabeth Carter, large printed cards were placed in the principal hotels, inviting donations from visitors, either in money or work, and the workrooms were filling rapidly.

It was decided about the middle of August, that the committee should undertake the making of 5,000 comfort bags to be sent to the men in the trenches by Christmas; it was necessary for the work to be finished in two weeks. Associated with Mrs. Richard Ivers on the committee were Mrs. E. L. S. Gordon, Mrs. Gerrit Wilder, Mrs. W. L. Whitney, Mrs. G. R. Carter, Mrs. Harry Macfarlane, Mrs. James Cockburn, Mrs. Arthur Berg, Mrs. G. C. Potter, Mrs. H. B. Restarick, the Misses Esme and Heather Damon, and others. Applicants called for material and samples at St. Andrew's Parish House, returning them when completed. The forty-seven and a half gross of each article needed to fill the eleven by fourteen inch bags—handkerchiefs, tobacco, pipes, cigarette papers, medicated soap, blue ointment, buttons, safety pins, shoe laces, chewing gum, puzzles, combs, and writing and sewing materials—were purchased at wholesale prices

by the executive committee, money subscriptions being received by A. L. Castle.

A force of workers—little children, Boy Scouts, and more than 300 women and girls—filled the bags, twenty articles being placed in each one. James Wakefield loaned the services of a packer and men to deliver and take away the thirty-three cases. Some bags were sold for a dollar each, the purchasers having the privilege of enclosing their cards. Later, the proceeds of a delicatessen sale given by the women of the Kaimuki unit netted \$766.55 toward payment of the total cost of \$6,350.

Toward the last of August, with the country at war, it was agreed that the registration and inspection of workers had become a vital necessity and that the women engaged in the making of dressings and garments, being in actual war service, should work under war conditions, one of the first of which was the observance of necessary caution in all things. Volunteers were then given cards to sign—a record containing the name, address and telephone number which was filed for future use in case of need for workers or an emergency demand. The registration was in charge of Miss Phoebe Carter.

A special meeting of the board of directors was held on September 7, for the purpose of considering a change in the work rooms, Governor Pinkham having offered the use of the throne room in the executive building.

"Dear Mrs. Damon," he wrote, "on the information that your organization lacks room for its work, I beg to tender you the hall of the representatives, the former throne room, for its use. The room will be put in order, and also be properly protected from injury upon notification of the date you may desire to occupy it."

"On behalf of the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee and the volunteer workers of Hawaii," Mrs. Damon replied, "let me thank you for your gracious offer of the throne room in the Capitol. It is fitting and dignified that the same roof which shelters the lawmakers shall also lend its aid to the Red Cross workers devoting their time to the relief of our brave men on

the battlefields. We have already outgrown our present quarters and will be ready to move at your earliest possible convenience.

"We would greatly appreciate a visit from you and if you will kindly let me know I will be glad to introduce you to our workers."

The throne room was prepared for the use of the Red Cross by A. Richley, inspector in the Department of Public Works. A wainscoting along the side was hung with white and blue bunting with small flags at intervals, a Red Cross banner of official dimensions being placed above the door. An office in the building was also made ready. "The gilded throne, from which Kalakaua ruled in state, was moved out. The bright crimson carpets were taken up, so that the floor might be scrubbed daily. The pictures of the kings and queens of Hawaii were shrouded over with white cheese cloth and even the glittering chandeliers were covered. Long white tables were placed in the throne room."

The Kilohana rooms were retained for the cutting and sewing of garments, but the supplies for surgical dressing work were moved at once to the capitol, Mrs. Holmes taking charge, with Mrs. Whitney as her assistant.

## CHAPTER VII

### THE RED CROSS AT HOME

#### HONOLULU, HAWAII, CHAPTER

IN September, 1917, the War Relief Committee became a chapter of the American National Red Cross under a charter granted by the national organization. The development of sentiment in favor of this action extended over a long period. At the time the War Relief Committee was organized in 1914, there existed in the community considerable feeling adverse to the Red Cross. It was said, at the first meeting of the Committee, that this may have been due to some misunderstanding between the Hawaiian Red Cross Society (organized in 1907, but which had practically ceased by 1914) and the national society in Washington. Some people also felt that the real purpose of the Red Cross had been well nigh lost in a labyrinth of red tape. The War Relief Committee was therefore constrained to state in its first announcement that its work was "not a Red Cross matter."

Nevertheless, the Committee was from an early date a sort of unofficial local representative of the American Red Cross. It forwarded to that body funds which were contributed specifically for that purpose; and some of the funds for general relief were forwarded through the Red Cross—amounts voted for Armenia and Poland seem to have been regularly sent in that way. By 1917 the earlier feeling against the Red Cross had been greatly modified. The entrance of the United States into the war and the reorganization of the national society, placing it on a war basis, suggested the advisability of some closer affiliation with that body. At a meeting of the War Relief Committee on May 22 it was voted that thereafter all funds be transmitted to the American Red Cross to be distributed at the discretion of that organization. In the latter part of June a meeting of the Committee was held for the purpose of considering the formation of a chapter of the American Red Cross which would absorb the

War Relief Committee as well as the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee and other organizations working for the relief of sufferers from the war; but after discussion it was resolved "that it is the view of the War Relief Committee that it does not believe it best to take the initiative in the formation of a Red Cross chapter at this time."

After the reorganization of the War Relief Committee (as described in the last chapter), the new executive secretary, A. L. Castle, made a tour of the other islands, and upon his return expressed the opinion that it would be easier to collect money for the organization if it were either a chapter or an auxiliary of the American Red Cross; he felt that an auxiliary was all that was required; in that the organization was not so formal and the over-head expense would be less. On his recommendation it was voted, July 19, to apply to Washington for permission to become an auxiliary of the American Red Cross. On July 28 wireless notification was received that the application had been approved. "This gives the committee official status," Mr. Castle explained, "and we can now go ahead on a financial and membership campaign." In September a letter was received stating that a charter for the Honolulu, Hawaii, Chapter of the American National Red Cross, to have for its jurisdiction the island of Oahu, had been granted to the committee; and, though the petition to organize as an auxiliary had been forwarded, it was decided, after some discussion, that the charter be accepted and the funds and obligations of the committee turned over to the new chapter.

On September 12 the War Relief Committee adjourned as such and immediately reorganized as the Honolulu, Hawaii, Chapter of the American Red Cross. The officers elected were: E. D. Tenney, chairman; Hon. G. R. Carter, vice chairman; C. H. Cooke, treasurer; and A. L. Castle, secretary and executive officer. An executive committee of ten was created, composed of the officers together with Consul General Rokuro Moroi, C. K. Ai, F. C. Atherton, W. R. Farrington, C. R. Hemenway, and James Wakefield. Mr. Castle was instructed to go ahead and organize the work on Oahu.





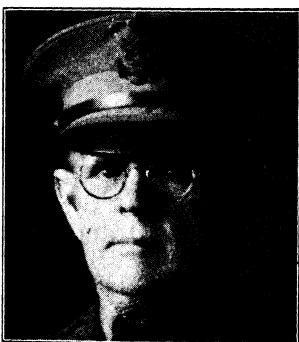
G. R. Carter  
Chairman



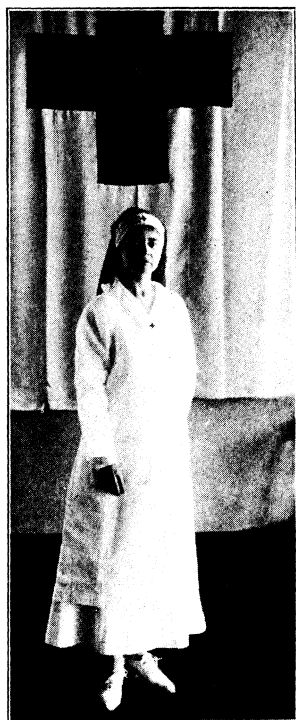
E. D. Tenney  
Chairman



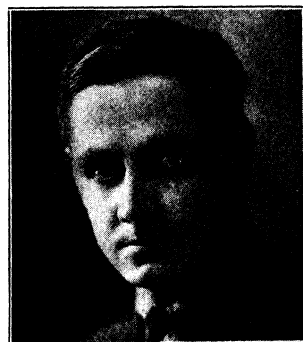
A. L. Castle  
Field Director



G. P. Wilder  
Associate Field Director



Miss Beatrice Castle  
Supervisor of Women's Work



Geo. I. Brown  
Associate Field Director

# A GROUP OF RED CROSS EXECUTIVES

(Mr. Carter appears in his overseas uniform)



PRESENTATION OF RED CROSS FLAG MADE BY QUEEN LILIUOKALANI

Col. C. P. Iaukea is holding the flag while Governor Pinkham delivers the presentation address

The change of organization was at once reported to the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee by Mr. Castle, who explained that at the time when the latter committee voted to amalgamate with the War Relief Committee, that committee had expected to become an auxiliary of the National Red Cross and had made all plans to that end. But when the charter arrived, it was found that the men's organization had been made a chapter, the name given at Washington being the Honolulu, Hawaii, Chapter. This gave them a much wider scope, he stated, adding that the women could either organize as an auxiliary under the Honolulu Chapter or as an auxiliary at large under Washington.

It was decided that an auxiliary should be formed under the local chapter, the women's organization to be known as the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Auxiliary to the Honolulu, Hawaii, Chapter; the officers and form of management to be unchanged; and the purpose, as stated, to be "to continue the making of hospital supplies and surgical dressings." Mr. Castle then advised the women's committee to apply for permission to form an auxiliary with the names of the five officers and the other members. This affiliation with the national Red Cross organization was made doubly necessary by the fact that the war relief clearing house to which all shipments had been made had been discontinued and all war relief work was then under the Red Cross.

On September 14, 1917, the Red Cross flag, a gift to the chapter from Queen Liliuokalani, was raised above the capitol—the first time in history that such a flag had been displayed on any building in Hawaii other than the military hospital. On behalf of the former queen, Governor Pinkham presented the flag to the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Auxiliary and the Red Cross workers of the territory, the ceremony being held on the mauka steps of the building in the presence of a large group of those most interested in the work.

"We are gathered to receive the queen's gift of the emblem of universal humanity," the governor stated, and Colonel Curtis P. Iaukea, secretary to the Queen, handed the flag to Mrs.

Damon who received it on behalf of her co-workers in order that, as her majesty had written, everyone might know that "beneath its folds, in the throne room of Iolani Palace, sit a group of silent workers giving of their time and untiring effort in work of alleviation and mercy."

"With the words she has personally caused to be recorded, I, in her behalf, present you with the banner of the Red Cross," Governor Pinkham said, "which you are to place high above the capitol, that all may recognize the place of your merciful and patriotic labors, and the deep heartfelt sympathy and practical assistance of Her Majesty, Queen Liliuokalani."

"It is a great honor to receive this flag on behalf of the Allied War Relief Auxiliary and the Red Cross workers of Hawaii," Mrs. Damon responded. "We wish to thank you, Governor Pinkham, for letting it be displayed on the executive building as a symbol of loyalty and service to the cause of America."

"With the light of life at times almost extinguished by the infirmities of old age, the heart and thoughtfulness of Her Majesty is an example worthy of note and public recognition," the governor wrote to President Wilson.

In October, news came from Washington that the insular and foreign bureau of the Red Cross planned to coordinate its far-flung efforts. A division, to be known as the Fourteenth, was to be made with Otis H. Cutler, New York business man, as manager, and a world-wide campaign to organize the thousands of Americans living outside the United States proper was shortly to be inaugurated. Under the new affiliation the Honolulu chapter communicated directly with Washington instead of with California chapter headquarters in San Francisco as had been the custom, though, in order to save time, supplies continued to be received from the coast.

F. N. Doubleday of New York, who, with Mrs. Doubleday, was visiting in the islands toward the last of December, suggested that the Honolulu chapter take up the work of organizing the islands of the Pacific, even as far south as Australia and New Zealand, and also that the *Red Cross Magazine* be placed

on ships touching this port. Hon. G. R. Carter was selected to take up the work of organizing the Americans scattered about the Pacific, but it was subsequently decided not to carry out this plan.

At the first of December the jurisdiction of the Honolulu chapter was extended by national headquarters to include Maui and Kauai and the organizations on those islands were taken in as auxiliaries. In view of this change in jurisdiction, it was decided to increase the executive committee of the chapter by the addition of two representatives from each of the three auxiliaries. Plans were made for a Christmas membership drive, which was pushed with special vigor by the two outer auxiliaries, and increased the membership of the chapter to approximately 33,500, of which number Oahu had 18,200, Maui, 11,500, and Kauai, 3,800.

December 31 closed a period of purposeful work and wide-spreading results. Much of the credit for what had been accomplished was due to A. L. Castle, the secretary and executive officer of the chapter, who had practically devoted his entire time to furthering the interests of the American Red Cross. "His work as chief executive officer of the Territorial Food Commission was given up as soon as it demanded more time than he had to spare from Red Cross activities, and on other occasions other duties have also been laid aside for the organization in which his greater interest lay."

The chapter had three auxiliaries—the Hawaiian Allied War Relief auxiliary, with Miss Castle as chairman; the Maui auxiliary with Mrs. F. F. Baldwin as chairman; and the Lihue auxiliary, then in process of reorganization as the Kauai auxiliary, with Charles A. Rice as chairman. Mrs. C. A. Rice had charge of the Lihue section and Mrs. E. A. Knudsen of the Western Kauai section.

The work of the chapter had been separated into departments. The administration department included the treasurer and secretary, with work connected with contributions, memberships, accounting, correspondence, and the sale of Red Cross insignia. All accounts, both chapter and auxiliary, were audited monthly and reports were rendered to Washington where, eventu-

ally, they were audited by the War Department. The department of military relief included the making of surgical dressings and hospital garments, and first aid classes, classes of the Navy League, and the shipping and purchasing department. The department of civilian relief was about to be organized and, as a preliminary to the work, a bureau of war records had been established, with Mrs. Robert Elgin at its head. It was the purpose of this bureau to keep a record of every resident of Hawaii who went into active military or naval service. The Junior Red Cross was just being started.

In order to consult with officials at national headquarters in regard to various questions connected with Red Cross work in Hawaii, Executive Secretary A. L. Castle made a visit to Washington in January, 1918. His appointment as field representative of the Fourteenth Division of the American Red Cross for Hawaii and that of Miss Beatrice Castle as supervisor of women's work in the islands were received in Honolulu on February 5.

Headquarters were moved to rooms over the offices of Castle & Cooke, Ltd., and Gerrit P. Wilder was given charge of a magazine department in order that reading matter might be furnished soldiers aboard transports and in the cantonments near San Francisco. Red Cross magazines were placed on all steamers passing through Honolulu en route to or from either the orient or Australia, with the hope that their message would be spread throughout the Pacific.

Toward the last of February a series of two addresses on Red Cross work was planned for the older pupils of the public schools at the Library of Hawaii; and early in March the local organization undertook to forward phonograph records for the use of the boys "over there", an appeal having been received from Major Perkins, head of the Red Cross work abroad.

#### HILO, HAWAII, CHAPTER

The pioneer Red Cross chapter in the territory was organized at Hilo soon after the United States entered the war. The initial meeting for the purpose of considering the establishment

of a chapter was held in that city on May 2, 1917, and by unanimous vote of those present it was decided to apply for a charter as a chapter of the American Red Cross. Through the courtesy of C. Brewer & Company, who donated the use of the entire second floor of the Volcano Block, actual Red Cross work was begun on June 4, 1917. The charter applied for was granted by national headquarters on June 20, designating the chapter as the Hilo, Hawaii, Chapter, with jurisdiction over the entire island of Hawaii. The first officers of the chapter were Rev. J. Knox Bodell, chairman; Dr. A. T. Roll, vice chairman; Mrs. E. H. Moses, secretary; Mrs. H. B. Mariner, assistant secretary; H. A. Truslow, treasurer. Miss Ivy Richardson was director of women's work. In the beginning the Hilo chapter was subordinate to the Pacific Division of the American Red Cross, but after the first of November, 1917, was under the newly created Fourteenth (Insular and Foreign) Division.

At the close of 1917 the chapter had about 1,400 members. In January and February a membership campaign was carried on which added more than 9,500 names to the roll. Hon. G. R. Carter, vice chairman of the Honolulu chapter, assisted in the drive. Mr. Carter also informally discussed with the Hilo leaders the proposition of consolidating all Red Cross work in the territory into one big chapter, a plan which had the approval of national and division headquarters. A special meeting of the executive committee was held on February 16 and after considerable discussion it was decided by unanimous vote to surrender the charter of the Hilo chapter and become a branch of the proposed Hawaiian Chapter, subject to the approval of the members at large. A meeting of the chapter on February 28, at which A. L. Castle, field representative of the 14th Division for the Hawaiian Islands, was present, approved the decision of the executive committee and paved the way for the formation of the Hawaiian Chapter.

#### HAWAIIAN CHAPTER

In March, 1918, all Red Cross work in the territory was united and coordinated by the formation of the Hawaiian Chap-

ter of the American National Red Cross through a merger of the Honolulu and Hilo chapters. This project had been under consideration for some time and had been taken up with national headquarters by Mr. Castle during his visit to Washington. At a meeting on March 15 the Honolulu chapter disorganized as such and immediately reorganized as the Honolulu Branch of the Hawaiian Chapter.

The Hawaiian Chapter was formally organized on March 16, at which time there were present J. A. Rath and G. P. Wilder (proxy), representing the Honolulu organization; Rev. J. Knox Bodel, Mrs. E. H. Moses, and Miss Ivy Richardson of the Hilo organization; Mrs. W. F. Dale from Maui; Mrs. F. L. Putman (proxy), Mrs. Philip Rice (proxy) and Mrs. J. K. Farley (proxy), representing Kauai; George R. Carter, Miss Beatrice Castle, supervisor of women's work, and A. L. Castle, field representative.

The permanent officers elected were: Hon. G. R. Carter, chairman; Rev. J. K. Bodel, vice chairman; R. A. Cooke, treasurer; A. L. Castle, secretary and executive officer; H. R. Macfarlane, assistant secretary; H. G. Winkley, assistant treasurer; and R. C. Walker, auditor.

The Hawaiian Chapter had four branches, Honolulu, Hawaii, Maui, and Kauai, the branch headquarters being at Honolulu, Hilo, Kahului, and Lihue, respectively. The governing body of the chapter was an Executive Committee of not to exceed twenty members, composed of the chairman, vice chairman, secretary, and treasurer of the chapter, three representatives from each of the four branches, the field representative of the 14th Division of the national Red Cross for Hawaii (A. L. Castle), the supervisor of women's work (Miss Beatrice Castle), a representative of the United States army, and a representative of the navy.

Miss Castle and Mr. and Mrs. G. P. Wilder were appointed a committee to make rules and regulations for the use of the Red Cross emblem. The school committee which had been appointed in December, 1917, for the Honolulu chapter for the purpose of organizing the Junior Red Cross, and which was composed of H. W. Kinney, superintendent of public instruc-



tion, A. F. Griffiths, and E. C. Webster, was continued as the chapter school committee. A supply department was created, with headquarters at the dry goods department of T. H. Davies & Company, B. H. Clarke being chairman; and the executive officer was authorized to employ such assistants as were needed. The supply department was to have charge of the purchase of all raw materials, their delivery to the various departments, the billing out of the same, and the shipment of all finished articles. The efficient service of this department helped to make possible the splendid work of the women. J. R. Galt was appointed director of civilian relief for the chapter and authorized to organize the work.

The activities of the chapter were segregated into six departments, namely, Women's Work, Military Relief, Civilian Relief, Junior Red Cross, Supply, and Administration. As the work developed, there were changes in the arrangement of the departments and there were some new or miscellaneous forms of endeavor which assumed considerable local importance. The work of the several departments will be described in detail farther along.

The ministers of the city were enlisted in aid of the Red Cross movement, arrangements to use the subject as an educational feature in the churches being perfected at a meeting held at headquarters on April 11. The first presentation was given at Central Union church by J. R. Galt, who spoke on civilian relief, and A. L. Castle, who gave an address on the aims and objects of the Red Cross. Through a public speaking program and the use of Red Cross films a campaign of education was also fostered in the schools, working units, and army camps.

Arrangements were made whereby the Hawaiian Chapter could receive communications from persons living in the islands to be sent to relatives in Germany, a system perfected by the Red Cross with the sanction of the United States government. Mrs. F. A. Schaefer, Jr., had charge of this work. By the last of August, 1918, sixteen letters had gone from Hawaii to Germany—all sent through the agency of the Red Cross. The writers were obliged to get signed affidavits from American citi-

zens who were willing to vouch for their trustworthiness; the letters were then copied at the local office, the original being put on file in Hawaii, and the copy sent to the bureau of communications at Washington. There it was put through a rigid examination, expurgated, and otherwise altered as was thought best, and forwarded to Germany via Switzerland or some neutral country.

In April, 1918, through army orders, A. L. Castle was made field director of the Red Cross for Hawaii, being given the status of an army officer, subject to the authority of the commander of the Hawaiian Department. It thus became his duty to cooperate with the army and navy at all times and, on behalf of the Red Cross, to render such aid to these services as was requested. This appointment was made in anticipation of the calling of the Hawaiian National Guard and draft contingents into federal service, so that Red Cross work in the army camps and posts might be put into operation promptly and efficiently under the Field Service Department, which was directed from Washington.

Owing to his departure for Red Cross work abroad, Mr. Carter resigned as chairman of the Hawaiian Chapter on September 14, 1918, and E. D. Tenney was elected in his place. The resignation of J. R. Galt, who had been called into service as a reserve officer in the army, as chairman of civilian relief was accepted and W. L. Whitney was appointed his successor. H. R. Macfarlane took Mr. Castle's place as secretary and executive officer and was given the duty of investigating the need, if any existed, for the establishment of a Red Cross Motor Corps within the territory. Mrs. F. F. Hedemann was made director of the Red Cross Shop.

At the first annual meeting of the chapter, held at the Chamber of Commerce rooms on November 18, 1918, the nomination and election of three members from each branch to serve on the executive committee for the year ending June 3, 1919, resulted in the selection of Mrs. F. F. Baldwin, Mrs. Harold Rice, and Mrs. H. D. Sloggett to represent the Maui branch; H. L. Ross, A. S. Le B. Gurney, and H. A. Truslow

for Hawaii; W. D. McBryde, Mrs. C. A. Rice, and Mrs. William Danford for Kauai; and J. A. Rath, James Wakefield, and W. L. Whitney for Oahu; Lieutenant William Todd was to represent the navy. Reports were presented by H. G. Winkley, assistant treasurer; by Miss Castle for the department of women's work; W. L. Whitney for the department of civilian relief; Mrs. A. Lewis, Jr., for the Junior Red Cross; Mrs. G. P. Wilder for the department of instruction; and B. H. Clarke for the department of supplies and shipping. Hawaii, Kauai, Maui, and Honolulu branches also reported on their work.

On November 23, at a meeting of the executive committee, the election of Hawaiian Chapter officers for the year ending June 30, 1919, was held, E. D. Tenney being made chairman, H. L. Ross, vice chairman; R. A. Cooke, treasurer; H. G. Winkley, assistant treasurer; H. R. Macfarlane, executive secretary; R. C. Walker, auditor; Mrs. G. P. Wilder, director of instruction classes, and W. L. Whitney, chairman of civilian relief.

Otis H. Cutler, manager of the Insular and Foreign Division, paid a glowing tribute to the record of the Hawaiian Chapter in a letter to Executive Secretary H. R. Macfarlane received on December 31:

"The reports and documents contained in your letter of November 20 have arrived and have been read with the greatest satisfaction and pride. They constitute an excellent statement of splendid service to the Red Cross and to our country. The Hawaiian Chapter from the beginning has been an inspiration to all of us at divisional headquarters. It has been a delight to see your ready response to every call and your pride in being equal to every emergency. The Hawaiian Chapter workers, I am sure, must take peculiar satisfaction in reviewing the record of their activities as presented in the reports. We have all received our reward for our labors in the triumph of the great cause of humanity and justice. The coming months and years will bring new problems, both to our country and to the Red Cross, but after the showing for the

past two years, we can face the future with confidence. I trust that the Hawaiian Chapter will have a notable future as well as an inspiring past."

In 1919 the work of the Red Cross in Hawaii was largely concerned with the "flu" epidemic, which reached its height in the islands in the spring of that year, and with the Siberian enterprise, in which there was much local interest due to the large number of island people in service on that field. During 1919 and 1920 the activities of the Hawaiian Chapter and its branches were gradually adjusted to a peace basis.

#### DEPARTMENT OF WOMEN'S WORK

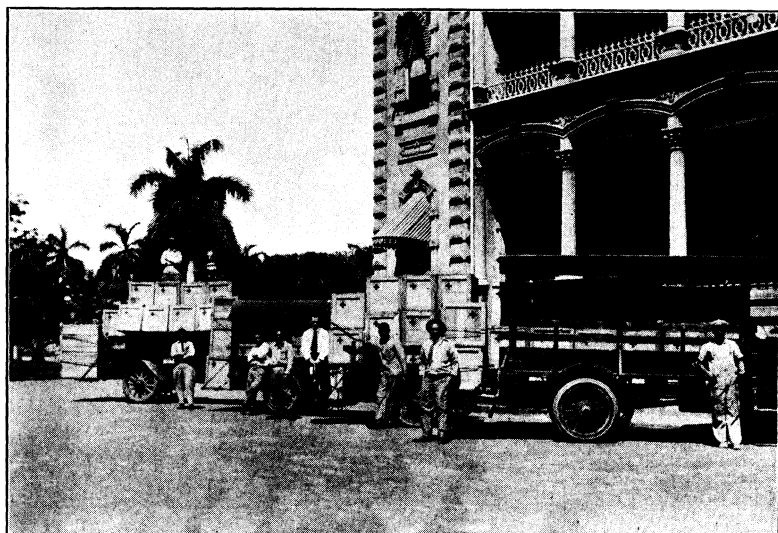
After the organization of the Honolulu, Hawaii, Chapter of the Red Cross, the women's work on Oahu was carried on for some months under the name of the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Auxiliary; in February, 1918, the auxiliary was taken into the Chapter as the Department of Women's Work, but this did not involve any change in the general plan of operation. The October (1917) meeting of the auxiliary showed that expenditures for the previous month had been \$1,729.58. From that time on, the Honolulu, Hawaii, Chapter financed the work.

The first of November the officers and men of the U. S. S. *Carl Schurz*, formerly the German gunboat *Geier*, were given 270 suits of underwear, 78 sweaters, 65 pairs of socks, 89 pairs of wristlets, and 19 helmets. At the same time Mrs. J. F. G. Stokes had charge of a Christmas box, including a huge pot of poi, which was to be sent to the boys of the U. S. S. *St. Louis*.

After November 7, 1917, women in the surgical dressings department at the Capitol were to appear in Red Cross head-dress. Miss Julia Niemeyer, who had cut nearly all the bandages for the committee since November, 1916, turning out at least 1,000 in her hour and a half of work each day, was made a member of the emergency unit of Red Cross



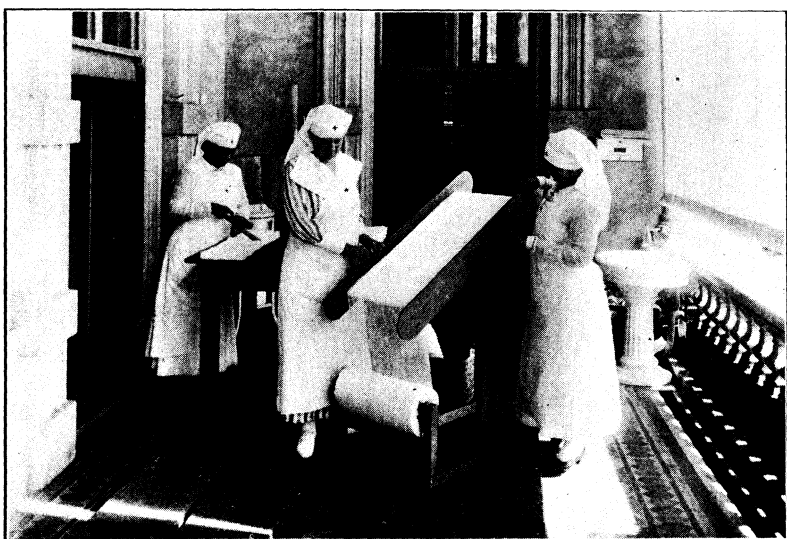
HEADQUARTERS OF HOSPITAL SUPPLY DEPARTMENT  
Kilohana Art League Building



SIXTY CASES OF RED CROSS SUPPLIES SHIPPED ON THE  
"SACHEM," MAY 2, 1918



PACKING ROOM OF HOSPITAL SUPPLY DEPARTMENT  
Kilohana Art League Building



FOLDING GAUZE PREPARATORY TO CUTTING SURGICAL  
DRESSINGS  
Lanai of Capitol Building

nurses formed in Hawaii to await the call to active service and her methods were studied by several other women in order that they might be prepared to do this work.

In response to an urgent cable from Miss Castle, then in the east, fourteen cases of surgical dressings were forwarded about the middle of November and, a few days later, when an appeal was received from Miss Wilhelmina Tenney, in canteen service abroad, another fourteen cases were shipped.

Early in December news came to Hawaii that Miss Castle had been appointed by national headquarters as special representative in the islands and would work in connection with Mr. Cutler, head of the new insular and foreign division, which included the Honolulu, Hawaii, Chapter. Her work as special representative would be to keep headquarters in touch with the work in Hawaii.

"More workers are needed in Honolulu," Miss Castle said on her return the latter part of the month, and, in resuming the chairmanship of the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Auxiliary, she brought the thanks of Clyde Pratt, former head of the war relief clearing house through which surgical dressings from Hawaii had been sent abroad, for the splendid work done by the women of Hawaii.

Maui and Kauai were added to the local chapter, as auxiliaries, according to news received by Mr. Castle on December 3. A few days later, Mrs. W. L. Whitney, secretary of the Hawaii Chapter of the Women's Section of the Navy League, reported that at a meeting on December 6, 1917, the members of that organization had decided to join their efforts and tender their membership to the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Auxiliary as it seemed a division of labor to continue two such similar organizations when the same women were doing the same work for both. The offer was accepted, Mr. Castle stating that the League classes should be conducted as they had been in the past, at least until after his return from a contemplated visit to Washington.

## THE NAVY LEAGUE

The Hawaii Chapter of the Women's Section of the Navy League was organized in Honolulu in 1915 and 1916 with a membership of more than one thousand, from all parts of the territory, as part of the preparedness movement which spread over the country in those years. Just after the United States broke off diplomatic relations with Germany, at the beginning of February, 1917, the Navy League held a meeting in the old Opera House in Honolulu to discuss preparedness plans, navy support, and the part that patriotic women could play in the war. Mrs. Walter F. Dillingham, president of the Hawaii Chapter, was chairman of the meeting, which was addressed by Rear Admiral W. H. Brownson, retired; Mrs. A. J. George, director of the Security League, and Dr. Aurelia H. Reinhardt, president of Mills College. Cards were distributed for the members to sign, indicating what subjects, such as knitting, preparation of surgical dressings, cooking, clerking, etc., they were prepared in or wished to learn at classes which were to be established at the headquarters of the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee.

Following this meeting, about a dozen classes in Red Cross first aid and in elementary hygiene and home care of the sick were formed under the leadership of Mrs. Gerrit P. Wilder. The classes were conducted in accordance with Red Cross regulations, the instruction in Red Cross first aid being given by physicians who volunteered their services—Colonel R. G. Ebert, U. S. A., and Drs. E. D. Kilbourne, Charles Adams, W. C. Hobdy, Grover Batten, and J. R. Judd. The classes in elementary hygiene and home care of the sick were taught by Mrs. F. P. Killion and Miss Janet Dewar. A class in advanced first aid was conducted by Dr. Charles Adams, the members being women who had received certificates at a Red Cross class organized early in 1915 by Mrs. Wilder. Classes were also organized in semaphore and signal corps work, telegraphy, knitting, poultry raising, and intensive gardening.



By December 1, 1917, 250 women had received instruction in first aid and 178 of these had successfully passed their examinations. The class in advanced first aid had contained eleven students, all of whom had passed the course and had received bronze medals from Washington. There had been four classes in elementary hygiene with a combined membership of sixty-nine, of whom twenty-nine had been certificated and twenty were still studying. Miss Nellie L. Moore, chairman of the wireless telegraphy classes, reported that three classes had been organized and that the first, a class of eleven, had finished and one member had taken the examination. Two classes in intensive gardening and poultry raising, with Mrs. Richard Ivers as chairman, had done excellent work through the College of Hawaii, having a membership of about fifty. Two classes of nineteen members each in semaphore and signal corps work, under the chairmanship of Miss Mary K. Brown—one held in April and one in June under Corporal Blackwood of Fort DeRussy—had done excellent work and turned out one expert, Miss Lani Hutchinson. During this period Mrs. H. R. Macfarlane was chairman of classes in motor mechanics for which Mrs. E. F. Bishop and Mrs. G. R. Carter loaned the use of garages and grounds. Mrs. King was directress of knitting classes that had spread all over the city.

On the whole, it was stated at the time the Navy League chapter merged into the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Auxiliary, the workers were well satisfied with results attained by the League, but it was expected from that time on that more would be accomplished than ever before.

A review of the work of the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Auxiliary to the end of 1917 said that credit was "due to a loyal devoted band of constant workers and to their sincere and earnest leaders. Miss Beatrice Castle, the chairman of the auxiliary, started the work which has grown to such large proportions. During Miss Castle's absence in the east Mrs. Henry Damon, as acting executive officer, kept up a steady and constant growth in the units in Honolulu and the rest of Oahu. Mrs. Damon was indefatigable in her interest and

enthusiasm, and her example was contagious to all those who worked with her.

"Mrs. William Whitney has been largely responsible for the excellent work in surgical dressings turned out from the Throne Room and has given her mornings and two afternoons a week to this service. Among those who have helped her largely are Mrs. George Potter and Mrs. Richard Ivers. The smoothness and effectiveness of the shipping department is due to James Wakefield, who has been at the service of the auxiliary at all times for the shipping of cases and for many other duties.

"There are a great number of others who deserve special mention for good work accomplished for the Red Cross, among them Mrs. F. F. Baldwin of Maui, and Mrs. Charles Rice and Mrs. Eric Knudsen of Kauai, as heads of the remaining auxiliaries."

The total number and Custom House value of cases shipped up to the end of 1917 were: Hawaiian Allied War Relief Auxiliary, 236 cases, \$70,420.54; Maui Auxiliary, 20 cases, \$3,052.45; Kauai Auxiliary, 10 cases, \$3,023.11; Total, 266 cases, value \$76,496.10. This included the period December 27, 1916, to December 27, 1927. School children were making the packing cases free of charge.

In January, 1918, Maui was leading all other Red Cross auxiliaries of the territory in the amount of work done in proportion to members enrolled. Though the Valley Island had a small auxiliary and its members did not meet every day, during the month it shipped sixteen cases containing 14,972 articles. It spent \$973.40 for wool used in making knitted garments and \$3,566.77 for all other supplies.

With the greater demand for dressings, the throne room had been opened for work three days weekly instead of two, women being busy there on Tuesdays, Wednesdays, and Fridays from 7:30 o'clock in the morning to 4:30 in the afternoon.

Plans were made for supplying sweaters and warm undergarments to troops called from Hawaii, and arrangements were completed whereby the local chapter would receive a monthly supply of 500 pounds of sweater wool. The Outdoor Circle, sharing the general spirit, definitely set its seal of disapproval on the "pig knitter," the woman who made dainty garments for herself or for some non-fighter from wool needed for the fighting forces.

Early in March, an appeal came direct to Honolulu from the French hospitals, urging the chapter to hurry forward more and more surgical dressings and hospital pajamas. The work-rooms were opened five days a week from 8:15 a. m. to 4:30 p. m., and a call for more helpers—"the work of one woman for a few hours may save a life in France in a few weeks"—was sent out. By the middle of the month, there was an average attendance of 700 women who finished 20,000 pieces weekly.

News had come to Miss Castle, in a letter from Miss Sara Nieman, director of women's work of the Fourteenth Division, that Hawaii's supplies had proved so satisfactory that special arrangements had been made by the distributing heads in New York to rush them to the French hospitals as soon as received; and Gertrude Austin, chief of the surgical dressings service for the American Red Cross in Paris, wrote: "Your three cases have just been opened and we want to thank you for your help which comes such a distance. We are wildly excited here over the first large shipment of Standard Dressings, which will do away with so much tedious sorting. You can't realize what this news has meant to us for we have been awaiting it so anxiously. Go ahead and send us plenty more."

While the great German drive was in progress in the spring of 1918, the supervisor of women's work issued an earnest appeal to the women of Honolulu: "The most terrific battle in history is now being fought on the Western front, which means untold suffering and agony. The Red Cross is the one great organization that can help and soften the effects of this

struggle by rushing supplies faster than ever to France. The Surgical Dressings Department of the Red Cross at the Throne Room is open daily from 8:30 to 4:30—yet in spite of the appalling drive in Europe the average attendance has fallen off. Remember that the Red Cross is fighting to win the war behind our lines—and the patriotism and help of every woman in this community is more needed than ever before. So for the sake of America and her Allies I appeal to all not to let this work slacken—but rather to carry it on with renewed energy through this world crisis.”

A hundred and thirty women reported at the Capitol that day, the largest number ever noted there.

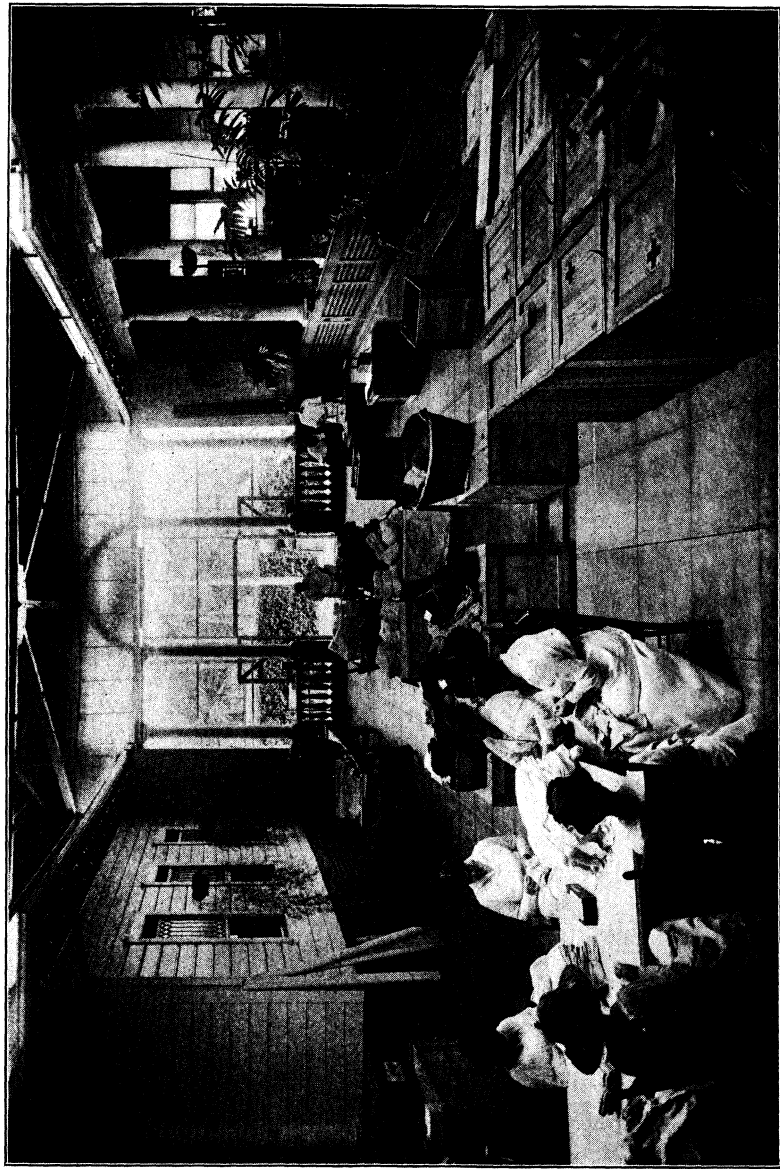
On April 2, in accordance with instructions from Washington, the chapter furnished the Hawaiian Department of the army with 1,000 comfort bags, 300 sweaters, 300 pairs of socks, 100 helmets, 100 pairs of wristlets, and 100 mufflers, which were issued by the department quartermaster exactly as though they were regular army equipment.

When, for a while, the stores were entirely out of steel knitting needles, Catton Neill & Company manufactured and donated over a thousand sets. On Kauai, a bandage cutting machine had been invented by W. E. Kopke, chemist of the Makee Sugar Company, which enabled the Kealia Unit to increase its output of bandages 100 per cent daily; blueprints had been made by the inventor and the device was to be offered for a test by other units before being called to the attention of officials at Washington.

At the last of May, with the imminence of the mobilization of the National Guard and the Hawaiian draft quota, the Red Cross repeated its call for more socks and sweaters, the first duty of the local organization being, as Mr. Castle said, “the care of the local army, the regulars, the National Guard, and the draft.” No sweaters or socks were to be sent away until those needs were filled. Distribution of free wool was commenced that month and directions for its disposal were given to the head of each unit.



RED CROSS WORKERS IN THRONE ROOM OF CAPITOL  
Surgical Dressings Department



PACKING ROOM OF HOSPITAL SUPPLY, KNITTING, AND REFUGEE GARMENTS DEPARTMENT OF THE RED CROSS

University Club Building

During the six months from January 1 to June 30, 1918, the Hawaiian chapter shipped 475 cases valued at \$123,322.90 and having a combined weight of 90,609 pounds. It paid \$1,772.15 in railroad freight and \$273.06 in insurance. At headquarters in Washington it had become known as the "Blue Ribbon Chapter" or the "Banner Red Cross Chapter" in spite of the fact that it was less than a year old. During the spring Miss Castle made an inspection tour over the territory and found that everywhere—in the principal towns, on the plantations, in country districts—profound interest was shown in the Red Cross.

"In the Territory of Hawaii the spirit of the Red Cross has touched all nationalities. The Hawaiian chapter, under the jurisdiction of the 14th Division, works not only for the soldiers 'over there' but for a closer understanding of all peoples."

Early in July two urgent calls directed to the Hawaiian chapter from national headquarters made it even more apparent that additional quarters for the workers were needed at once. As the Kilohana rooms, which were being used by the wool and hospital departments were, by that time, entirely inadequate, the territorial director asked for the donation of a building or residence. "Rush 5,000 comfort kits earliest possible date," the first message read; and the second, "Ship earliest possible 5,000 sweaters, 10,000 pairs socks, 500 wristlets, 2,000 gray helmets." Hawaii, taking on the double duty of providing for all enlisted men leaving the territory and of meeting these latest calls from Washington, prepared to fill the orders. The comfort kits were completed in record time. Many persons who could not personally assist in the work donated their dollars. Mrs. A. Berg was in actual charge and by July 12, 5,117 kits were packed ready for shipment.

In the fall of 1918, with Mr. Castle's return from a trip to Washington, came the important announcement that, in the future, all work done by the Hawaiian chapter would probably go to Siberia. He had been appointed field representative of

the Fourteenth Division for Hawaii and the Far East and expected to go to Siberia to assist in organization there. It was certain that Hawaii would receive her due recognition, Mr. Castle asserted in an address to the women of the hospital supply division, as the Red Cross work done by the local chapter amounted to three times as much as that of the remainder of the Fourteenth Division. "The Japanese Chapter ranks second but so great is the work accomplished here that Hawaii leads by far all chapters, domestic and foreign, in the Pacific Ocean. In proportion to its size, the work of the chapter is greater than any in the United States. For this reason Mr. Cutler has given carte blanche to Hawaii to go ahead as it thinks best."

Many offers of the use of halls and of rooms in homes were made to the chapter by local persons and organizations, but when, on July 12, the boards of the University and Pacific Clubs voted to recommend joint housing in order that the Red Cross might use the University Club building at Hotel and Miller streets, the offer was accepted with gratitude. The surgical dressings division remained in the throne room and the hospital supply department moved from its cramped quarters at the Kilohana building to the University Club, the first relay of supplies arriving on August 7. The dining room was arranged for a cutting, sewing, folding, and storeroom and a place for hospital supplies; the library was used as a knitting department; the ladies' parlor as an office and main entrance; and the cement court as a packing room.

Miss Castle had sent out a call for knitters to fill the order from the war department and on August 7 another cable was received from Washington asking the immediate production of the largest possible supply of knitted sweaters and socks. "Will the women of Hawaii bend all effort toward these lines for the next month, turning in completed garments as rapidly as possible to the new headquarters of the supply department at the University Club?" Miss Castle asked. "Wool will be supplied to those wishing to knit." New sweater directions



were given the workers and 5,000 pounds of sweater wool soon arrived to reinforce the somewhat depleted supply.

Toward the last of September the hospital supply department of the chapter filled a special order for 12,000 property bags for soldiers. This was done, without interfering with the regular work, by a group of volunteers under Mrs. J. F. G. Stokes of the folding department and Mrs. F. E. Steere of the electric cutting department. The initial shipment to Siberia was made on September 14, comprising 444,430 surgical dressings, 18,899 hospital garments and supplies, 8,683 knitted articles, 442 baby layettes, and 286 pieces of warm clothing.

On the first of November, 1918, a call was sent out for more women to work in the surgical dressings room as attendance there had lagged; but the refugee department was turning out 500 layettes a month and hoping, with the cooperation of the cutting section of the supply department, to turn out 800. More sewing units were also needed and women were urged to form new ones to meet the constant demand. "Carrying on unflinching at home is part of the great work of the war. May every woman feel the opportunity and the privilege of speeding the spirit of the Red Cross and bringing cheer and comfort to those in need."

A letter from Field Representative Castle, who was in Siberia, gave notice that all surgical dressings must be sterilized before they were packed and shipped, and Miss Castle was authorized to have a suitable building erected and to install therein a sterilization plant.

On November 14, after the signing of the armistice, orders were received by the chapter to cease the production of surgical dressings, but the department in the throne room was not closed until such materials as were already cut were made up for use, either in the hospitals of Hawaii or for shipments as directed. On November 23, the surgical dressings department was closed to all workers, the cut materials having been completely made up.

"The Red Cross extends deepest thanks and appreciation to the women who have so faithfully worked in this depart-

ment," Miss Castle said, "making it possible to send aid to France, Belgium and Italy during the first months of the war and later to Siberia. The spirit of sacrifice behind the lines has helped towards the final victory."

"It is hoped and urgently requested that the women who have worked so faithfully making the surgical dressings department a credit, not only to the Hawaiian chapter, but to our Fourteenth Division, will now turn to the great task of carrying on in other lines. Refugee garments, layettes, hospital supplies, and knitted articles are needed in great quantities. There is still work for all. Suffering and distress must necessarily continue in the world's readjustment and the appeal of the Red Cross rings throughout the nations."

On December 1, 1918, 190 cases went forward to Vladivostok on the steamer *Venezuela* and volunteers were called for to form more units for refugee work. Red Cross work was due to continue in Hawaii as long as there was a call for garments.

A summary of the work of the women's department for 1918 showed that surgical dressings to the number of 2,126,408 had been made; hospital garments and supplies totaled 139,775; articles for soldiers and sailors, 60,027; refugee garments, 7,638; and articles delivered to the department quartermaster at Honolulu, 14,579. The grand total for the year was 2,348,427 articles, contained in 1,137 cases and valued at \$402,550.46.

In January and through the spring of 1919 new and urgent calls came from Siberia for refugee garments and equipment for 1,500 hospital beds for five months. The work was divided among the various islands. Honolulu units which had suspended work during the holidays resumed activity. All members of the Nuuanu unit were asked to attend the meetings which were held at the home of Mrs. Carter on Friday mornings and new members were made welcome. Work opened again on Tuesday evenings at Central Union parish house, and the Sacred Heart unit started on January 8.

A minute stolen here and there by the Kaimuki Red Cross workers resulted, by the middle of February, in another col-

lection of more than a hundred dolls for the Siberian kiddies. Some time before, Mrs. A. F. Clark had asked Mrs. C. F. Merrill to take charge of a doll-making bee, the dolls to be sent to those unfortunate children. John Poole, artist of the *Star-Bulletin*, sketched a suitable child face and from it, through the kindness of Manager W. R. Farrington, a plate was made. From the plate, many outlines of the face were printed on pieces of muslin; these were made into heads, painted, stuffed, and sewed to bodies cut from the same material by Mrs. Merrill with the aid of the Thursday section of Kaimuki Unit No. 1; and a number of volunteers, including girls from the Moiliili Industrial School, outfitted the dolls. Mrs. Clark crocheted a bonnet for each of them.

The record of shipments to Siberia during the first half of 1919 is impressive: 69 cases in January, 58 in February, 89 in March, 32 in April, and 89 in May. Early in June contributions were received for a Red Cross box intended for the hospital at Omsk, where Dr. A. F. Jackson was in charge, a special request having been made for pictorial magazines, candy, and games. One of the last shipments consisted of twelve large packing cases filled with Christmas cheer for more than 300 Red Cross workers and 600 children in Siberia.

How Hawaii's gifts of clothing and other necessities, including toys for the kiddies, were received in Siberia, where they were passed on to refugees, is told by Riley H. Allen, former editor of the *Star-Bulletin*, who was acting secretary of the Siberian Commission of the American Red Cross at Vladivostok, in the following letter, dated December 23, 1918, to Miss Beatrice Castle of the Hawaiian chapter:

"The supplies from Hawaii were among the first to come off the *Venezuela* and were loaded immediately into cars and trucks and sent to the big warehouses. I am sure that you and every one of the patriotic women of Hawaii who have worked so splendidly on these garments and surgical dressings would have been thrilled and intensely pleased by the sight of the *Venezuela's* cargo of relief pouring out of the hold and being handled by Chinese coolies and enemy prisoners in charge of

American guards; the cases heaped tier upon tier into a great pile upon the dock and then flowing rapidly into strings of freight cars for shipment to the Red Cross warehouse, which is near the end of the harbor. Yesterday a group of us Honoluluans, including Dr. Baldwin, H. A. Walker, Henry Beckley, and Rudolph Bukeley, motored around the harbor and I took some photographs of the loaded cars across the bay. Beckley, who is in charge of the warehouse, counted 24 great cars which he figured on handling this morning, and spent a large part of last evening figuring just how fast he could put the Red Cross supplies into shape.

"From the warehouse these supplies will be loaded into the sanitary or relief trains and will then roll westward—some of the cars as far as Omsk, some four thousand miles out toward the Ural mountains.

"I have not yet had a full report on the cases from Honolulu, but saw the invoices last night and understand that all arrived in good order. Every case of supplies does magic out here, where the need is so great, and you may be certain that the rag dolls in case 490 will come out before Christmas and be distributed to the little girls at our refugee stations and elsewhere, who are already expecting the arrival of Santa Claus a la 'Amerikanski.' If you could see the pitiful little dolls which these tiny Russian, Armenian, Galician, Serbian and Montenegrin children made up out of odd bits of cloth and carry tenderly in their thin arms, you would be very glad indeed that Hawaii sent some to the far-away youngsters in Siberia.

"The case of magazines will be taken out on our New Year's train, to the various American army detachments around Vladivostok and up the line. This train will carry the holiday spirit with the distribution of garments and comforts among the American soldiers and will be in charge of Mr. S. T. Short.

"Most of the garments from Hawaii will probably go west on the commission's fifth relief train, which is to leave here in a few days. Dr. Scudder is to take this train as far as Irkutsk and it will then go on to Omsk. From Irkutsk to Omsk, we

are advised, there is a tremendous need of winter garments of all kinds. Recently we had definite estimates of 8,500 people to be given relief in the Manchuria district this side of Irkutsk, but it is possible only to supply about 1,500 at this time. Throughout the winter there will be a tremendous need for knitted garments, underclothes, pajamas—in fact refugee garments of all kinds.

“The warehouse men say that the Hawaiian chapter’s shipments are better handled than any others arriving here. Of course it was long ago recognized that the Hawaiian chapter’s models for bandages, hospital garments and dressings are splendid. What the warehouse men particularly appreciate is the arrival of invoices, bills of lading, etc., in perfect order and with all code numbers, simultaneously with the arrival of the goods. It helps a great deal in prompt handling of the cases.”

C. W. Carson, a prominent resident of Manila, who had been for some time in Red Cross work at Vladivostok, said as he passed through Honolulu on January 17, 1919, “With all the experience I had there, I can truthfully say that the Red Cross supplies shipped to Siberia from Hawaii were the best packed, were in the best shape upon arrival, and were the best invoiced and most business like lot of supplies that ever landed at Vladivostok. One cannot appreciate what this means until he knows the conditions as they were in Siberia during the latter part of last year.”

On April 1, it was announced that all outstanding chapter production work would be completed by the end of May and the secretary was directed to enter into an agreement with the University Club for the rental of the premises from April 1 to June 1 at \$100 per month, expressing appreciation of the club’s generosity in donating them to the department of women’s work for several months past. Miss Castle was authorized to dispose of properties and equipment that might be left on hand. The University Club building was vacated on May 21.

Harriet K. Baldwin, chairman, and Etta W. Slogett, vice-

chairman of the Maui Branch, had written to Secretary Macfarlane on March 28 that Maui would not be able to keep up the Red Cross work. Her people had worked unusually hard during the war, they said, had made a good showing and had sacrificed home duties. Summer was coming and some districts had already sent in word that they must stop. It was believed best, said the officers, that work be discontinued for the time being and suggested that the executive committee of the organization could be kept intact. Maui Branch was requested to complete its proportion of the Siberian allotment before temporarily discontinuing activities; to keep its organization intact; and to appoint an emergency committee to arrange for immediate resumption of work should the chapter be called upon to participate in any further emergency relief. The chapter secretary was directed to communicate with Hawaii and Kauai branches and obtain their views as to suspension. The various branches were authorized to offer for local use supplies made for Red Cross work and to send a report to headquarters of articles delivered.

In August, 1919, General Morton, commander of the Hawaiian Department, requested that the army of knitters be disbanded as knitting for soldiers and sailors was no longer necessary.

In closing the work of the women's department, Miss Castle wrote the following letter of appreciation to those who had assisted during the past three years:

"Now that the production of Red Cross supplies has practically ceased for the present, the Hawaiian Chapter of the American Red Cross wishes to express publicly its appreciation and gratitude to the many women throughout the islands who have given such loyal self-sacrificing service during the war and through the months of post-war activities. They have been unfailing in their response to the call of need.

"The success of the department of women's work is due to the able leadership of its various branches, departments and units; and to each individual worker who has given devoted

service to the making of surgical dressings, garments and knitted articles; to the persons who have generously sent sewing women to work at headquarters; to the members of the Junior Red Cross, who have made thousands of property bags and scrap books; to the boys of the schools, who have made excellent cases for shipment of supplies; to the firm of T. H. Davies & Company, which has supported, advised and helped to an extent that can never be fully expressed; to the governor of Hawaii for the use of the throne room for the surgical dressings department; to the members of the University Club for the use of the club house for the hospital supply and knitting departments; to the Central Union church for the use of the parish house where the layette department was established and formerly for the use of the Kilohana building; to St. Andrew's Cathedral, where the war relief work was originally started; to the cooperation of the Honolulu *Advertiser* and the *Star-Bulletin*, and the very generous assistance of the business men of the islands.

"The department of women's work of the Hawaiian Chapter of the American Red Cross deeply thanks all those who have so ably assisted."

The final report of the Hawaiian chapter for the period of the war, in speaking of the work of the women's department, says that it was "carried on under the remarkably efficient and cheerful leadership of Miss Beatrice Castle, who visited practically every unit in the Territory. On Oahu she was ably assisted by Mrs. W. L. Whitney and Mrs. A. M. Brown in the Surgical Dressings Section; Mrs. James Wakefield, Mrs. George Brown, and Mrs. Richard Cooke, in the Hospital Supply Section; Mrs. Edwin Benner and Mrs. C. B. Gage in the Layette Section; Mrs. W. A. Wall, Mrs. O. E. Wall, and Mrs. J. M. Dowsett in the Knitting Section; and in every section by a host of patriotic women, either individually or as the heads of units."

In recognition of service faithfully performed in behalf of the nation and her men at arms, the following number of cer-

tificates were awarded to Red Cross workers of the Hawaiian chapter:

For working 400 hours.....	305 certificates
For working 800 hours.....	251 certificates
For working 1600 hours.....	30 certificates
For working 2400 hours.....	49 certificates

---

Total.....635 certificates

From December, 1916, to May 24, 1919, inclusive, hospital supplies furnished by Oahu amounted to 180,967; by Hawaii, 23,116; by Maui, 27,150; and by Kauai, 48,891—a total of 280,124. Oahu furnished 1,672,227 surgical dressings; Hawaii, 291,393; Maui, 299,829, and Kauai, 364,573—a total of 2,628,022. Of knitted garments, Oahu sent 34,415; Hawaii, 9,567; Maui, 4,713, and Kauai, 9,546—a total of 58,241. Oahu sent 13,574 refugee garments; Hawaii, 3,821; Maui, 1,177, and Kauai, 1,093—a total of 19,665.

Answering a special call from Siberia, but in order to save time, 8,036 pairs of underclothes for the new Russian army were forwarded through the assistance of the China central committee.

Shipments from the Hawaiian chapter totaled 1,748 cases of a valuation of \$576,862.39, the shipments being given a custom house valuation which ran rather lower than the Red Cross. Of the total value, \$452,077.46 worth was shipped after America's entrance into the war. To the above total, however, should really be added 17 cases shipped in 1916 from the St. Andrew's unit, making a grand total of 1,765 cases valued at \$583,362.39.

#### RED CROSS UNITS

While hundreds of Honolulu women met at the throne room of the Capitol, at the Kilohana Art League rooms, and later at the University Club building to work for the Red Cross, and others were busy in the rooms of chapter headquarters on the several islands, a large part of the accomplishment of the



Hawaiian chapter was due to the organized effort of the members of the individual units. Women met regularly in the towns and country districts of Oahu, Hawaii, Maui, Molokai, and Kauai, raising money for the purchase of supplies and forwarding their completed work to headquarters. Others who lived in districts too isolated to attend meetings worked alone. Miss Castle, who visited the rural districts of the islands during the period, says that nothing so thrilled her as the work which was done where there was not the encouragement of numbers to make light the task. Mrs. Damon said in August, 1917, "I admire their devotion and perseverance, cut off as they are from the facilities and opportunities of the city."

It is impossible to give a complete account of the work of the units in all parts of the territory, due to the fragmentary character of the information now available. During the war years the Red Cross workers were more intent on turning out surgical dressings, hospital garments, sweaters, socks, and the many other articles with which their fingers were busy than they were on making out neat and formal reports or interesting stories for the newspapers. While everything was gathered up in statistical summaries, the details of what each unit did—the names, even, of some of the units—cannot be given. The following notes, therefore, must be taken as illustrative of what was done rather than as a complete account. The final report of the Hawaiian chapter for the war period pays this tribute to the work of the women:

"Nothing has been finer than the patient, untiring, and enthusiastic devotion of the women of this territory in the cause of the Greatest Mother in the world. All nationalities have mingled in the great cause of humanity, and the Territory must have become a better one for this work."

The pioneer unit was the one formed by the guild at St. Andrew's Cathedral. The first work done there was started as early as June of 1916, when the organization voted to make hospital supplies for the French wounded. The story of that early work does not need to be retold. The same enthusiasm

continued throughout the whole period of the war. This guild also furnished some of the most efficient workers of the officers of the American Red Cross. Miss Eva Stevens, a member of this unit, furnished the first models for the work in surgical dressings.

One of the oldest units, that at Kaimuki, started in September, 1916. As well as being one of the oldest it had the reputation of being one of the most efficient. They carried on rummage sales that netted as much as \$2,700. They had a food sale that brought in over \$850. The character of the work turned out appears in one of Miss Castle's reports, "The work from this unit is always perfect, and never needs inspection. What inspection is given it is only a matter of form." The garments made were often used as samples. The members met regularly twice a week and there were always many willing fingers to do the work. A note shows that this unit was still working, making dolls for the Siberian children in 1919.

The *Star-Bulletin* for May 24, 1919, gives the following report of the unit at Central Union Church: "The layette department of the Red Cross began its work on February 1, 1918. It was officially adopted by the women's society of the Central Union Church, which turned over the parish house for a workroom, provided the equipment and paid the salary of the director. Layettes were sent to France and Belgium at first, but after August, 1918, all the finished articles were sent to Siberia. In the year and a half of work, 2469 layettes were packed for shipment, making a total of 76,539 articles. Of these 4938 were cards of safety pins, 5499 garments donated, and 67,102 garments made by the workers. . . . One of the best advertising features which the layette department of the Red Cross had was Johnny, its Belgian baby. Johnny is the property of Mrs. B. H. Nouskajian, a Belgian herself, and is a life-size baby doll. On him the clothes were fitted, and he was exhibited to all visitors. He was also a guest at one of the Ad Club luncheons, and was unanimously elected an honorary member of that organization." A letter from Miss Ruth Benedict, secretary to Dr. Doremus Scudder in Vladi-

vostok, stated that the layettes sent to Russia had been adopted as models for work in other parts of the world. Representatives of the business girls' club of the Y. W. C. A. joined this unit on March 12, 1918, spending from 7 to 9 o'clock on Tuesday evenings.

A children's unit under the leadership of Mrs. E. M. Watson, started during the latter part of 1917 at the Sacred Heart Church, Punahou. The membership ranged in age from 3 to 14, and the work accomplished won very high praise. In March, 1918, a regular Red Cross unit was organized to make hospital garments and five-tailed bandages. Mrs. D. E. Mooney, Mrs. F. Lindeman, and Mrs. C. A. Peacock were heads of the different departments. Sisters of the Sacred Heart Convent are said to have made the best socks turned into the shipping rooms.

Women of the Christian Church were particularly active. In addition to a large list of sundries and the 100 pajama suits completed from May to December, 1917, the women of that unit made 1,308 sweaters during 1918. Mrs. W. R. Foster directed the work from its organization in May, 1917, being replaced during her absence in the summer, by Mrs. Alexander Bell. Members met each Wednesday and kept seven motors going all day long. Mrs. Webster's unit on Beach Walk was a branch.

Methodist Red Cross workers, under the leadership of Mrs. H. J. Ancill, also started work in May, 1917. Three sewing machines were kept busy and in November of the following year, a news report says they were finishing 150 pajamas a month.

On March 12, 1918, the Daughters of Hawaiian Warriors met at the home of Mrs. Walter Macfarlane, where Mrs. Macfarlane, assisted by Mrs. A. P. Taylor, organized a unit to knit for the boys of Hawaii, word having been received that many who had been transferred from Oahu to the mainland had suffered severely from the cold weather. Tentative plans had been made somewhat earlier in the year and Princess Kawananakoa had secured wool on one of her visits to the mainland. By the

last of March the first 500 sweaters were turned over to Colonel R. M. Schofield, depot quartermaster of the Hawaiian Department of the army. The *Advertiser* of April 30, 1918, says:

"The Warriors Knitting units which range from Honolulu into many of the country districts are working constantly and turning out a mass of knitted material. The wool is supplied from purchases made by the society, through contributions of well wishers, and by Mrs. Macfarlane, she personally contributing the major portion of the funds. Most of the work has been done by Hawaiian women, and a large percentage of these are doing their first knitting work. In this way the Daughters of the Warriors' society has developed a large amount of labor that would have lain dormant."

Mrs. Macfarlane and Mrs. Taylor started units among the women of the Mormon Church, both in Honolulu and at Laie, in this being assisted by Elder Miner. Other units were organized in Kalihi and elsewhere. Some had particular names, such as the Warrior Unit, Kaahumanu Unit (under the leadership of Mrs. Amoy), Molohea Unit, Miss Aileen Stanley Unit, Mrs. Guy Rothwell Unit, Sacred Heart Unit, and Mrs. Christian Conradt's Unit of Molokai. At one time there were over 500 women working in these groups. Special mention was accorded them by the War Department.

The Princess Kalaniana'ole headed a unit known as the Iolani Unit, which met on Tuesday and Thursday at the Kapiolani Estate offices. Mrs. J. M. Dowsett was president of the "Hawaiian Knitting Unit," organized March 13, 1918, which during its first year completed 494 sweaters and 59 pairs of socks from wool furnished by the Red Cross. In addition, from wool furnished by the dues of members and by those interested in the work, 132 sets were knitted, each set comprising 1 sweater, 1 muffler, 1 helmet, 1 pair wristlets, and 2 pairs socks.

A "garment making unit," the first of its kind in any private house, was organized by Mrs. H. R. Macfarlane and later met at the home of Mrs. G. R. Carter in Nuuanu valley. Each member

did that share of the general work in which she excelled, with the result that a great deal of work was accomplished. Mrs. A. da C. Pessoa, wife of the Portuguese consul, helped to organize a unit among the Portuguese women which met every Monday in San Antonio Hall. Mrs. William Knott was in charge of a Kaka-ako unit.

Work was done by many of the older girls who were not members of the Junior Red Cross. Mrs. A. L. Andrews helped get the College of Hawaii set to work and it was soon reported that knitting was taking the place of chafing dish parties. At the Normal School, 300 girls used every spare moment in Red Cross work, as did many of the girls at Punahou School and McKinley High School.

So great was the enthusiasm of the women workers, that the men could not fail to catch some of their spirit; and we find newspaper stories headed, "Firemen taught to knit socks for soldiers"; "Chauffeurs will knit but need a teacher"; and even "Penitentiary prisoners may learn to knit." An exhibit of the work done by the firemen in one month appeared in the window of the Benson Smith drug store. Exciting contests took place and M. G. Correia of the Union street stand took first prize among the chauffeurs, having completed 30 sweaters, while J. M. Frias held the honors among the firemen.

On Oahu, outside of Honolulu, there were several units which were very active. The Fort Shafter organization, formed in the spring of 1917, was the first to make gauze bandages and, at that time, was the only Red Cross unit for surgical dressings in the islands. After the departure of Mrs. James Irons, wife of the commandant, in July, 1917, Mrs. Guy Palmer directed the members, all of whom were experts and met five mornings a week at quarters in the cantonment. The women at Schofield were also busy and children of the non-commissioned officers were of great assistance in the filling of ambulance and fracture pillows. The Aiea unit began work on March 9, 1918. Expenses were covered by donations and picture shows. Every nationality was at work there, turning

out a large quantity of supplies each month. There was also an earnest group working at Ewa, Oahu.

With one of its objects distinctly stated as being "to offer our services to the Red Cross" the Graduate Nurses' Club of Hawaii was organized in April, 1917, with Miss Mary Johnson as president, Miss Rebecca L. Dobson as vice-president, and Mrs. Harry Sinclair as secretary and treasurer. After an interview with officers of the Hawaiian chapter in regard to Red Cross work, a basement room in the Royal Hawaiian Hotel was given by Mrs. C. C. von Hamm for the use of the club and an average daily attendance of eight workers met there five nights a week. After the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. established itself in the hotel building, the nurses unit continued its work in a room in the Ewa wing until January 3, 1918, when it was obliged to vacate and, Fred Harrison having offered the use of a room in the Harrison block, the unit moved to that place. The room at the new location was available to workers daily from 9 to 12, 1 to 4, and 7 to 10 o'clock and the attendance soon averaged seventeen, some persons who could not work at the Capitol or belong to other sewing or knitting units spending spare moments there.

By the end of August, 1917, work completed for the local Red Cross by the nurses' unit and persons who visited the rooms amounted to 8,751 dressings and 1,141 gauze bandages, in addition to other articles. Attendance from November 1, 1917, to November 26, 1918, was 5,828; a total of 13,792 packages containing 306,293 dressings was completed from August, 1917, to November 1, 1918. Supplies made during November, 1918, consisted of sundries which were sent with an Hawaiian chapter donation to Vladivostok.

Of the work done on the outer islands, the final report of the Hawaiian chapter for the war period gives the following summary :

"On the Island of Maui the Red Cross work, under the able direction of Mrs. Frank Baldwin, was carried on in seven main districts.



JAPANESE SEWING WOMEN WORKING ON HOSPITAL GAR-  
MENTS IN UNIVERSITY CLUB BUILDING



CHILDREN'S UNIT AT SACRED HEART CHURCH, WILDER  
AVENUE, HONOLULU



450 SWEATERS, HELMETS, SOCKS, AND WRISTLETS KNITTED  
BY THE DAUGHTERS OF WARRIORS

At left, Mrs. E. K. Reis, one of the founders of the Society



KNITTERS AT MAKIKI FIRE STATION, HONOLULU



"The headquarters of the Hawaii Branch is Hilo where Miss Ivy Richardson carried on the women's work with marked ability. Work was sent along the Hamakua coast to Honokaa, in Puna to Olaa, and out to Waiohinu in Kau. The Allied Unit in Hilo worked with untiring good will and enthusiasm. Mrs. Campsie in Pahala issued 'soldiers' clothes' as the Red Cross pajamas were called there by the Japanese, to many willing plantation hands, while even Chinese and Japanese shops took numbers of pairs to be made up as their contribution to the war. Further on Mrs. De La Nux in the lonely little village of Naalehu, showed her heroic courage, after losing an arm in a terrible accident, by knitting sweaters with one hand. She also distributed garments to be made. Along the Kona coast Mrs. Wallace sent out sewing, which was done by Hawaiians and Japanese as well as the white population. In Kohala Mrs. John Hind and Mrs. Richmond have worked untiringly and splendidly with their Surgical Dressings and Knitting Units.

"Kauai's Red Cross work reached around the entire island, the eastern section being under the efficient leadership of Mrs. Charles Rice. Work was done in seven districts and in the valley of Hanalei, Mrs. Senni's unit being one of the leaders. On western Kauai work was carried on in four sections; first under Mrs. Eric Knudsen and later under Mrs. William Danford, both of whom have been untiring. The headquarters in Waimea are particularly picturesque, situated in a cottage in the rice fields.

"Molokai, with Mrs. James Munro as its leader, did a large amount of sewing and knitting, the Hawaiians being as eager to work there as elsewhere throughout the Territory."

#### THE RED CROSS SHOP

"Jitney" and "rummage" sales were a popular form of raising money for the Red Cross during the spring and summer of 1918. Mrs. W. A. Welbourne of the Kaimuki unit had been one of the first to take advantage of the idea and had opened a shop which had salvaged many odds and ends and had turned

in a tidy sum to the Red Cross. Mrs. Ferdinand Hedemann held several sales of "things that may have served their purpose with one but will serve further with another," and the proceeds were given to the Red Cross. One of her sales brought in about \$1,000.

Seeing the possibilities in such means for raising funds, Mr. Carter, chairman of the Hawaiian chapter, suggested that a Jitney Shop be established where daily rummage sales could be held. Mrs. Hedemann was made chairman of a special committee for the purpose. The former quarters of the Honolulu Auto Supply Company on Beretania and Nuuanu streets were obtained, the necessary alterations and repairs being donated. A second location at Queen and Nuuanu streets was secured for a salvage or "junk" shop.

A newspaper story of the opening day (October 1, 1918) says that policemen were necessary to hold back the crowd. The main shop with its slogan "We sell everything and buy nothing" cleared \$472 before the close of the day. The "Junk Shop" with its slogans "Your Trash is our Cash" and "Give your little scraps here to help the Big Scrap over there" made \$218 on the same day. During the first week receipts at the main shop averaged \$100 a selling hour, a total of \$1,762.50. By October 12, the "Junk Shop" had made \$725.

Because of the prevalence of Spanish "flu," both shops were closed on October 24, but were open again in less than a month. Mrs. Hedemann resigned as director on October 31 and Mrs. E. D. Kilbourne was appointed in her place. A Christmas sale was held at the Moana Hotel at which a little over \$2,000 was realized. The main shop was moved meanwhile to the location on Queen street. Supplies were running low and on January 8, 1919, the "Red Cross Shop" was closed with an auction sale at which everything was sold, including the fixtures. The total sum raised for the Red Cross from sales at the two shops was \$3,699.29.

A branch shop was opened during the same period on Maui. Mrs. W. J. Cooper was manager and Mrs. Charles Cowan, shop

superintendent. During its period of activity the Maui Red Cross Shop cleared \$1,300.

From the entire venture (the two shops in Honolulu, the Christmas sale at the Moana Hotel, and the Maui shop) a total of more than \$8,500 was turned into the treasury of the chapter.

#### DEPARTMENT OF INSTRUCTION

The work of this department was virtually a continuation of the classes organized by the Hawaii Chapter of the Women's Section of the Navy League under the direction of Mrs. Gerrit P. Wilder. The Hawaiian Chapter's Committee on Red Cross Instruction was organized on March 9, 1918, its personnel being as follows: Chairman, Mrs. G. P. Wilder; Physicians, Dr. F. A. Putman, U. S. A., Dr. J. R. Judd, and Dr. W. C. Hobdy; Nurses, Miss Janet M. Dewar, Miss Grace H. Ferguson, Miss Agnes E. Maynard, and Mrs. Charles Norton; Lay Members, Miss Beatrice Castle, Mrs. W. F. Frear, Mrs. W. L. Moore, Mrs. A. L. Castle, Mrs. Arthur Berg, Mrs. Ismay Stubbs, and Mrs. H. R. Macfarlane. Headquarters were in a classroom in the Castle & Cooke building, which, with its fittings, was a gift to the chapter by Mrs. Wilder.

Instruction classes were immediately organized, and up to the time the work was discontinued there were under instruction three classes in Red Cross First Aid, two classes in Advanced First Aid, four classes in Elementary Hygiene and Home Care of the Sick, one class in Dietetics, and seventeen classes in the Preparation of Standard and Special Surgical Dressings. An aggregate of 406 persons received certificates. Classes in the Preparation of Surgical Dressings were also organized on the outer islands.

In October, 1918, and again in February, 1919, at the request of the Board of Health, the Committee on Red Cross Instruction formed special emergency committees of trained nurses and pupils who had taken the course in Elementary Hygiene and Home Care of the Sick, which rendered valuable service in the fight against the Spanish influenza.

In April, 1919, a nursing survey was carried on under the auspices of the Committee on Red Cross Instruction, with the result that a comprehensive list of graduate nurses, both in army and civilian service, as well as a list of those in training, was obtained.

#### CAMP SERVICE

A Department of Military Relief was organized in the spring of 1918, Colonel J. W. Jones being appointed chairman on May 6; but the main work of the department was almost immediately absorbed by the Field Service Department, which was organized and directed from Washington and was in no way within the jurisdiction or control of the local chapter. By a general order issued by the commander of the Hawaiian Department on April 28, A. L. Castle was appointed General Field Director for the territory of Hawaii with the status of an army officer. Camp service was put into operation under the supervision of Field Director Castle. His principal assistants were Associate Field Director George I. Brown, Associate Field Director Gerrit P. Wilder, Henry P. Beckley, H. K. L. Castle, John J. Siler, Seabury T. Short, Herbert Dowsett, H. A. Walker, and R. J. Brown. The following account of Camp Service is taken with little alteration from the "Combined Report of the . . . Hawaiian Chapter, American Red Cross, for the Period of the War."

When the National Guard was mobilized in June, 1918, at Fort Armstrong and the draft called, tents were immediately allotted to the Red Cross and, at the request of the army, Camp Service conducted a canteen for two months at this temporary post. The service operated as a medium to keep the men in touch with Home Service; it established reading and writing rooms for the men where all material was furnished free; it conducted free moving pictures for the men in the open air nearly every night; it had telephones handy, sold postage stamps, cashed money orders, wrote letters, gave advice on insurance, allotments and allowances, and in general tried to be the sol-

dier's real friend. In its canteen every attempt was made to sell at cost but with the large soda water and ice cream sales, with the nickel as the smallest medium of exchange, some profit was made which was turned back to the soldiers through free moving pictures and writing material.

With the permanent assignment of the guard and drafted men to Schofield Barracks and Fort Shafter, Associate Field Director Brown took charge at Schofield and Associate Field Director Wilder at Fort Shafter. A similar service was maintained at each post, except that the canteen was no longer necessary. The General Field Director was stationed at Red Cross headquarters in Honolulu, and on his departure for Siberia, George I. Brown came in as Acting Field Director, being succeeded at Schofield by H. A. Walker. Messrs. Walker, Short, and Siler were later called from Schofield to Siberia, so the work at Schofield was conducted by Associate Field Director Charles R. Crozier, assisted by Arnold H. Ritz.

For a while three rooms were maintained at Schofield, the work increasing by the addition of information cases, a few bonus applications for the men who worked at the post, distributing garments and smokes. At Fort Shafter Associate Field Director Wilder remained in charge until the end in July, 1919, his assistant, William Knott, carrying on during Mr. Wilder's temporary absence. The work of Camp Service was well performed by the men in charge and was of undoubted service to the army.

Beginning in March, 1918, up to and including June, 1919, Camp Service received for verification 176 cases regarding discharges. These discharge applications contained statements of dependency of families and relatives of soldiers seeking a discharge from the service. All of these applications were received from men of the federalized National Guard of Hawaii and men who were drafted into the service and stationed here in Hawaii.

These cases were handed over to the Home Service section for verification. Three-quarters of these applications had to be investigated on one of the other islands, where the families lived. In order to give the army good service and an early reply, in

all cases where an investigation had to be made on one of the other islands, the wireless was used. The reply was received by wireless and most of the cases were reported back to the man's commanding officer the same day that the case was received at his office. The work done by the visitors of the Home Service section of the different branches was very thorough and prompt and their findings in each case did justice to the army, the Red Cross, the men seeking the discharge, and to their families.

Supplies delivered through Camp Service amounted to a total of 15,579 articles, consisting chiefly of knitted sweaters and socks, the greater part being issued through the quartermaster department of the army.

Canteen service was carried on jointly by Camp Service represented by Associate Field Director Wilder, assisted by William Knott, and ladies from the Department of Women's Work headed by Miss Beatrice Castle, Mrs. G. P. Wilder, and Mrs. Frank Putman. The first work was to serve transports taking away regular troops, a light luncheon of ice cream, sandwiches, and lemonade being served on the transport dock. After the regular soldiers left, the service consisted of meeting transports en route to and from Vladivostok, and supplying refreshments to Americans, French, and Czechs. In many instances the men were taken to Waikiki Beach for a swim and luncheon. One of the most impressive occasions was the entertainment of several hundred wounded Czechs.

Toward the end the committee gave special attention to Red Cross parties en route to and from Siberia, doing whatever was possible for the convalescent Americans, and entertaining soldiers returning to the mainland. "The Red Cross man" met every transport entering the port and attended to the wants of the boys in the sick bay. Fresh fruit was in the greatest demand, followed by ice cream and smokes. The unfortunates who could not land were at least made to feel that they were not forgotten. The Hawaiian Pineapple Company generously donated large quantities of fresh fruit.

The Red Cross gave aid to the men honorably discharged

from military or naval service in obtaining the \$60 bonus to which they were entitled. As soon as the bonus act was passed and a copy received in Hawaii, the Red Cross prepared a circular letter, printed in Chinese, Japanese, Portuguese, Hawaiian, Filipino, and English, and distributed it throughout the islands. This was a letter of warning to the discharged service men to beware of the money sharks who were trying to make money by collecting commissions on bonus applications. It stated that the Red Cross would help them without charge and urged them to make their applications through the Red Cross. Second, thousands of bonus application letters were printed and sent to the different branches with instructions as to what was to be done. Hundreds of these bonus applications were filled out by the Red Cross and sent to Washington by registered letter.

#### DEPARTMENT OF CIVILIAN RELIEF

The Department of Civilian Relief was organized early in 1918 with John R. Galt as director. The work of this department in Hawaii, as elsewhere in war time, consisted almost exclusively of looking out for the families of men in service, giving advice to their wives, mothers, and other dependents, seeing that their families were not in want, and helping in every way to lighten the burden of those left at home.

According to the January 1, 1918, report which stated that the department of civilian relief was about to be organized, "The chapter is now retaining sufficient funds to care for families in Hawaii made destitute by losses in the war. We expect to be able to utilize the Associated Charities for investigation purposes, the executive committee of the chapter acting then on the recommendation of the chairman of this department." As a preliminary to the work, the Honolulu chapter had, in November, established a bureau of war records with Mrs. Robert Elgin at its head to collect the records of all residents of Hawaii who had entered or would enter the service of the United States or the Allies.

Miss Lena Waters, manager of the Associated Charities, was made executive secretary of civilian relief for the territory, and on March 13 offices were opened at Red Cross headquarters on the second floor of the Castle & Cooke building. Other members of the territorial executive committee were J. A. Rath, Lieutenant Colonel Robert Dubbin of the Salvation Army, William A. Horn, executive secretary of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., Miss Grace Channon of the Y. W. C. A., James C. McGill of the British Club, Mrs. Margaret de M. Carson of Lanakila Home, C. F. House, pay clerk at Pearl Harbor, A. E. Larimer, executive secretary of the Y. M. C. A., C. R. Hemenway, and Miss Frances Lawrence.

As territorial secretary, Miss Waters proceeded to the formation and organization of branches of civilian relief on the main islands, Mrs. H. A. Baldwin being executive secretary on Maui, Mrs. W. H. Smith on Hawaii, Mrs. C. H. Wilcox on Kauai, and Mrs. A. L. Castle on Oahu. Under the leadership of these ladies consultation committees were organized and visitors or case workers selected. Between 70 and 100 workers—one in each district of each island—were appointed, accepted their appointments, and proceeded immediately to work, and by the latter part of September there were in all between 120 and 135 workers in the office and in the field.

As soon as organization was completed and in order to develop the all-important home service work, a study class was formed from a group of ten representative women, the majority of whom had had previous training in some phase of social work. A course of lectures covering a period of six weeks was taken under the tutelage of Miss Waters, supplemented by reading and field work according to Red Cross plans. Mrs. A. L. Castle was chairman of the class, and each of the branches sent a representative to take the course so that all might work on similar lines. This class was followed by another so that, as the final report says, "throughout the entire period Home Service had a loyal corps of trained volunteer workers whose interest has been a credit to the Chapter. When the guard was called in



June of [1918], we had instantly a problem complicated by our cosmopolitan population for we had to deal with Hawaiians, Filipinos, Japanese, Chinese, Portuguese, and almost every race on the face of the earth. Two war strength regiments were called, the majority of the men being stationed at Schofield Barracks about twenty-four miles from Honolulu, and the balance at Fort Shafter on the outskirts of the city. In addition to the guard there was considerable work with the regulars, white and colored. The problems presented here made close cooperation between Home Service and Camp Service absolutely essential. A close relationship was also established between Home Service and the War Risk Insurance Bureau."

Mr. Galt remained as director of the department until he was called into service as a member of the Officers' Reserve Corps when his place was taken by Judge W. L. Whitney. On Miss Waters' call to Washington she was succeeded by Miss Smith, who was, in turn, succeeded by Miss Wilhelmina Tenney who had been on duty with the Red Cross in France. Miss Tenney worked without a salary but she was assisted by a vocational officer at a salary of \$150 per month, \$50 of which was paid by the War Camp Community Service. Miss Alice Hastings became territorial secretary in October, 1919, and upon the resignation of Judge Whitney, she was made director of civilian relief.

The final report of the Hawaiian Chapter for the war period says: "In many respects there has been no more satisfactory department of the chapter than that of Home Service. The work has been handled quietly, effectively, and in a way that has been satisfactory to all families concerned. All advances were made on a loan basis, the amount of repayments being very creditable. The Home Service workers have been perhaps the least known of the Red Cross workers, but they have accomplished things which will never be forgotten."

The record of work up to September 30, 1919, showed a total of 529 record cases on Oahu, 128 on Maui, 120 on Kauai and 316 on Hawaii. Other service was given on Oahu to 729

persons, to 353 on Maui, 59 on Kauai, and 105 on Hawaii, making a total of 2,339 cases handled.

### JUNIOR RED CROSS

Prior to the actual organization of the Junior Red Cross in the territory, thousands of school children were working in the Red Cross rooms and thousands more wanted to knit when it was impossible to buy wool. Some were doing the same work as the women in the units; others were clipping cloth for ambulance pillows; and boys in carpenter shops were making packing cases used for shipping material to the front.

There was no question of the enthusiasm or loyalty of the children of Hawaii, but, at the time, it seemed difficult to apply the suggestions of national headquarters to local school conditions. The organization of the Junior Red Cross required the payment of 25 cents as dues by each member and it was thought that this would conflict with a rule which stipulated that money should not be collected from school children. However, the department of public instruction was encouraging Red Cross work with the hope that the same results might be obtained by the cooperation of the school children with the adult units in each district.

On December 28, F. N. Doubleday of the publishing firm of Doubleday, Page & Company, who was interested in the Junior Red Cross work and the use of the *Red Cross Magazine* in the schools, met with Henry W. Kinney, superintendent of public instruction, A. L. Castle, and a few others to discuss the inauguration of a campaign to make the *Red Cross Magazine* a part of the curriculum. He brought a message from President Wilson heartily endorsing such a plan.

A chapter school committee, consisting of Henry W. Kinney, E. C. Webster, and A. F. Griffiths, was formed for the promotion of Red Cross activities among the school children. Copies of the magazine were obtained after the adult readers had finished with them, and placed in the schools. Classes were formed among the older girls for the making of surgical dress-

ings and the younger children were asked to knit wash cloths and help in other ways. No pupils were asked to join the Red Cross but all who wished could do so on payment of 25 cents dues for one year. Schools which did a certain amount of work were enrolled as school members.

On the trip which Executive Secretary A. L. Castle made to Washington in January, 1918, one of his objects was to make some arrangement by which the Junior Red Cross could be organized in Hawaii. As a result of his efforts, the principal obstacle (the payment of dues) was waived insofar as Hawaii school children were concerned, and a plan was approved by which a public school pupil could become a member of the Junior Red Cross by pledging himself to do at least one hour of approved Red Cross work each week. The final steps in the local organization of the Junior Red Cross took place at a meeting of Mr. Castle and the chapter school committee on February 8, 1918, at which tentative plans were drawn up for the work throughout the territory. These plans were formally accepted by the chapter on the following day. Early in March Mrs. A. Lewis, Jr., was appointed supervisor of the Junior Red Cross in the territory. She was to promote Red Cross work in the schools and to bring about cooperation between the Junior auxiliaries and the department of women's work.

By the end of March five thousand Junior Red Cross buttons were received by the department of public instruction and were apportioned among school principals for distribution to pupil members. Sixty public schools and fifteen private schools had become school auxiliaries by May 20, and had a total enrollment of 17,800. By October 8, 1918, Hawaii's Junior Red Cross ranked eighth in the list of states and the territory was at the head of the 14th Division with 56 per cent of her school population enrolled.

The work undertaken was similar to that done in all Junior Red Cross organizations. There were, of course, local conditions to meet and certain adaptations were necessary. The children were intensely interested. No obstacles were too great to be

overcome. In their eagerness to knit, some of the oriental youngsters used string, nails, bits of telephone wire, or chop sticks, when the proper needles could not be obtained. One of the special pieces of work accomplished was the making of 15,000 property bags and 5,000 scrap books. This came in the form of a rush order but it was filled promptly and efficiently by the children.

A few quotations from the *Hawaii Educational Review* for May, 1918, give some idea of the work accomplished to the end of April:

"It is not possible to go into detail in all the lines of activities followed by the schools, but we might mention one or two that stand out. Among other supplies, there were 528 woolen sweaters, enough to provide sweaters for two complete rifle companies and their officers, or three machine gun companies. There were over 20,000 handkerchiefs, almost enough for a division; more than 4,000 bandages and surgical dressings, which does not include work done by pupils and teachers at the various Red Cross headquarters. There were nearly 1,000 pairs of socks and 2,000 wash rags, and nearly 7,000 magazines were collected and sent to the soldiers. . . . Several activities undertaken were found to be impractical. For example, over 200,000 cancelled postage stamps were collected before it was learned that they could not be used for dyes. About 1,000 trench candles had been made when it was found that it was not advisable to use shipping space for these articles. About a ton of newspapers were collected and sold, but this was found to be a waste of energy, as in many localities they could not be disposed of, and the returns were slight compared with the work of collection and disposal. . . . Six schools made a total of 192 packing boxes for shipping Red Cross supplies to the front. There had been twenty-five entertainments given up to March 29th, earning \$2,965.05 for the use of the Red Cross, Belgian Relief, French war orphans and other worthy causes. Fourteen schools gave these twenty-five entertainments."

## FINANCING THE RED CROSS

During the period of the war (from July, 1917, when the War Relief Committee became definitely Red Cross, to the end of June, 1919) the Red Cross organizations in Hawaii had a total income of approximately \$950,000. Of this amount about \$30,000 came from membership dues (the greater proportion of membership dues went to national headquarters and was not included in the receipts of the local chapters); about \$915,000 came from pledges and donations; the rest (a few thousand dollars) was entered under the heading "miscellaneous receipts". During the same period the expenditures totalled approximately \$900,000, the two principal items being the amount forwarded to Washington for the two "War Funds" of the national organization (about \$526,000) and the amount spent in the purchase of supplies (wool, gauze, etc.) for the department of women's work (about \$280,000).

The first membership drive was launched just after the organization of the Honolulu chapter. The drive proper lasted only one day (September 29, 1917), but it was very carefully prepared for over a period of two weeks. Executive Secretary A. L. Castle was general manager and had an able corps of assistants. The city was divided into three main divisions, two being handled wholly by women, and members of the Honolulu Ad Club canvassed the business section. A special appeal was made to the Japanese, a proclamation being issued by Consul General Moroi, president of the local Japanese Red Cross Society (which had a membership of nearly 8,000) urging his people to support the drive. The goal first set was 5,000 members; the numbers actually obtained were 24 patron, 438 life, 162 sustaining, 915 contributing, 2,902 subscribing, and 11,889 annual members—a total of 16,330, or about one-seventh of the entire population of the island of Oahu.

Early in November an announcement came from national headquarters of a nation-wide drive during Christmas week with the object of enrolling 20 per cent of the total population of the country before the end of the fiscal year. As Oahu already had

16 per cent of its population enrolled, this campaign was most actively pushed on the islands of Maui and Kauai. Maui made a most remarkable record, enrolling 11,454 members, or about 30 per cent of the population of the county. For the whole chapter the gain was 16,362, over half of the 27,954 recorded in the Fourteenth Division during the drive, giving the Honolulu chapter (Oahu, Maui, and Kauai) a total of 33,405 members. The principal membership campaign of the Hilo chapter was held in January and February, adding more than 9,500 names to the roll and bringing the chapter membership to about 11,000. By the end of the year the Hawaiian chapter had more than 50,000 members.

The second Red Cross Roll Call (December, 1918) naturally suffered from the general relaxation of war work following the armistice, and the membership of the chapter was much reduced. In the fall of 1919 in anticipation of the third Roll Call, the Hawaiian chapter cabled to Washington a subscription of \$75,000 to the national fund. A news letter from national headquarters said that this was "much larger than the quota that would have been assigned . . . but was in line with the energy displayed by the island members ever since the United States went to war."

The call for the first \$100,000,000 War Fund of the American Red Cross was issued before the organization of the Honolulu chapter, but "Red Cross Week" (June 21-28, 1917) was brought to the attention of the island public through an appeal issued by the War Relief Committee. In response to this appeal, \$25,861.25 was contributed and forwarded to Washington. "Realizing that this was not sufficient, the Honolulu chapter after its organization and up to December 31, 1917, forwarded from donations not used locally an additional \$85,000, making a total of \$110,861.25 from Honolulu" for the first \$100,000,000 War Fund.

The Second War Fund Drive represented the first real united effort of the territory to raise Red Cross funds. This great drive, held during the week of May 6-11, 1918, was led by Hon. George R. Carter, chairman of the chapter. J. A. Rath was

given supervision on Oahu, Harold Rice on Maui, Harold V. Patten on Hawaii, Walter McBryde on Kauai, and James G. Munro on Molokai. K. Yamamoto was head of a committee to raise funds among the Japanese. Every island, every community, every home was given an opportunity to contribute to the cause. "Help the Red Cross Beat the Iron Cross" was the slogan of the campaign. "Oahu greets each of the other islands at the opening of the best week of the year," Mr. Carter wired to Hawaii, Maui, Kauai, and Molokai just before the drive began. "May it prove the proudest in our history."

"The never-to-be-forgotten feature of this drive was the impressive, stirring, and inspiring parade in Honolulu of some 2,000 women workers, all in uniform, with representatives from the schools likewise in uniform, on the opening day. Honolulu has perhaps witnessed more spectacular parades, but nothing has ever touched the hearts of the people as did this silent march of devoted women," states the final report of the Hawaiian chapter for the war period; and the *Star-Bulletin* said of this parade, "Honolulu saw a spectacle which, for combined pictorial beauty and inspiration, was never equalled in Honolulu."

On each island careful plans were made for a thorough canvass. The city of Honolulu was divided into two districts under the leadership of Mrs. G. P. Wilder and Mrs. H. F. Damon. Mr. Carter, Mr. Castle, and Mr. Rath directed the drive from downtown headquarters. Before the end of the first day more than half of the quota was subscribed. Competition between the islands was promoted on the basis of pro rata contributions in proportion to the number of school children; and Kauai, the winner (having reached an average of \$15.40 per school child), was presented with a Red Cross banner and flag. The total number of pledges and amounts subscribed on the various islands were as follows:

	Subscribers	Amounts
Maui .....	14,322	\$75,089.22
Molokai .....	437	1,418.15
Kauai .....	13,720	85,516.55
Hawaii .....	19,087	88,061.37
Oahu .....	61,419	427,180.53
	<hr/> 108,985	<hr/> \$677,265.82

The quota of the Fourteenth Division had been \$300,000. Hawaii alone raised more than double the amount asked.

As the figures indicate, more than two-thirds of the total receipts of the local Red Cross organization came in as a result of this great "Second War Fund Drive." Most of the balance came in from current donations from week to week and month to month. Many unique methods of raising money for the Red Cross were adopted by the people of Hawaii. In addition to cash donations made by persons and organizations and to the money obtained by systematized drives or membership campaigns, a substantial fund was derived from benefit entertainments and other enterprises. Various forms of entertainments for which prominent women were patronesses—concerts, lectures, bridge parties, dances, and juvenile exhibits, accompanied, at times, by sales—gained many contributions and made possible needed diversion during the months of war work.

School children throughout the islands were exceedingly active, selling vegetables from their war gardens and giving entertainments for the benefit of the various units or the main fund, and the free kindergarten youngsters emulated them. The boys' and girls' clubs, the scout organizations, and the young inmates of the two industrial schools proved most fertile in ideas. A valuable service was performed by the Boy Scouts on the occasion of the funeral of Queen Liliuokalani when a grandstand was erected near the Capitol for which a seating charge was made.

Business houses gave a percentage of their profits, the highest being the 20 per cent donated by the Hawaii Meat Company;





## Help the Red Cross beat the Iron Cross

The **IRON CROSS** stands for the fiends enthroned at Berlin, the murderers of Belgian babes, the ravishers of women, the spoilers of men. It stands for the mad beast. Its foul and murderous aim *must* be beaten,

The **RED CROSS** stands for Humanity. It stands for Protection of the wounded, the tortured and the despoiled. It stands for Life and Happiness and Justice and Right. *It will* beat the Iron Cross.

### Next Monday Morning

*the campaign for the*

## RED CROSS, 2<sup>nd</sup> War Fund, begins

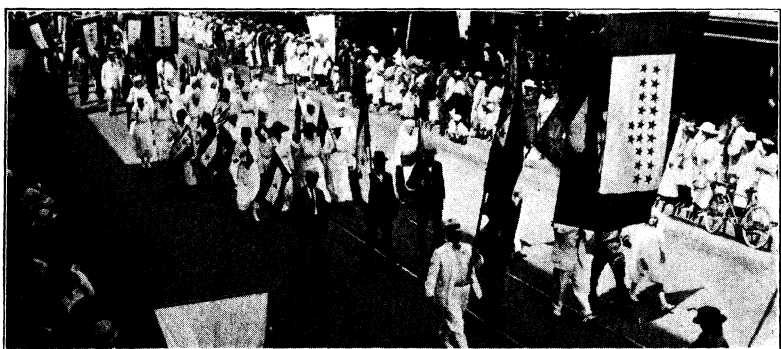
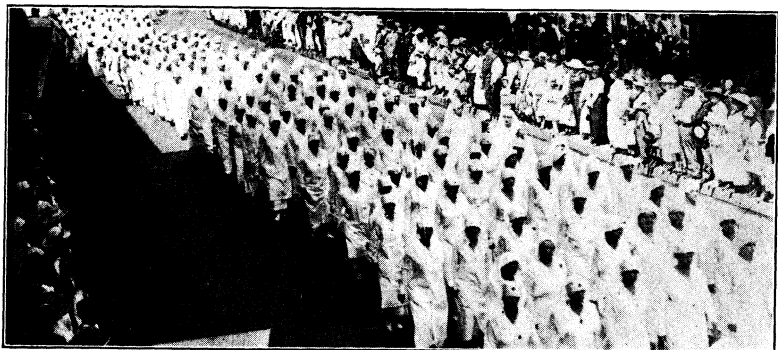
The American Red Cross needs money for surgical dressings, supplies, ambulances, hospitals, relief for refugee children, etc. Be ready to give. Give all you can.

**Hawaiian Chapter, American Red Cross**

(The Hawaiian Islands Co. 1917-18, 1918-19, 1919-20)

FULL-PAGE ADVERTISEMENT USED IN RED CROSS SECOND WAR FUND CAMPAIGN, MAY, 1918

The poster design at top was drawn by Charles W. Bartlett especially for use in this drive



GLIMPSES OF RED CROSS PARADE MAY 6, 1918, OPENING  
SECOND WAR FUND CAMPAIGN

employees of firms such as H. Hackfeld & Company, the Hawaiian Pineapple Company, and the skilled workers of Ewa Plantation pledged themselves to give definite sums; and professional men offered to contribute regularly. Fifty Honolulu attorneys did their own Red Cross "clubbing" with the result that they guaranteed \$305 a month.

Auctions, a favorite method of raising money, ranged in importance from the selling of a rare flower on the stock exchange for \$115 to the disposal of the liquor stock of the Pacific Club for \$1,600. Two pounds of "White House Wool" were sold at auction at the Territorial Fair for \$350. Pond mullet raisers contributed fish; and everything was auctioned from a 50-cent piece found in the pocket of Governor Pinkham which brought \$1,445 on the occasion of a tournament banquet at the Country Club, to the sale of the only "Unconditional Surrender" button in the territory and the pen with which President Dole signed the constitution of the Republic of Hawaii.

Passengers aboard boats nearing the islands usually contributed substantial amounts; tennis matches were held; clubs charged admission to their functions; ball players staged benefit games at Moiliili Field; and even the draft board found means to donate. Newsboys clubbed together and did their share; old tires were collected and sold; and autoists arrested for violations of the parking ordinance helped swell the fund. Automobile "Jitney boxes" labeled "Remember over there; Pay your fare" earned a tidy sum.

The Lanai players, interested in amateur theatricals, earned and gave \$150 a month over a considerable period of time; the "Umph-Huh box" at the Commercial Club was filled with quarters and half-dollars; and a pretty representative of the Green Stocking League made donations in behalf of a number of debutantes who had earned the money by keeping the hose of their bachelor friends in order.

Golfers at the Country Club competed for a medal given to Colonel Curtis P. Iaukea in 1882 by the International Association of the Red Cross of Belgium, following which it was forwarded

to the mainland for a tour of the country; violators of the food laws were required to donate their fines to the Red Cross; and various persons signed over money which they received for war services.

Signaller Tom Skeyhill, the blind Anzac orator, was instrumental in raising about \$10,000 for the Red Cross during his visit to Hawaii in February, 1918.

## CHAPTER VIII

### RED CROSS AND RELIEF WORKERS OVERSEAS

#### I. In Europe

##### DOCTORS AND NURSES

**D**URING the spring of 1915, Dr. James R. Judd had been in correspondence with an old schoolmate, one of the surgeons with the allied forces, and, learning of the need for medical skill in the war zone, decided to give his services for a time to the cause. He and Mrs. Judd left Honolulu for France on June 10, 1915. They arrived at Paris via Liverpool and London on July 21 and were assigned to the American Ambulance Hospital at Neuilly, a suburb of Paris, where Dr. Judd was a staff surgeon and Mrs. Judd an auxiliary nurse.

The American Ambulance was an organization supported by American contributions and devoted to the care of French wounded. Two large hospitals, one at Neuilly and one at Juilly, with over a thousand beds, were maintained. Besides there were over 200 ambulances in use for the transport of the wounded. The hospital at Neuilly was fitted up in a new school building, the Lycée Pasteur. The construction of the building with plenty of windows, splendid lighting and ventilation rendered it an ideal hospital—one of the finest among the French war hospitals.

Of the work here Dr. Judd says, "The work consists of morning rounds with Dr. Blake [a former teacher of Dr. Judd], afterwards operations if there are any to be done, and then the dressings." Mrs. Judd was "assigned to a small ward where she makes beds, helps at the 'pansements,' takes temperatures and pulses, helps with the meals, and in many other ways. She looks real businesslike in her French Red Cross uniform and enjoys the work thoroughly."

On October 1, 1915, Dr. and Mrs. Judd were transferred to the American Ambulance Hospital at Juilly, Seine et Marne, situated between Paris and Soissons. Unlike the hospital at

Neuilly, this one was established in an old stone building in the College of Juilly, where it was much more difficult to maintain satisfactory hospital arrangements. But they were closer to the French people in the little village and near enough to the war zone so that the guns could be heard every day. Wounded were received from along the battle line from Verdun to the Somme. The following account gives some idea of the receiving ward of the hospital.

"On arriving at the ambulance the wounded are undressed. They are nearly always very dirty and very tired. Their uniforms are caked with dirt and blood. They are given a hot bath if they are able to have it. Joly, the Major Domo of the receiving room, is quite a character. As soon as a wounded man is turned over to him he seats him on a slat arrangement which lies across the tub. Then with a bottle of liquid soap and a sponge he goes at his job with zest. First a thorough shampoo, Joly keeping up a running fire of conversation, and if the soap runs down the victim's face and into his eyes and mouth, Joly doesn't mind it a bit but follows up with liberal douches of hot water. The poilu seems to enjoy it all as much as Joly. A soldier, badly wounded or with fracture of the leg, is carefully bathed on a bed, and is not subject to Joly's ministrations. All the wounded are X-rayed unless it is very evident that the wound is merely a flesh wound. Cases requiring immediate operation are attended to at once. Sometimes the electric light system breaks down at the critical moment and acetylene lamps are ready for emergencies. The poor fellows are put to bed and given a meal and the inevitable cigarette. They then sleep and sleep. Many of them have not been in a bed for months. They usually sleep all night, all the next day, waking up only for meals, the next night and part of the next day. Quite often they have bad dreams and nightmares and cry out in their sleep as they dream of an attack."

After a couple of months here, Dr. Judd was placed in charge of the hospital with the title of Médecin-Chef and served in this capacity for eight months until his departure in July, 1916. The night before their departure from the hospital Dr.

Judd was presented with a silver loving cup and Mrs. Judd with a lovely bunch of roses from the *blessés*. "During our last few hours at the ambulance we made our farewell call on the Mayor, and then shook hands and said goodbye to every one of the poilus. As many as could accompanied us to the doorway where, as we entered our automobile, a farewell cheer was given us. There were tears, too, in many an eye and our eyes were not dry. We felt as if we were leaving a home and dear friends in a great struggle."

Dr. and Mrs. Judd returned to Honolulu in the spring of 1917. On July 14, 1920, he received the decoration of the "Legion of Honor" from the French government and on April 2, 1921, Mrs. Judd received "La Medaille de la Reconnaissance Francaise."

Three physicians from the territory of Hawaii saw service with the American Red Cross overseas. The work of Dr. A. F. Jackson and Dr. W. D. Baldwin will be referred to later in this chapter. Dr. A. G. Hodgins received his appointment as a Red Cross surgeon through the Hawaiian chapter in July, 1918, and in September received orders to proceed at once to Washington. From there he was sent to Europe and served for two months at a hospital at Trier (Treves), Germany. He returned to New York in January, 1919, and to Honolulu two months later.

In the early days of the European war Miss Margaret M. L. Catton of Honolulu, who had offered her services to England as an untrained worker and had been notified that the need abroad was for trained workers only, through personal solicitation, obtained funds from members of the local British colony to pay the passage of four nurses to London. Miss Effie Louise Craig of the Vancouver General Hospital, E. Clara Jordan of Auckland Hospital, New Zealand; Alice K. (Lindsay) Gray of the Coast Hospital, Sydney, and Miss Christina Hunter of New Zealand volunteered to go, signing an agreement to proceed to England at once and to place themselves for service as might be directed.

The four arrived in Liverpool on the morning of November 1, 1914, and upon their application in London were assigned to the fourteenth unit of the British Red Cross. Miss Craig and

Miss Jordan served through the retreat from Mons and had the care of the first cases of gas poisoning during the battle of Ypres. They were sent first to Newbury, King's Clere, a hospital conducted under the supervision of Lady Rosemary Portal; and the Misses Gray and Hunter went to the Indian Hospital at Brighton. Miss Hunter was sent to Belgium in April, 1915. All of these nurses wrote interesting letters to Miss Catton describing the work they were doing, and some of these letters were printed in the Honolulu newspapers during the early war years. Miss Craig and Miss Jordan received special mention in the dispatches of Sir John French. Miss Hunter was decorated by the Belgian queen.

Miss Mabel I. Wilcox, a graduate of Johns Hopkins Training School for Nurses, left for the mainland on July 31, 1917, with the purpose of going into service overseas. In November she was appointed to the American Red Cross nursing service for France and sailed soon afterwards from New York in charge of fifteen Red Cross aides who had been assigned to the Children's Bureau of that organization. Arriving in Paris, she was given the position of head nurse under Dr. E. A. Park, children's specialist from Johns Hopkins Hospital to establish children's refugee work for the Belgian Commission of the American Red Cross. Miss Wilcox was sent to Le Havre in January, 1918, where the work for Belgian and French refugee children was organized. Miss Ethel Damon joined her as aide in March, 1918. Miss Damon had enlisted in the American Red Cross Canteen service in New York in December, 1917, and after her arrival in France had worked for a time in Paris as interpreter and nurses' aide previous to her transfer to the Children's Department.

During 1918 a children's free dispensary was opened, to which was added later a free barrack hospital of twenty beds. Visiting, nursing, and social service work was started and a training class for twelve nurses' aides was undertaken. Miss Wilcox also spent four weeks with one of the American woman doctors making a survey in West Flanders as to the advisability of extending the Red Cross dispensary work to Belgian villages at



the front. In March, 1919, the work at Le Havre was turned over to the French authorities at which time Miss Wilcox and Miss Damon were decorated by the mayor with the bronze medal of the city. In April they were given the bronze medal of the Order of Elizabeth by the queen of Belgium. They sailed in May, 1919, for New York.

A number of other nurses from Hawaii were in service overseas, among them being Miss Luella Clark, who left in 1914 with a unit from a Buffalo hospital and served at Base Hospital No. 23 in France; Miss M. K. Bascon, the first nurse to leave Hawaii after the United States entered the war; Miss Emma Gill, who served with the Red Cross in a Canadian hospital near London; Miss Edith Gill, who worked in a cantonment hospital at Palo Alto, California; Miss Anne McCue and Miss Ida F. Sill, who served in base hospitals in France. Miss Anna Albrecht of Maui, a member of the navy hospital service, was sent to France; Miss Doris Tackabury enrolled in an army hospital unit and went abroad; Miss Alma Cloninger went to the front from a San Francisco hospital; and Miss C. H. Christman, former head nurse at Hilo Hospital, died in war service in France.

#### CANTEEN AND RECONSTRUCTION WORK

Miss Wilhelmina Tenney went to Europe in the fall of 1917 to engage in war work and with her friend, Miss Lois Brundred, was in American Red Cross canteen service in many parts of France. For a time these young women were right behind the firing line with a rolling canteen from which they dispensed hot coffee and sandwiches to the boys at the front. At another time they helped out in a hospital where there were not enough nurses to care for the wounded. In May, 1918, Major C. R. Forbes of the U. S. Signal Corps wrote from "somewhere in France":

"I walked into a Red Cross canteen . . . and there, with sleeves rolled up, working like a beaver, was Miss Wilhelmina Tenney. This noble little woman along with her friend, Miss Brundred, was getting ready for soldiers . . . to feed them and

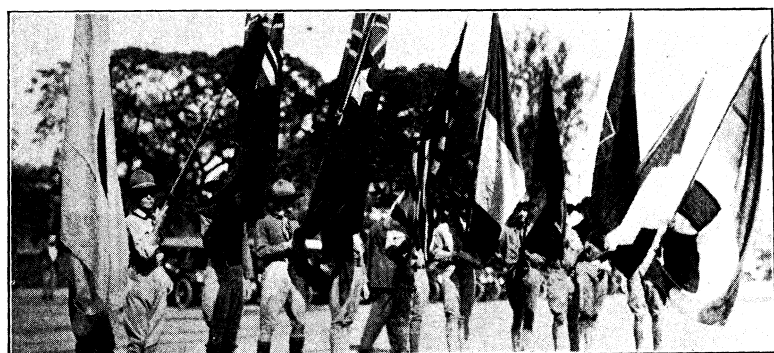
give them such comforts as soldiers appreciate after coming out of the trenches. Mrs. Hurst, in charge of this canteen, informed me that these two girls are among the best in France and their work has been greatly appreciated by the Red Cross and the soldiers."

When Miss Tenney's tour of service expired, she elected to remain in France and was for a while with the army of occupation in Germany. On her return to Hawaii she was elected an honorary member of Frederick Funston Post No. 94, Veterans of Foreign Wars, and on April 24, 1919, she was the recipient of honors from the Hawaiian Senate, an address of appreciation being given by Senator R. W. Shingle.

Shigehusa Kanda of Maui earned the distinction of having been the only Japanese Red Cross worker to reach France from the United States, and in addition was the only foreigner connected as a bona fide worker with the American Red Cross units there.

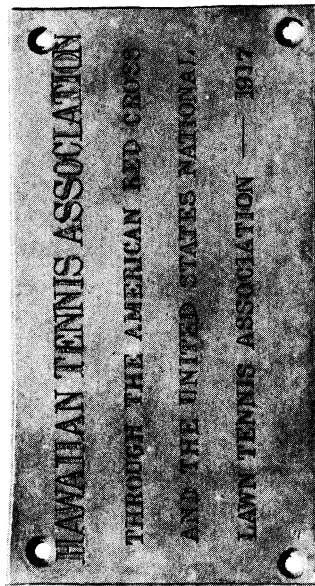
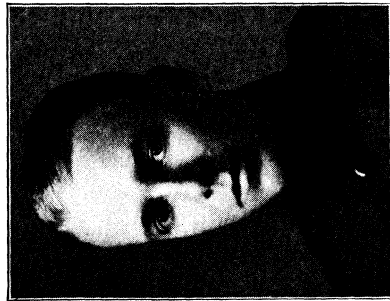
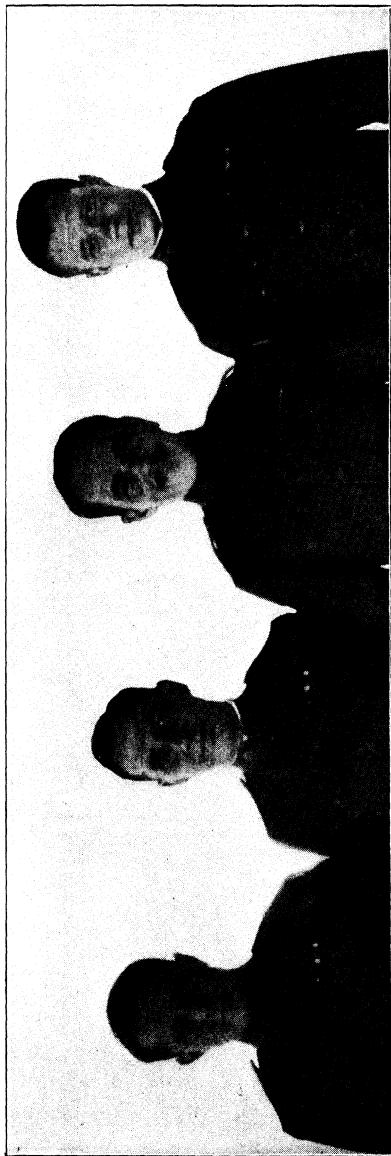
A native-born Japanese, and regarded as one of the able leaders of his race in the islands, Mr. Kanda, with his wife, was conducting the Wailuku Girls' Home when the United States entered the war; formerly he had been a Christian minister at Kohala, Hawaii. His decision to become a Red Cross worker in France was made because he felt it a duty to make some repayment to America for the advantages he had enjoyed under her flag for fourteen years; and also because he wished to show his four children the love he bore for the country of which they were citizens.

When Mr. Kanda's application for Red Cross service in France was refused at headquarters in Honolulu, he provided for his family and his school, conducted his own funeral, as is the custom of Japanese about to undergo a danger, and with the small sum remaining, left on May 7, 1918, for the mainland. In Washington his application was rejected by the state department; and after the British consul in New York had declined six times to allow him to go to England, the necessary vise was finally granted.



SOME OF THE GROUPS WHICH TOOK PART IN THE GREAT  
RED CROSS PARADE OF MAY 6, 1918

In center, Boy Scouts carrying flags of the Allies



A GROUP OF BOYS FROM HAWAII WHO DROVE AMBULANCES ON THE BATTLEFIELDS OF FRANCE

Above (left to right) : Francis H. I. Brown, William Wells, Federico Biven, William Noble.

Below, at left, H. Ernest Podmore; at right, Albert S. Bush; in center plate from ambulance donated by Hawaiian Tennis Assn.

Mr. Kanda left New York on July 5. In London the French consul refused seven times to allow him to go to France, except as a member of the Red Cross; and it was then that Major F. H. Rockwell brought the matter to the attention of Commissioner Gibson and after various inquiries made of Washington, he was finally accepted as a Red Cross worker.

He assisted at the Gare du Nord canteen in Paris, working for American soldiers and according to the *Red Cross Bulletin* of February 9, 1919, "deriving real pleasure not only from opening cans of jam but from scrubbing floors, washing dishes, doing anything and everything he can." "He is the most earnest, conscientious and faithful worker I have ever seen," said the director of the canteen.

Mr. Kanda continued in the canteen service from July, 1918, to July, 1919; and then returned to Hawaii, after a visit to friends in Japan. He wore a service ribbon with the two stars denoting a year's service overseas.

Joel B. Cox, county engineer of Maui and the son of Mr. and Mrs. Isaac M. Cox of Honolulu, sailed for France on the *Rochambeau* in February, 1918, as an engineer of the American Friends' Service Committee for reconstruction work in the war zone. He arrived at Bordeaux in March and was assigned to Chateau Hachette, Department of the Seine, where he constructed portable houses for refugees for use in connection with the American Red Cross tuberculosis hospital. In April he was at the Edward L. Trudeau Sanitarium at Malabry, surveying and laying out plans for a town to be turned back to the Department of the Seine for industrial workers. He was in Paris in May, as a member of a committee of experts who were working on plans for the reconstruction of the Verdun region, being also purchasing agent for the refugee huts and hospital at Sermaize. In June he worked on a geological map at the Ecole des Mines, the time from the sixth to the tenth being spent in serving food and clothing at the refugee station and in handling the wounded for Malabry Hospital. From July to January Mr. Cox was at Montceau Les Mines and sailed for the United States in February, 1919.

Miss Mary C. Alexander went to Europe in the latter part of 1918 and spent two years in a different sort of reconstruction work—teaching kindergarten and older children in the devastated area of France. For much of the time her work was in and around Lille, in some of the most ruined towns in that region—La Bassie, Lieven (where she had charge of the Jardin d'Enfants), Nieppe, Wavrin, etc. Miss Alexander returned to Honolulu in April, 1921.

#### AMBULANCE SERVICE

After the United States entered the war the United States Lawn Tennis Association undertook to equip and man three ambulance sections, and through the Hawaiian Lawn Tennis Association, of which A. L. Castle was president, a number of island players early signified a desire to enroll. Of the number, Francis I. Brown, Fedrico Biven, William K. Wells, Ernest Podmore, William Noble, Albert S. Bush, William Morgan, Allen Wilcox, and Joseph L. Silva qualified for the ambulance service at Allentown and all saw overseas service with the exception of Mr. Silva, who, after recovering from an attack of pneumonia, was adjudged not strong enough to go.

Messrs. Brown, Biven, Wells, Podmore, and Noble passed the army physical examination in Honolulu in the summer of 1917, were accepted for service, and went on to New York, where they arrived in the middle of September.

"Arrangements for their coming had been made by cable at a time when it was supposed that examinations for the first section would be held September 15," the October 15 issue of *American Lawn Tennis* explained. "There had been delay, however, in arranging the preliminaries, and when they reached New York there was no section for them to join. Lieutenant James Boyd of the New York Chapter of the American Red Cross, through which the National Association had been working, brought the matter to the attention of the Allentown authorities and because of their remarkable trip, the men were instructed to report at Allentown, where they were examined and enlisted.

No argument in their favor was needed when it became known that some of them closed their business affairs and started for New York on three days' notice. The military authorities took the position that men who wanted to join as badly as all that certainly ought to be accommodated."

The five were enlisted in the army ambulance service in a unit from Purdue University which later became known in the French army as Unit 598, S. S. U. (Section Sanitaire des Etats Unis). They left Allentown for New York on January 5, 1918, sailing for England by way of Halifax. On January 25 they were sent to a rest camp in Winchester, England. Mr. Podmore was detained there by illness, but on February 3, Messrs. Brown, Noble, Wells, and Biven were transferred to France, where they remained in the protected zone until April, when they were sent to Paris and were given ambulances.

April 2 found them at Breteuil, in northern France, where the German armies were making a desperate fight. The sixth of the month saw them at La Faloise, about five miles from the lines, and there they remained throughout the German offensive, carrying the wounded from the dressing station back to La Faloise and then to Beauvais, some fifty kilometers distant. Heavy shell fire kept them in that vicinity for three weeks, and then they moved south to Thury, near La Ferte Milon, where headquarters was established in a large cave made by the Germans. From La Ferte Milon the boys were sent to Verdun, where they remained for some time. On October 22, Mr. Podmore returned to the section. On the day after the armistice they were at La Capelle.

The unit, S. S. U., 598, was cited for valor in General Orders by the general commanding the French Army Corps, and in addition, its members were given war crosses for their individual valor. Having been assigned to service with the 9th Regiment of Infantry, 33rd Division, 17th Corps of the French Army, it had participated in seven of the major actions prior to the signing of the armistice.

Mr. Podmore was with the unit at the Somme defensive, the Montdidier-Noyon defensive, the Aisne-Marne offensive, the

Aisne-Oise offensive, and the Somme offensive; and after the armistice assisted in the evacuation of the wounded from the Somme-Aisne sector, and from the frontier.

Messrs. Biven, Brown, Wells, and Noble participated in the Somme and Aisne defensives, the Champagne-Marne and Montdidier-Noyon defensives, and the Aisne-Marne, Aisne-Oise, and Somme offensives. Each was given a Victory medal with eight bars, representing the seven battles and the defensive sector in which they participated.

The French "Citation for Valor" was conferred on Mr. Noble January 14, 1919, for supreme courage in the evacuation of the wounded from the first line trenches during the engagement at the Cemetery of Guny, August 30 to September 3, 1918, on citation by Lieutenant Colonel Becker who commanded the 9th Regiment during that action. He also received the French Croix de Guerre. Early in 1919 at the little village of Ivry on the Seine, Francis Brown, William Wells, and Federico Biven were decorated by General Petain, with the Croix de Guerre for bravery in action.

Albert S. Bush left Honolulu in October, 1917, en route for Allentown and was listed as a private in the first section regularly recruited by the Lawn Tennis Association—Section 603 of the United States Army Ambulance Service—which numbered forty-five men from all parts of the United States.

On June 13, 1918, following their period of training in this country, they sailed for Italy. Here the section was divided, the larger number going to France. "The reorganized Section 603 saw their first bit of service when they entered the St. Mihiel drive, September 12, 1918, with the Fifth Division of the United States Regulars. For six days after their entrance they carried out the casualties of that division. This work especially fitted them for their next assignment, which was in the Argonne.

"That section was sent into the Argonne September 26, 1918, with the 89th Division and continued throughout the entire Argonne-Meuse operations with that division. There they rendered the service which won for them a citation in general orders. . . .



"They were at Lagrange au Bois Farm when the armistice was signed, November 11, 1918, and left there a week later to go through Longwy, Luxemburg, Treves, and Prum. They were relieved at Prum on March 17, 1919," and started for Brest on their way home.

"Of the twelve ambulances with which the section started, eight lasted to the finish. The maximum mileage for one car was 11,000 miles. So heavy was the pressure under which the men worked that it was impossible to keep a record of the number of wounded men handled by them. From September 26, 1918, until the signing of the armistice the cars were in continuous operation, running twenty-four hours a day—the drivers working in shifts.

"Each member of Section 603 is entitled to wear a star with his Victory medal because of the citation won in the Argonne. They are also privileged to wear the battle clasps for the St. Mihiel and the Argonne-Meuse campaigns, the campaign clasp for Italy and France, the decoration for the Army of Occupation in Germany and the Italian war service ribbon by special decree of the Italian government."

Mr. Bush returned to Honolulu on June 11, 1919, having received his discharge on May 8. The ambulance which he drove was paid for by the Hawaiian Tennis Association through the National Lawn Tennis Association.

William Morgan left Honolulu on December 25, 1917, and was assigned to Section S. S. U. 634, spending most of his time with the Third French Army. During his sixteen months' service he participated in the Bois D'Aircourt defensive February 18 to April 2, 1918; the Somme offensive and defensive, and the Meuse-Argonne offensive, and was wounded by a high explosive shell on June 28, 1918. He was cited for bravery in October, 1918, by Marshal Petain and was given the Croix de Guerre with palm. He returned to Honolulu on April 23, 1919.

Several other Hawaii boys were in ambulance service in Europe. Allen C. Wilcox, inducted at Allentown, Pennsylvania, May 4, 1918, served overseas from July 9, 1918, to May 8, 1919, during all of the latter period being attached to Evacuation

Ambulance Company 7. Benjamin B. Henderson, a chemist with the Honolulu Plantation Company, enlisted in the National Army at Paris, France, October 24, 1917, and served throughout the remainder of the war in Army Ambulance Service Section 626. He was awarded the French Croix de Guerre. Manuel Cabral, a student at Yale University when the war broke out, went overseas with the Yale ambulance unit in the spring of 1917 and saw eighteen months' service. He was wounded in July, 1917, and gassed in the following month. Harry W. Frantz, formerly a linotype operator on the *Star-Bulletin*, went to France with the ambulance unit from Stanford University, most of his service being in the Balkans. He eventually transferred to other forms of Red Cross work.

#### EXECUTIVE OFFICERS

Mason F. Prosser, Olaf L. Sorenson, and Allen C. Robinson volunteered for service with the Red Cross in the spring of 1918, responding to a call from Washington, through the Hawaiian chapter, for three young men who would pay their own expenses and go to France. The three men arrived in Washington April 29 and reported for duty, and within a short time Mr. Prosser and Mr. Robinson were sent to Europe. Mr. Sorenson remained in Washington as director of the bureau of supplies of the Fourteenth Division.

Upon Mr. Prosser's arrival in France it was determined that he should go to Chaumont as assistant to Major Hugh Scott, liaison officer at general headquarters of the A. E. F. and should ultimately take Major Scott's place. In order to observe the various Red Cross activities with the army, Major Prosser made an extended trip through the north intermediate and eastern zones, arriving at Chaumont the first week in June. He began at once taking over the work and was given full charge in September. "He has done an extraordinarily effective piece of work," the *Red Cross Bulletin*, published in Paris by the American Red Cross, stated in its issue for December 21, 1918. "The information which he has been able to obtain has been of inesti-

mable value in planning our work with the army, and his high character and fine personality have gained strength and respect for the Red Cross at general headquarters." Mr. Prosser returned to Honolulu in March, 1919.

Mr. Robinson had a longer and more varied service overseas. He was first sent to England and stationed at the Red Cross hospital at Winchester, where he remained until after the armistice. He then volunteered to go with the Red Cross contingent attached to the Allied expedition sent into northern Russia, and served for some time at Archangel. Later he was for a considerable period at Reval on the Baltic sea, still in Red Cross service. While there, Captain Robinson contracted typhus fever and was sent to Paris to recuperate, after which he returned to Hawaii.

In regard to Mr. Sorenson's detention at Washington, Otis H. Cutler, manager of the Fourteenth Division, wrote to A. L. Castle: "I finally persuaded Mr. Sorenson, much against his will, that he could do the greater service for the Red Cross and for his country by remaining here in Washington and giving us a helping hand on the supplies than he could by going abroad. I think it was quite a shock to him, but I appreciate very deeply indeed the fine spirit he showed when he came around, after thinking it over for twenty-four hours, and told me that he would be willing to do whatever we thought best." Mr. Sorenson spent four months in Washington, and, on September 1, entered the Remount Service Training Camp at Camp Joseph E. Johnston, Florida. After the armistice he received a commission as captain in the quartermaster section of the officers' reserve corps.

Robbins B. Anderson offered his services for overseas work in December, 1917. He left Honolulu in the summer of 1918, becoming the director of development and associated director of military relief of the American Red Cross in Washington and also the legal adviser of the Fourteenth Division. Later he was appointed assistant manager of the division and in that capacity was acting manager for several months during Mr. Cutler's

absence at Geneva. He finally became manager for a short period, spending, in all, a year in Washington.

In June, 1918, Hon. G. R. Carter, former governor of the Territory, who had been asked to go to the Philippines as field director of Red Cross work, announced his intention of going to Washington first. "While I am glad to go anywhere to carry on this work, I really want to go to France," he explained, "and I am going to try to get a field directorship overseas."

Arriving in Washington, Mr. Carter spent six weeks as volunteer assistant to the Foreign Division of the American Red Cross and, after receiving his commission as captain (subsequently promoted to major), sailed from New York in September to report at Paris headquarters. There he was assigned to the Home and Hospital Service in charge of the American Red Cross center at Le Mars sur Allier, where a personnel of some five thousand cared for about 15,000 patients, and remained for about five months. During that period he was asked to take the position of liaison officer with station at the headquarters of General Pershing, but, though he did not underestimate the distinction thus conferred upon him, he declined it, feeling that he could be of more service at the hospital center. His work at Le Mars received high praise from medical officers of the United States army. Colonel George A. Skinner wrote:

"I was so impressed with the success of the Red Cross work here on Christmas that I feel sure you will be interested to know what a splendid day they made possible for all the members of the hospital center and for hundreds of children from the surrounding villages and farms. Captain Carter's organization and the unremitting work of all his personnel made one of the best Christmases I have ever known in a military organization."

In February, 1919, Mr. Carter was placed in charge of Red Cross activities in Le Mans in the Sarthe district which, owing to the heavy congestion at Brest, served as a substation or preliminary embarkation center. Canteens were erected and conducted there all day and all night and soldiers detrain- ing and

entraining at that point were served with coffee and sandwiches, cared for if sick, and their clothes disinfected. Over 250,000 men passed through Le Mans and, frequently, from 1,500 to 5,000 were served in the canteens in twenty-four hours.

Personal commendation was extended to Major Carter by General Pershing, who pronounced the Red Cross canteen for casuals at Le Mans one of the most unique organizations in France, and complimented the regional director on its success.

Mr. Carter's service extended from September, 1918, to November, 1919, and in recognition of his work he received the "Medaille de la Reconnaissance Francaise."

Fred L. Waldron, Honolulu businessman and former president of the Chamber of Commerce, volunteered for Red Cross service in the summer of 1918. At the beginning of October he was accepted for overseas duty and went immediately to Washington, where he was assigned to inspection work in France with the rank of captain. He was on the high seas seven days out of New York for Liverpool when the armistice was signed, arriving at Paris on November 17.

A letter from the bureau of personnel of the American Red Cross in Paris, dated November 30, explained the situation. "This is to advise you that the position for which you came to France was abolished before your arrival on account of the armistice being signed. . . . We want you to feel that you did your full duty in coming over here and it is through no fault of your own that we are obliged to ask you to return at this time." Mr. Waldron returned at once to the United States, secured his discharge, and started for home, arriving in Honolulu on January 10, 1919.

## **II. In Siberia**

### **WHY THE RED CROSS WENT INTO SIBERIA**

Red Cross work in the vast field of Siberia and adjacent parts of Asia formed one of Hawaii's most notable contributions to war-time activities. To this field Hawaii sent some thirty Red Cross men and women. Their work of relief and

reconstruction extended over a period beginning in September, 1918, and ending in July, 1921.

Siberia was a unique arena of world war action. It saw relatively little of the war until 1918—four years after its beginning. Then suddenly Siberia loomed large in the headlines of newspapers and in the contending strategy of Allied and Central Powers. Russia had broken down as one of the Allied Powers, and chaos had taken the place of the Czar's armies on the European fronts. The downfall of Nicholas II had been succeeded by the short, ill-starred Kerensky regime; then came the victory of the "Red Guards" and the ascendancy of Bolshevism. Lenin made peace with the Central Powers at Brest-Litovsk, and by early winter of 1917-18 Russia was "out of it" so far as fighting the Germans was concerned. The Soviet government was set up at Petrograd (now named Leningrad) and millions of Russian soldiers began streaming homeward from battlefields and trenches. Simultaneously, the terrific disorganization of all Russian life brought disease and famine sweeping through European Russia—evil heritage of a mismanaged military effort.

In this profound chaos over an immense country there were two definite things under way: First, the remaking of a government, now in the hands of ruthless, determined men and women who formed the backbone of the Soviet element; second, the spectacular "drive" of a hastily formed Czecho-Slovak army through European Russia and Siberia toward the far eastern coast of Asia.

This expedition of the Czechs is one of the magnificent stories of the world war. Most of the Czechs originally were under Austrian rule; a few under the Germans. They had been drafted into the armies of the Central Powers, though they hated their dominating masters, the Austrians, and sought every means to free Bohemia from Austrian lordship. And so, from the outbreak of hostilities in 1914, Czechs and Slovaks had found what means they could of quitting the Austrian and German armies on the Russian fronts, and going over to the Slavs.

As Austrian control weakened in 1917 and early 1918, they went over not merely as individuals but in great numbers. By spring of 1918 not less than 60,000 were on Russian soil, eager to join the Allies and fight against Germany and Austria for the freedom of Bohemia.

In the spring and summer of 1918 these Czecho-Slovaks from many parts of the Russian front worked their way together, and were virtually mobilized into an army—strung out over hundreds of miles of railway. They wanted to go over the trans-Siberian railway to Vladivostok, take ship to France, and join the Allies. It was a desire in which the Allies joined. Russia could no longer fight the Germans. The eastern front was gone. These Czechs, brave, experienced and patriotic, were really allies of the Allies. The Soviet government knew this, and strove by diplomacy and procrastination to delay their departure from Siberia.

There came a time when the intention of the "Reds" to hold the Czechs in Siberia was apparent. Then the Czechs moved. One day, with lightning rapidity, they swept into quick action, seized a part of the trans-Siberian railway, captured trains, guns, stations, munitions, and began their famous drive toward the Pacific Ocean. They were then more than 6,000 miles from their goal, opposed by the Soviet government, in a foreign and not altogether friendly country. But they began their expedition toward Vladivostok, and the Allies, including the United States, declared their readiness to help them. This declaration was followed by practical measures.

Such was the situation in 1918 when Red Cross men and women were called to Siberia from Hawaii. The status of Russia—broken and desperate; the story of the Czechs—fighting their way through Siberia—these must be clearly realized in order to understand why the American Red Cross entered Siberia at all, and why, once there, its task was so colossal and so long-continued.

American troops went into Siberia in the early fall of 1918. The three principal reasons for American military participation

in this area were announced as follows: To give support and succor to the Czechs, as a military expedition fighting for Allied principles; to keep open the long line of the trans-Siberian railway; to render relief to and aid in the rehabilitation of the civil population, which was suffering from disease and other maladies.

Our government desired that the Red Cross should maintain in Siberia the same friendly service it was rendering to American armies in France. And the expert service of the Red Cross in affording relief to the civil population was also needed. Further, the Red Cross, it was felt, could be of substantial aid to the Czechs, particularly in their hospital and medical departments. So the leaders in Washington decided to send Red Cross workers into Siberia. This decision came with the same suddenness as the decision to send an American military expedition into that far country. Nearly every experienced Red Cross field worker was either in France or in necessary work in the states. Hence a call was sent out to the Americans in the Far East—Japan, China, Korea, the Philippines. And the call was quickly answered.

#### EARLY ORGANIZATION

Dr. Rudolph Bolling Teusler, superintendent of St. Luke's Hospital, Tokio, a man of high professional standing and wide experience in Far Eastern affairs generally, was chosen as the chief. He accepted appointment as commissioner for Siberia with the rank of colonel, picked out two or three men in Tokio to accompany him, and left for Vladivostok to make a preliminary survey of conditions and needs.

Meanwhile the larger organization of the American Red Cross was busy making plans in cooperation with the war department. As early as July 23, 1918, there had been direct intimation that the war department planned to dispatch an army to Siberia. On that date a cablegram came to the Hawaiian chapter, stating that a recommendation had been made to the secretary of war by O. H. Cutler, director of the Fourteenth Division,



that Hawaii be given the duty of establishing the first Red Cross base hospital in Siberia. A. L. Castle was then en route to Washington on Red Cross matters. Harry Macfarlane, acting secretary of the Hawaiian chapter, communicated the cablegram to Mr. Castle. There was high enthusiasm here over the possibility. The islands looked upon it as an honor resulting in part from Hawaii's notable record in Liberty Bond purchases, Red Cross donations, and patriotic drives and campaigns of every description.

Upon Mr. Castle's return early in September, he announced that it was probable that all future work done by the Hawaiian chapter would be sent to Siberia and that he had been appointed field representative of the Fourteenth Division for Hawaii and the Far East and would go there to assist in organization work. He urged that interested persons apply for Siberian service as soon as possible, stating that he was sure Hawaii would receive recognition and that, owing to her location, she would probably furnish more persons than the mainland. Mr. Castle left for Siberia the latter part of September. He had been commissioned as major and one of the chief duties in prospect was to co-ordinate the chapter work in the Fourteenth Division with the field work in Siberia. This he did with marked ability.

Colonel Teusler, the commissioner for Siberia, accompanied by E. W. Frazar, one of Japan's foremost American businessmen, and G. S. Phelps, executive secretary of the Japan chapter of the American Red Cross, arrived in Vladivostok about the end of July to make their survey. They found ample evidence that Red Cross service was needed. While the main body of the Czecho-Slovak forces were still in far western Siberia, thousands of miles from Vladivostok, a few "echelons" (military trains) had come through, fighting as they came. The first of these trains invaded and captured the city of Vladivostok, driving out the "Reds," and then turned the city over to the Russian civil government. Many Czechs, wounded and diseased, were in Vladivostok. A large number had been taken care of by the only American medical service then available—the medical staff

and men of the U. S. S. *Brooklyn*, which was lying at anchor in the harbor. A warehouse on the waterfront had been fitted up as a temporary hospital.

The first official meetings of the Red Cross in Siberia were held on the *Brooklyn*. The three men from Japan were joined by C. L. Preston, an American businessman sent to Vladivostok previously on a private mission. These first meetings showed that the United States had a great opportunity as well as a duty in Siberia. The Czechs—virtual allies—were almost without hospital facilities. They were strung out over thousands of miles of railway, already fighting rear-guard actions with the Russian Reds pressing them from behind in the Ural mountains. They were living in box cars and shacks, and their trains of wounded were creeping slowly over Siberia toward the one seaport of escape from Russia — Vladivostok. Vladivostok was rapidly filling, too, with desperate refugees of many European and Asiatic races, and epidemic disease was starting.

Colonel Teusler cabled the situation to the Red Cross in Washington. Fortunately, almost from the beginning, it was realized that there was a big job ahead, and the new commissioner was authorized to lay plans for a large hospital and extensive relief work.

Immediately calls went out to the Red Cross chapters of the Pacific area to send doctors and nurses. Nearest at hand were those of Japan; next, Korea and China; beyond them, the Philippines and Hawaii. From his own hospital in Tokio Colonel Teusler called such as could be spared. His superintendent of nurses, Mrs. Alice St. John, brought a group of Japanese doctors and nurses as a temporary and emergency contribution and these were the first organized unit to reach Vladivostok. Then the mission hospitals of Japan, China, and Korea, manned by Americans, responded nobly. They sent doctors and nurses, mostly on six months' duty. The Japanese then returned to St. Luke's and from that time on, for nearly three years, Americans predominated in the commission's work.

Major Castle reached Vladivostok while this organization

work was in progress. It was evident that even larger forces must be summoned. A series of calls came to the Hawaiian chapter, and from early September until well into the following year, 1919, Hawaii contributed men and women to the Siberian service. Later in the life of the Siberian commission, when its work had expanded greatly, the majority of its recruits were obtained from continental United States—many of them men and women who had returned from France after the signing of the armistice. But it is important to recall that in the early organization and the first winter's work of the Red Cross in Siberia, Hawaii played a prominent and useful part; and that the activities of Hawaii's volunteers continued throughout the entire term of American Red Cross activities in that country.

#### SCOPE OF THE SIBERIAN WORK

The United States sent something more than 10,000 soldiers to Siberia. They were there from the autumn of 1918 until April, 1920. They were scattered over thousands of miles of country, principally along the trans-Siberian railway. Service to them was one of the main features of Red Cross work. Service to the Czechs was another. Slowly the Czechs worked their way eastward, to Vladivostok. They moved over the half-manned Siberian railway lines in long echelons of box cars. Their sick and wounded came out by hastily-constructed hospital trains. It was not until well along in 1920 that the Czecho-Slovak forces evacuated Siberia, going back to their beloved homeland. The American Red Cross sent them hospital and relief supplies by the train-load, gave them expert medical and dental service in special cars, and provided medical and nursing units to accompany their transports of sick and wounded from Vladivostok to Trieste. Most of this was done without cost to the Czechs; the only charge made was in cases where, through the Red Cross, the Czech government bought supplies in America or Japan and took delivery in Siberia.

No less notable was the Red Cross contribution to civil relief. Not one but more than fifteen trains, laden with hundreds of

thousands of dollars' worth of medical, clothing, food, and other supplies went from the great Vladivostok warehouses into the interior for distribution to the civilian population. Hospitals were set up; disinfection stations; anti-typhus trains; clinics and rehabilitation bureaus; schools and orphanages and dispensaries.

Perhaps the greatest single enemy fought by the Red Cross in Siberia was the typhus fever. This dread disease—the same that had wrecked Napoleon's expedition to Moscow—was all over Russia. Both the "white" and "red" armies were suffering, and tens of thousands of refugees and Russians crowded the hospitals and rudely-constructed hospital trains. From the beginning of its tour of duty in Siberia, the Red Cross fought typhus and over great stretches of country conquered it and freed cities and towns of its terrible menace. While that fight was won, it was not without sacrifice. More than ten of the Red Cross personnel caught the fever; five gave up their lives; others missed death very narrowly.

The Siberian Commission of the American Red Cross had a larger field of action than any other Red Cross group. Its "eastern front" was on the Japan sea; its "western front" in European Russia. There were more than 6,000 miles between its eastern and western outposts; and it operated relief trains over more than 10,000 miles of track. Its expenditures totalled more than \$20,000,000; and from first to last, its American personnel numbered some five hundred; its Russian and other native personnel twice or three times that number.

Its first task was to succor the Czech wounded at Vladivostok; its last was to repatriate many thousand war prisoners who had been lost and almost forgotten in the vastness of Siberia. By that time the war was over, and "the Greatest Mother in the World" took into her kindly care the helpless and destitute, the suffering and almost hopeless men of all nationalities who were prisoners or ex-prisoners of war, and helped them to the long-lost homeland. Czechs and Poles, Germans and Austrians, Turks and Bulgarians—all the flotsam of war which somehow had drifted into the great, gloomy Siberian camps—they were

put on steamers at Vladivostok, supplied with food and clothing and medicine, and sent on their way rejoicing.

Hawaii's Red Cross men and women were a part of all this work.

#### LONG LINE OF ACTIVITY

When Major Castle arrived at Vladivostok from Honolulu, he immediately sent to Washington requests for a great amount of relief supplies for the Czechs, and to the Fourteenth Division chapters a call for renewed effort and for quick dispatch of chapter products. The chapters contributed faithfully and generously in personnel, money, and supplies, and the relief given over that vast territory was made possible quite as much by their assistance as by the active service of persons in the field.

From Vladivostok the Red Cross "line of action" stretched steadily and rapidly westward. It was necessary to establish a chain of hospitals and relief stations, to be supplied by trains operating from the big warehouses at Vladivostok. These warehouses, in turn, were supplied from ships carrying Red Cross materials either from San Francisco, or, as sometimes happened, all the way from New York. By the first part of 1919 the Siberian Commission had extended its activities from Vladivostok to the Ural mountain district, a distance of more than 4,000 miles, meeting appeals for hospital attendance, clothing, food, and many other necessities in a winter climate ranging from 20 to 60 degrees below zero and in the midst of an almost utter breakdown in railway transportation — disorganization of the trans-Siberian railroad so complete that, for weeks at a time, not a relief train could be moved from the port city toward the west.

The administrative organization changed to meet the new needs. As finally set up, it had an eastern, central, and western division, with headquarters respectively at Vladivostok, Irkutsk, and Omsk. Each division was under a division manager. The commissioner and main executive committee at Vladivostok were in general charge. The commissioner made frequent trips across Siberia.

At the first of January, 1919, the Siberian commission's organization included the finance committee; the department of military affairs, which was sub-divided into a medical bureau and a section of military relief; a department of civil affairs; a department of administration, which included the bureau of the secretary-general, the bureau of the treasurer, the bureau of supplies, and the bureau of accounts and auditing.

In February, 1919, national headquarters at Washington sent a commission to survey the entire work of the Red Cross in Siberia. This commission, after a railroad trip of more than 12,000 miles, decided that both the personnel and the scope of the work should be immediately and greatly expanded, and that the commission had at least another year of duty ahead of it. The work already done and the organization and personnel that had done it were highly praised.

This recommendation was followed by the dispatch of several score doctors and more than 150 nurses and clerical workers from the states to Siberia, and the shipping of a much larger quantity of relief supplies than had at first been expected. Many more hospitals and relief stations of various kinds were opened. Repatriation work was then begun on a considerable scale.

#### HAWAII VOLUNTEERS

Many of Hawaii's citizens volunteered for work in the Far East. The first call came September 9, when medical men were summoned. It was then planned to get doctors to the Red Cross hospitals in Siberia as soon as possible. This was followed almost immediately by a call for men who could handle various phases of relief work. Early in September Henry P. Beckley, who had been in Red Cross field work in Honolulu, was notified to hold himself in readiness to sail for Siberia. On October 16, Rudolph Bukeley, cashier of the First National Bank of Hawaii, was notified that he was to serve with the Siberian Commission and on the eighteenth, Seabury T. Short, then in Red Cross service at Schofield Barracks, was named. Passports were ob-

tained in record time and Mr. Bukeley and Mr. Short sailed for Siberia on October 27.

In the meantime, Major Castle had arrived in Vladivostok and calls for Hawaii workers then came in rapidly. On the morning of November 15, the first large "Hawaii unit" sailed from Honolulu on the *Shinyo Maru*. It was composed of Drs. A. F. Jackson and W. D. Baldwin; Riley H. Allen, Henry P. Beckley, J. J. Siler, H. A. Walker; Misses Fanny Kuhlig and Lillian Fitzpatrick, nurses; Mrs. M. F. Prosser, Misses Lillian Welch, Alice Lynes, Anna L. Winslow, and Ruth Benedict, refugee workers; Misses Florence Hoffman and Sarah Mathews, nurses' aids; Miss Jeanette Searight, clerical worker. This first Honolulu party broke all records in reaching Vladivostok, making the trip in twelve days elapsed time. On arrival there, shortly before noon on Thanksgiving Day, the members from Hawaii were supplied with heavy fur-lined coats, arctic overshoes, mittens, fur caps and other warm clothing.

The second large unit from Hawaii sailed on the *Venezuela* November 30. It was composed of the Misses Janet Dewar, Mabel Doub, Chestain Johnston, Elizabeth McMenamin, Helen Kingsbury, and Christine Kemp, nurses. At various times during the spring of 1919 the following additional Red Cross workers went from Hawaii to Siberia: Leslie Scott, the Misses Reba L. Dobson, Elizabeth Hennessey, Alice R. McCalla, and Mary C. Markham, nurses; and Mrs. Doris E. Paris, nurse's aid.

Ward D. Walker of Maui was sent to the Siberian Commission in December, 1919. He had previously seen service with the American army on the Mexican border, and after demobilization had volunteered for Red Cross work. He was assigned, in the spring of 1920, to supervise the fitting up of a special steamer to repatriate the "Petrograd Children's Colony," the story of which will be told hereafter.

On September 9, 1918, Attorney John A. Matthewman, who had gone from Hawaii to Seoul, Korea, on legal business, sent a cablegram to C. R. Hemenway of Honolulu that he had been

made chief of the legal and publicity departments of the Red Cross. He was then in Vladivostok, having arrived September 6, and was appointed upon his volunteering to be of what assistance he could to the newly formed Siberian Commission. He went to Harbin, Manchuria, where hospital and relief work was maintained for the Czech forces passing through that city on their way to Vladivostok. Refugee work was also done at Harbin, and the American consul and American residents there were active in their cooperation with the Red Cross. Mr. Matthewman was called back to Honolulu on private affairs and returned here December 23.

A former resident of Hawaii for many years, the Rev. Dr. Doremus Scudder, had volunteered from Japan, where he was then in the ministry, and went to Siberia early in November, 1918. He became director of refugee relief and took a relief train through the Ural mountains to Ufa, European Russia.

These men and women from Hawaii worked in all departments of the Siberian Commission's organization and in all parts of its immense field of activity. This can be illustrated by going through the various divisions of the work and noting the service rendered by the Hawaiian personnel.

#### FINANCE COMMITTEE

The first finance committee of the Siberian Commission was organized aboard the U. S. S. *Brooklyn* on September 23 with Captain Althouse of the cruiser as chairman, and when the vessel left Vladivostok in October, Dr. R. B. Teusler succeeded the captain in office. The membership of the committee changed from time to time. At various periods A. L. Castle, Dr. Doremus Scudder, S. T. Short, and Riley H. Allen served on the committee. It eventually became the executive committee, composed of the commissioner and the department chiefs.

#### DEPARTMENT OF MILITARY AFFAIRS: (A) MEDICAL BUREAU

The medical bureau of the department of military affairs was organized under the supervision of Dr. R. B. Teusler, director



of the department. Miss Searight acted as his secretary. Dr. F. P. Manget of China was director for eastern Siberia, having the supervision of hospitals, hospital supply service, nursing, ambulances, field units, and sanitary trains; he also represented the western Siberian section at Vladivostok in collecting and forwarding supplies and meeting the demands of that field. Dr. F. E. Dilley of Peking was director of the western Siberian section, with headquarters at Omsk. At that time (end of 1918) the central division had not been formed.

The first medical work of the American Red Cross in Siberia was attention to wounded Czechs during the fighting between the Czechs and the Bolsheviks for the possession of Vladivostok. Russian Island Hospital was opened in the latter part of July, 1918; and in the succeeding months of the year a string of hospitals, anti-typhus stations, and dental clinics was established, stretching from the Pacific coast to the Ural mountains, the principal ones being at Vladivostok, Nikolsk, Harbin, Buchedu, Petropavlovsk, Omsk, Tumen, Cheliabinsk, and Ekaterinberg. In addition, there were put into operation a hospital train and an anti-typhus train; and equipment and supplies were being furnished to a number of Russian and Czech hospitals.

When thirty-three cases of typhus appeared at the Vladivostok city jail just before the close of the year, H. A. Walker of Honolulu superintended the fitting up of an unused hospital building in the jail, isolating the cases and establishing thorough sanitary measures for all inmates and the jail itself, and finally organized a thirty-bed hospital to care for further cases.

### "THE TRAIN OF DEATH"

In November, 1918, the arrival of a train of political prisoners at Nikolsk, sixty-five miles from Vladivostok, with typhus cases discovered on the train first brought home to the Allied forces the possibility of a typhus epidemic with serious results to the military organization. The American Red Cross was the first agency to receive an appeal.

"We of the American Red Cross were sitting at ease in our barracks at Vladivostok," Rudolph Bukeley of Honolulu wrote in his diary, "when Major A. L. Castle received a telegram, signed by Lieutenant-Colonel Aladar, of the 2nd Hungarian Transport of Austro-Hungarian prisoners, asking us 'in the name of humanity to help them.' . . . At the same station were four red-blooded Yanks, members of the Russian Railway Service, Lieutenants Best, Foster, Hoskins and Trafton, who of their own initiative sent us the following telegram:

"'One hundred fifty prisoners here which were unloaded today sick—been lying on the ground all day, no food or medical attention. Suggest you send representative here to investigate conditions. They are to be taken to the camp here. Men dying daily.'"

In a letter to his sister, dated at Vladivostok on November 19, Major Castle explains what was done: "I immediately dispatched Bukeley and Scudder with Doctor Manget. They say the sights were terrible—wretched emaciated creatures, simply caked in filth and absolutely starving. They were all in little box cars and at the window of one car appeared the faces of a little boy and a girl. They were supposed Bolsheviks—some probably were and some were not. At any rate we have taken the matter up with the Russian authorities and I believe the sick will be moved into a hospital where the Red Cross can aid; while the others we will assist for humanity's sake. Bukeley is still up there at a German and Austrian camp. This is his first experience, so after seeing a little, he met one fellow in rags and promptly pulled off his sweater and gave it to him."

A second letter, dated November 22, goes on: "Bukeley and Rosett will be back Sunday morning from Nikolsk, after their terrible experience with the death train. We borrowed Doctor Rosett from the Committee on Public Information. Bukeley has done good work with the doctor. They have bathed and shaved nearly 500 unfortunates, getting them into a small building, well heated, called a hospital. The remaining 860 in the

train will be scrubbed, clothing given them and put into clean cars. Then they will have at least a fighting chance.

"There have been several deaths from typhus and over 100 cases of dysentery. Out of the 1,300 surviving of the 2,100 who left Samara [about two months ago], I believe we can save 700 or 800. It was at least worth the effort. I sent up special clothing for the two children and asked Bukeley to get the authorities to let us have them for our refugee barracks. I am afraid he won't succeed.

"In at least one town in Russia the name of the American Red Cross will be known forever. After the unfortunate sick were actually put into the hospital, clad in their clean pajamas, when our representatives would enter they would try to show their thankfulness and often, crossing themselves, would say in Russian, 'May the Good Jesus bless you.' The same was true of the town itself, the townspeople showing the utmost friendliness."

In his account of this experience at Nikolsk, Mr. Bukeley wrote: "I have just opened the first case of pajamas, and it came from the Hawaiian Chapter of the American Red Cross. . . . Inside are warm flannel pajamas, beautifully made, each with a little handkerchief in the pocket and flannel Red Cross sewed on the coat.

"All the weary hours that you have spent during the past four years, working day after day in your uncomfortable quarters in the heat and discomfort of the summer months, would seem as nothing, had you shared with me the privilege of seeing those garments, made and sewed by your loving hands, clothe the bodies of these poor, emaciated wrecks, in lieu of the vermin-covered rags that even now are burning in the yard. When they saw the Red Cross on the coat, many of them broke down and cried . . .

"Tomorrow when this train pulls out, it will have over nine hundred Red Crosses on it. I still call it the *Train of Death*, for there is no use disguising the fact that these people nearly all are

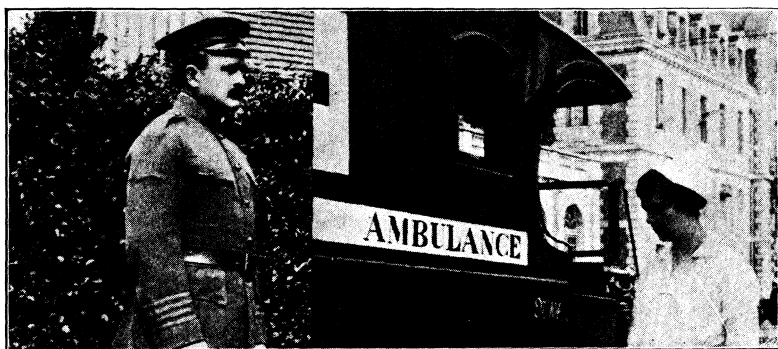
going to die within the next few weeks, and once more there will be rotting corpses thrown out of the cars each day."

#### INTER-ALLIED ANTI-TYPHUS EXPEDITION TO WESTERN SIBERIA

The appalling possibilities of a widespread typhus epidemic led the Inter-Allied Sanitary Commission, made up of the senior medical officers of the Allied forces, to recommend to the Allied generals the outfitting of a special train to fight typhus and clean up whole communities. The first report of the Siberian Commission says: "The Allied generals concurring in the scheme, also placed the undertaking in the hands of the Red Cross, whose staff immediately began to build the train. The story of the building and equipping of this train out of scant material and under many labor difficulties is a notable example of ingenuity, energy and persistence. The train as complete includes bath cars, boiler car, tank car, sterilizing cars, undressing cars, car for hair-clipping, etc. This train will operate along the trans-Siberian lines. It will be educational as well as immediately palliative. It will go into infected districts and the staff will demonstrate modern methods of fighting against the congestion and filth which open the way to typhus epidemic."

The train was placed under command of Captain F. A. Dallyn of the Canadian Expeditionary Force, with Captain Rudolph Bukeley as business manager, and Dr. A. F. Jackson as medical adviser. The entire personnel of the train when it left Vladivostok consisted of thirty-one men.

The train finally left Vladivostok on February 2, 1919, under the direction of Captain Dallyn and, when he contracted typhus two months later, Captain Bukeley became director, while still retaining his position as business manager. Dr. Jackson joined the expedition at Buchedu on February 9 and remained with the train until he was detached on May 1 and ordered to Omsk to take charge of the Red Cross hospital there. During the trip seventeen of the personnel became infected with typhus and



DR. AND MRS. JAMES R. JUDD  
In Service with the American Ambulance in France



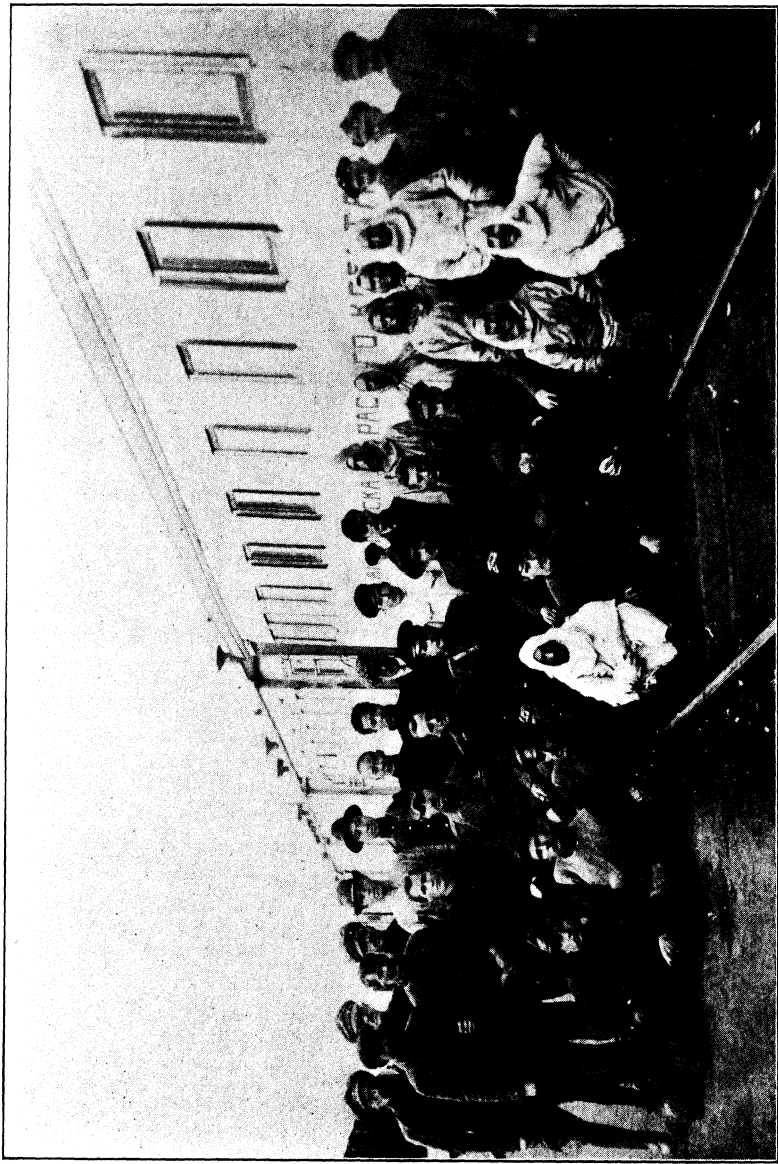
PART OF FIRST LARGE GROUP OF RED CROSS WORKERS  
WHO WENT FROM HAWAII TO SIBERIA

Left to right: Dr. A. F. Jackson, Dr. W. D. Baldwin, J. J. Siler,  
Miss Alice Lynes, Henry P. Beckley, Miss Florence Hoffman,  
H. A. Walker, Riley H. Allen



GROUP OF RED CROSS NURSES WHO WENT FROM  
HAWAII TO SIBERIA

Left to right: Miss Janet Dewar, Chestain Johnston, Lillian Fitzpatrick,  
Fanny Kuhlig, Helen Kingsbury, Mabel Doub, Elizabeth McMenamin



# PERSONNEL OF ALLIED ANTI-TYPHUS EXPEDITION IN WESTERN SIBERIA

(Taken at Kourgan, May 9, 1919)

Sitting (left to right) : Nikolai Dgeppo (Russian), Feldscher; Dr. Bogdan Gregorian (Armenian), Assistant doctor; Dr. Johannes Bauer (Swede), Assistant doctor; Captain Rudolph Bukeley (American), Officer in command; Lieut. Francis Connor (Australian), Supply officer; Vassili Muller (Russian), interpreter; Sergt. Teodor Brok (Czecho-Slovak), Transportation.

were either treated on the train or sent back to the American Red Cross hospital at Petropavlosk, some 600 miles in the rear.

After the train got into western Siberia much of the work consisted of bathing Czech soldiers and members of Admiral Kolchak's anti-Bolshevik army and disinfecting their clothing in order to rid them of lice. Captain Bukeley's report shows that in nine consecutive days from March 23 to April 2 they bathed 1,908 men. The following extracts are taken from his diary.

[Kourgan, May 5.] "Today we are bathing more of the sick men from Urgomish and Mishkino, so that our figures only run 109, but this is the best day's work that Baturin has accomplished, and I am very proud of the results. Every man has had to be handled personally, lifted from stretchers into the bath-cars, undressed, washed, re-dressed in fresh underclothes, and then lifted back on the stretcher to a waiting cart, which takes him to the Military Hospital, where for the first time in the history of Kourgan, the patients are received clean, lice-free, with their hair clipped, and with clean underclothes."

[May 7.] "Today bathed 999 men, our record day; the men are all very proud of their achievement, and much amused because I won't let them start the plant going again, and send out for one more man to bathe and delouse. . . . A telegram has just come from Colonel Teusler, ordering the train to Omsk, and instructing me to report immediately to Vladivostok. . . . I shall leave immediately, but Connor will run the train for another ten days, in order that we may keep the promises made to General Kappel."

[May 9.] "Today we bathed and deloused 840 men, making a total of 12,099 since the Expedition started, and I believe that Connor will bring this to over 15,000 before he brings the train back."

In recognition of his service on this expedition Captain Bukeley received the thanks of the Russian Siberian government through its minister of war, General Stepanoff. He received a citation from General Kappel, commanding the first Volga "storm" troops

at Kourgan, Urgomish, and Mishkino, and the thanks of the British Military Mission at Omsk, the French Military Mission at Novo Nikolaievsk, and the Czecho-Slovak Mission at Vladivostok. Later he received the thanks and special mention from the Siberian Commission of the American Red Cross.

#### WORK OF DOCTORS, NURSES, AND NURSES' AIDES

Almost as soon as the Hawaiian contingent reached Vladivostok a number of its members received assignments for duty in the hospitals. Dr. Baldwin was given the job of establishing and superintending a Refugee Hospital at Vladivostok and Miss Dewar and Miss Kingsbury were detailed to assist him. The Misses Kemp, Johnston, Fitzpatrick, Kuhlig, McMenamin, and Doub were sent, temporarily, to Russian Island Hospital. Dr. Jackson was placed in charge of the Tubercular Hospital at Buchedu in Manchuria, and Miss Hoffman and Miss Lynes went with him to that place. A letter from Dr. Jackson, dated January 3, 1919, describes the situation there.

"Now about our hospital—we have two buildings, formerly Russian barracks. The staff lives in one and the patients in the other. We have about 132 patients, almost all Czechs. Working with me is a Lettish doctor, a head nurse from Philadelphia, an English stenographer, Miss Hoffman as nurses' aid, a Russian and a Polish nurse. We have Czech orderlies, two German prisoners to do the heavy labor, a Chinese cook and a Russian washwoman. The languages spoken here would mystify you. For instance, Miss Lynes is an English woman and has to speak German to the Chinese cook. Miss Hoffman said today that she carried on an extensive conversation with a Czech patient by using a few English words, some Russian, German and French. Nearly all of the Czechs speak Russian, half of them speak German and as that is the only language they and some of the workers know, we speak that most of the time.

"When we came here we found an awful state of affairs. I can't go into great details but suffice to say that drinking and disorder were rife. There were two English nurses here who



held the fort as long as they could and said we arrived in the nick of time, as they had decided to pack their trunks and leave for Vladivostok. Things are now straightening out nicely. . . . Miss Hoffman is doing fine work. The patients are very fond of her and will do anything for her."

Miss Hoffman also speaks in her letters of the primitive hospital facilities at Buchedu. "This hospital was in the most terrible mess when we arrived—in fact still is, though things are getting more ship-shape now. We are short of everything. Just think, there is not a hot water bag in the place except our own personal ones. There is only one eye dropper and one medicine measure. Talk about primitive—I don't believe that any hospital in France ever was so badly equipped as we are. We are short of sheets and towels and mattresses. Some of the patients have no mattresses but sleep on canvas cots with a sort of comforter underneath. We can't get enough water and the plumbing facilities are awful. Those are only a few of the problems that we have to face."

Buchedu Hospital was evacuated on February 2 and a speech of thanks made by the 104 tubercular Czech patients showed their great appreciation of the work of the personnel:

"During the whole time that we have been here we have seen your happy, cheerful faces, glowing with kindness and patience for us all and we have witnessed your sacrifice and great endeavors to help us at all times in the fight against this treacherous disease. Nearly all of us men are worn out from the horrors of war, having been so many times disappointed—so many times betrayed, we beg of you to excuse us, to forgive us; for the hours that we have passed in your hospital will stand out in our lives as the best that we have spent either in Russia or Siberia. Nowhere have we been understood so well, or treated with so much patience, as by you, doctors and nurses. Nowhere has any stranger spoken such honest words to us, as here. . . . We thank the American Red Cross for everything that has been given us and for what we now have, and we all say in unison, 'Nasda.'"

After the evacuation of the hospital at Buchedu, Dr. Jackson, as already noted, was attached to the Allied Anti-Typhus Train until the first of May and then placed in charge of the Red Cross Hospital at Omsk, where he remained until the advance of the Bolsheviks made it necessary to evacuate. Appreciation of the work done by Dr. Jackson was expressed by Brigadier General Archibald Jack, C. M. G., C. B. E., who passed through Honolulu in November, 1919, after eighteen months' service as head of the British railway mission in Siberia.

"Dr. Jackson's work in Siberia has been and is so magnificent that it should be known by every resident of Honolulu," said General Jack. "He took charge of a thousand-bed Red Cross Hospital at Omsk when it had to be evacuated because of the Bolshevik successes. The entire Red Cross contingent of the hospital had to leave, but Dr. Jackson remained at his post and did magnificent work, disregarding all personal danger. It is my opinion that the American Red Cross is doing the best work of any allied relief organization in Siberia today. The big contribution made by Hawaii is certainly getting results."

Dr. Jackson's strenuous work in Siberia told on his health. After he returned to Hawaii he re-entered the practice of medicine in Honolulu but illness attacked him and after a long siege he succumbed, leaving behind a record for devotion to a patriotic cause of which all Hawaii may well be proud.

After leaving Buchedu Miss Hoffman was sent to Omsk. She wrote from there on March 24: "That is my job—bug-scrubbing. Miss Babb and I work in the refugee barracks, and just now we are disinfecting them all, bathing the refugees and disinfecting their clothes. The costume that I wear at my work is a very elaborate one. First, there is my regular nursing uniform. Then I put on the big rubber boots that you sent me. After that I put on a sort of yama yama suit with a hood, tied down at the ankles and wrists and around the neck. Underneath the hood I wear a trench cap to keep my head warm when I go outside. Finally I put on an apron to let people know that I belong to the female sex, and with a liberal smearing of kerosene,

I am considered bug proof. As soon as I get back to the train I get out my l'il ole basin and scrub myself all over with hot water and disinfectant, searching carefully for any cooties that might have found a weak spot in my armor. So far I have escaped with only two fleas that are really so harmless that they are not worth counting. . . . It seems that every place I go, the bathing question becomes a little worse. In Buchedu we had only a foot tub to bathe in, and here we have only a basin. I suppose that the next place I will be reduced to a cup."

While a majority of the nurses and nurses' aides from Hawaii remained in and around Vladivostok, some were to be found at Omsk and two were sent as far west as Cheliabinsk, the farthest point inland at which the Red Cross maintained a station. Dr. R. B. Teusler, who passed through Honolulu early in June on his way to the mainland, said of the contingent from this territory, "Hawaii's workers have been hand-picked. There has never been a more enthusiastic group of workers anywhere."

#### DEPARTMENT OF MILITARY AFFAIRS: (B) MILITARY RELIEF

On November 15, 1918, Seabury T. Short of Hawaii was named to direct the bureau of military relief and camp service which was organized under the department of military affairs by Charles A. Steward, who returned to America. Leslie Scott of Honolulu was also assigned to this department when he arrived at Vladivostok in the following June.

The bureau devoted itself primarily to the welfare of American soldiers and sailors in Siberia and was also at the service of the allies for such help as came within its power to render. As there was no active fighting by American troops for the first six months, the work of the bureau consisted, primarily, in supplying camp comforts and in facilitating communications between the American forces and their people at home. A special undertaking was the transfer of war prisoners' mail under the authorization of Washington.

In one of his letters to the Rotary Club of Honolulu, Riley H. Allen suggested the need for cigarettes and tobacco for the

American soldiers in Siberia. He followed this up with another letter in which he said, "If you Rotarians wish to help a mighty good cause along get behind the Hawaii Red Cross Chapter in collecting books and magazines for the soldiers. Our military relief and camp service department could use about three times what is in sight now." In response to these appeals the club donated some money to the tobacco fund and a committee was appointed to collect both magazines and tobacco for the cause. On August 7, 1,440 bags of Bull Durham tobacco, 500 books of cigarette papers, and 8,000 magazines were forwarded.

"The stalwart doughboys who carry Uncle Sam's uniform in Siberia greeted the consignments with smiles, cheers and open arms," Mr. Allen wrote in September. "It happened that just at the time the magazines arrived we had special uses for them. A large number of replacement troops were coming in, and a large number of the boys were going home. The boys coming up the line wanted a little reading matter to while away the time between looking vainly for Bolsheviks and giving the once over to several thousand miles of Siberian scenery. The boys going home would perhaps be 45 days on the transports and probably quarantined in some Pacific ports, and under such conditions they would go into ecstasies over the 'That Reminds Me' page of the Ladies' Home Journal.

"We also received the cases of Bull Durham and cigarette papers. . . . This will be distributed to American soldiers at some of the isolated posts. The troops in and around Vladivostok have, if anything, a little better opportunity than those outside. Our military relief and camp service department dropped wide open several mouths in wonder when those six tons of magazines began rolling off the transport. I did not check up on the quantity at first, and I am not now sure whether the entire consignment has arrived. At least there is certainly enough of it to supply the soldiers with reading matter for several months to come. . . .

"The military relief department got busy from the start sending out shipments up the line. By this time the doughboys as

far west as Lake Baikal, in middle Siberia, are reading magazines sent from Hawaii, and also as far north as Spasskoe. . . . I am going to leave for Western Siberia soon to be gone for a few weeks. It will be my pleasure to visit one of the large American posts at Verkne-Udinsk, and to tell the boys around the reading-room there that these magazines came from the Paradise of the Pacific."

#### DEPARTMENT OF CIVIL AFFAIRS

This department had the handling of relief work for the civilian population, for refugees, and also to some extent for prisoners of war or ex-prisoners of war. A large proportion of all the expenditures of the American Red Cross in Siberia were made through this department. The whole department was first under the direction of Bishop H. St. George Tucker of Japan. Dr. Doremus Scudder was appointed director of refugee relief for the maritime provinces (i. e. the provinces of eastern Siberia skirting the Japan Sea), but during much of the time he was in actual charge of relief work for all of eastern Siberia. Dr. Scudder spent ten months in Siberia, part of the time in the west, going as far as Ufa in Russia.

The refugee hospital at Vladivostok, established under direction of Dr. W. D. Baldwin and to which several of the nurses from Hawaii were assigned, was a joint activity of the medical and civil relief departments. J. J. Siler of Honolulu was business manager of this hospital. Mrs. M. F. Prosser served there for a time; upon her return to Hawaii in February, 1919, she said, "Some of the refugees who came to us had been attempting to get to Vladivostok since the war began and they arrived half naked and starving. Refugee centers have been established outside the city where those unfortunate people are taught to help themselves." No able bodied person was given assistance unless he was willing to work. Sewing rooms were opened where refugee women and girls could make refugee garments; and various kinds of employment were provided for the men and boys.

Repatriation work was one of the most interesting features of Red Cross work in Siberia. It was of three principal kinds:

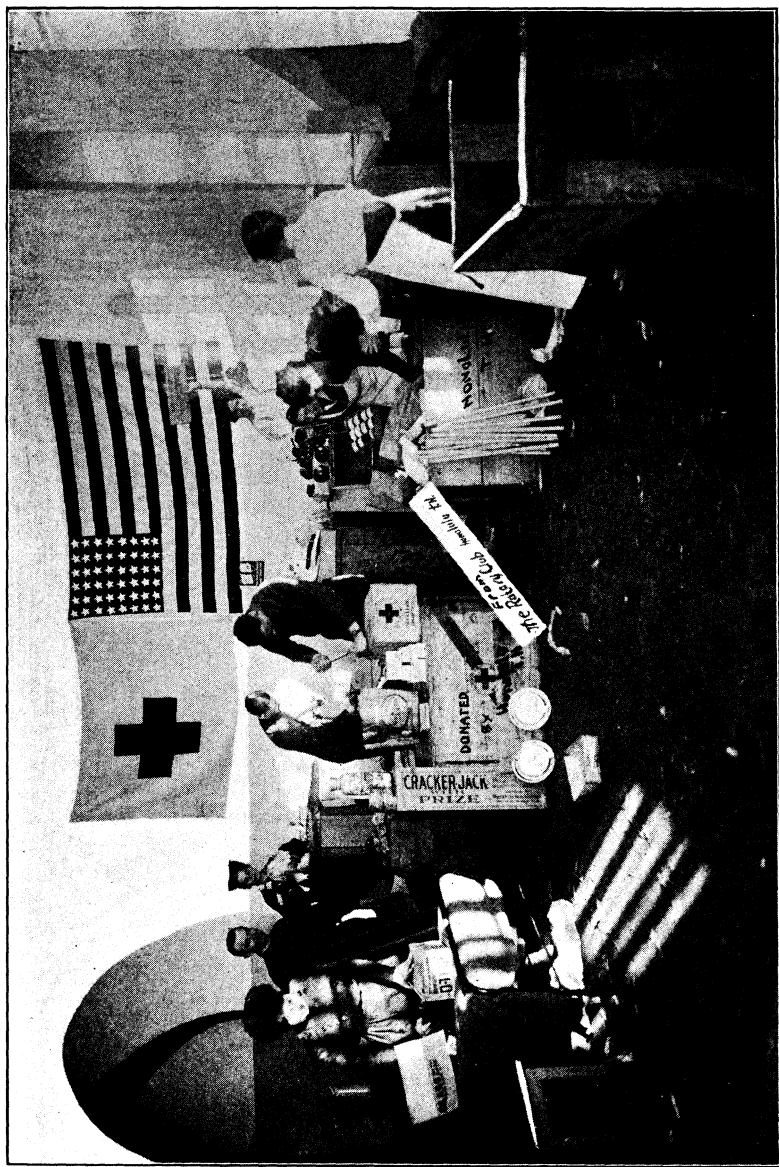
First, the return to their homes of prisoners of war of the Central Powers, who had been in Siberian camps for four, five, and in some cases six years; second, removal of wounded and invalid Czechs; and third, the repatriation of the "Petrograd Children's Colony."

In the summer of 1919 several thousand Czechs were placed on board three steamers at Vladivostok, the *Nanking*, the *Archer*, and the *Heffron*, to be taken half way around the world to Trieste. Captain H. A. Walker sailed on the *Archer*, June 24, in charge of the Red Cross party which accompanied the expedition to look out for the health and comfort of the travelers. Lieutenant J. J. Siler went on this vessel as an assistant in transportation. Riley H. Allen gives a description of the departure. "Red Cross workers who went out early this morning in our launch to the vessel as she lay in the stream were given cheer after cheer and a memorable salute by hundreds of Czechs as they lined the rail. After the Red Cross party had said farewell to their fellow workers on board who are going in charge of the invalids, they started for shore by launch. The Czechs lined up at the rail with bared heads and sang the Czech national anthem with a tremendous chorus of voices which carried for miles across the waters and echoed from the high hills which look over the deep bay of the Golden Horn."

The *Heffron* sailed from Vladivostok August 13, bound for Trieste via Suez, with Major S. T. Short as director of transportation. There were nine in the American Red Cross party, including Miss Janet Dewar, head nurse, and Miss Lillian Fitzpatrick. The vessel carried 27 Czech officers and 843 men. Shortly after leaving port the ship struck rough weather and went on the rocks near the straits of Shimonoseki. A rescue was effected by Japanese naval vessels and no lives were lost.

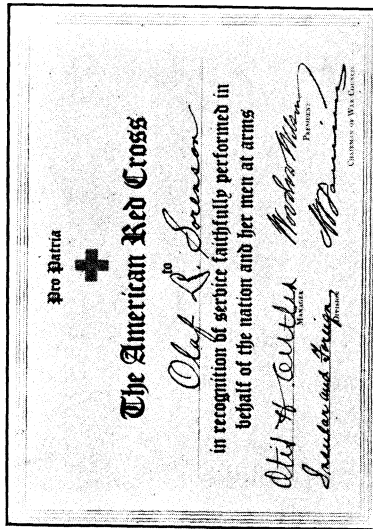
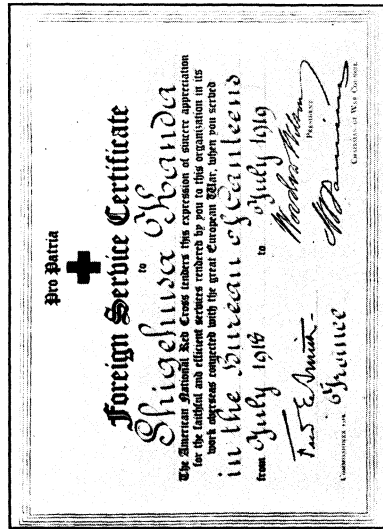
Both of these difficult enterprises of repatriation of Czechs were carried out with marked success. The American personnel in charge received the grateful thanks not only of their invalid charges but of the Czecho-Slovak government.

The story of the "Petrograd Children's Colony" is a most

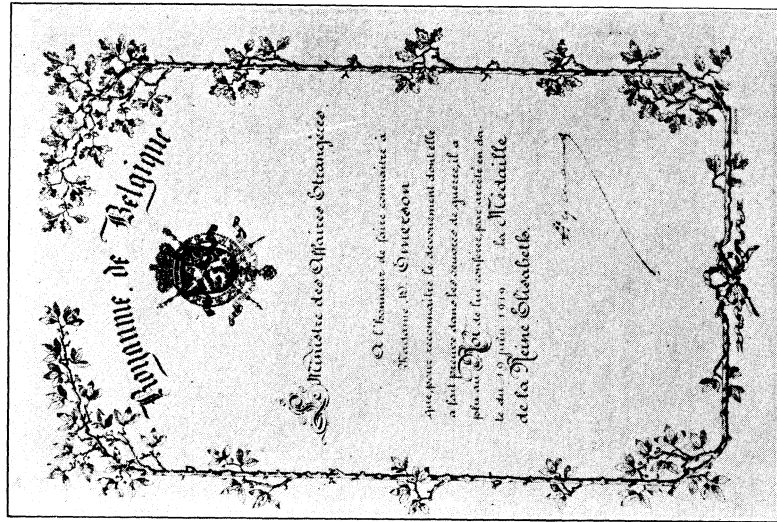


CHRISTMAS GIFTS FROM THE HONOLULU ROTARY CLUB TO THE AMERICAN RED CROSS  
PERSONNEL IN SIBERIA, CHRISTMAS, 1920

With these gifts for grown-ups were several cases of toys for the Russian youngsters, for many of whom it was the only Christmas cheer since the outbreak of the World War in 1914



TYPES OF WAR SERVICE CERTIFICATES  
AWARDED BY THE AMERICAN  
RED CROSS



CERTIFICATE OF AWARD OF "MEDAILLE  
DE LA REINE ELIZABETH" TO  
MRS. DOROTHEA EMERSON



interesting one. In 1918, Red Cross workers in Western Siberia found more than 1,100 homeless children—waifs of the war—who had been sent to Siberia from Petrograd and vicinity in the spring of that year to escape famine. They were sent out by schools, by parents' associations, and by the Union of Cities and Towns. Out in Siberia, they were cut off from their homes when the Czechs and Russian "Reds" began their series of campaigns in the summer of 1918, and by the following winter they were in acute distress. With them were a score or more of faithful teachers and as many attendants.

The Red Cross gathered these homeless children from several cities and towns, placed them in one large colony, and assumed the care of them. In late summer of 1919, owing to the outbreak of hostilities in Western Siberia and the imminent danger of disaster to the colony, then numbering about 785, the Red Cross removed them in three long trains to Vladivostok, placed them in Russian military barracks, and cared for them during the succeeding months. Schools were established, vocational work taught, and the children given every necessary attention.

The first of the three trains bearing the Petrograd children was in charge of Captain Henry P. Beckley. A letter dated at Vladivostok, August 25, 1919, says, "Captain Henry P. Beckley of the Hawaiian chapter, assisted by Miss Lucy Brown, 'farmerette,' has brought through to Vladivostok from far western Siberia the first of the Petrograd children taken last winter into the care of the American Red Cross." Praise was given to Captain Beckley in a report which was sent to Red Cross headquarters in Washington:

"Train No. 16, in charge of Captain Henry Beckley of the Hawaiian Chapter, with a Red Cross staff of four besides himself, arrived on Tuesday, August 19, with 272 girls and boys. In bringing through this train from Omsk in 18 days without an accident, without a case of serious illness among the children, without a death, and without losing any of these restless and active youngsters, Captain Beckley and his staff performed an achievement which is highly creditable to the American Red

Cross. He had specially able help in Miss Brown and Miss Moody, nurses, and Dr. Lieperosky, a Russian physician."

By spring of 1920 it was evident that the children's colony would have to be moved again. The Red Cross was expecting to be ordered out of Siberia at any time. It could not abandon the children, yet it could not get them to Petrograd by land, as the railway line across Siberia was cut, transportation halted, and disease and possible fighting would imperil their passage. So the Siberian Commission, with the indorsement of national headquarters at Washington, decided to take them home by steamer. A 10,000-ton Japanese freighter, the *Yomei Maru*, was chartered, completely refitted with bunks, deck kitchen, a hospital, and other accommodations, taken to Vladivostok, and the entire colony loaded aboard. The *Yomei Maru* also took to Europe about seventy-five prisoners of war to be repatriated, mostly Hungarians. In its hold was a half-cargo of sugar for New York, the vessel carrying as much freight as possible to help pay expenses.

The *Yomei Maru* sailed from Vladivostok July 13, 1920, went to San Francisco, thence through the Panama Canal to New York, where the sugar was unloaded and coal taken aboard for Copenhagen. From New York the steamer sailed for Europe, stopping at Brest and at Helsingfors, Finland, where the children were taken off. For several weeks they were housed in a former Russian imperial sanitorium about forty miles from Petrograd, while the Red Cross sought their parents in Russia.

The conclusion of this round-the-world voyage was a triumph for Red Cross organization, ideals, and methods, for though nearly three years had intervened since the children had been taken from chaotic Petrograd, more than 90 per cent of them were restored direct to their parents; and it was learned that the parents of nearly all the others were dead. (Some of the refugee children had been orphans when they left Petrograd.) Parents were found in all parts of Europe, themselves refugees from the Soviet country, but the majority were located in or near Petrograd.

On this "Petrograd Children's Colony Expedition" Riley H. Allen was chief executive and Ward Walker, now assistant manager of Hawaiian Commercial & Sugar Company of Maui, was engineer officer and police officer. Several others Americans—doctors, nurses, and others—were on the staff. Mr. Walker, who was in charge of dismantling the *Yomei Maru* at Copenhagen after delivery of the cargo and putting the children ashore in Finland, returned to Honolulu early in 1921. Mr. Allen remained with the colony until the last child was delivered to its parents, returning to Honolulu in July, 1921.

#### DEPARTMENT OF ADMINISTRATION

Upon Major A. L. Castle's arrival in Vladivostok on October 10, 1918, he organized the bureau of the secretary-general under the department of administration and became executive secretary of the Siberian Commission, an office in which he undertook the task of stimulating and correlating the work of the Far Eastern and Hawaiian chapters whose supplies had been turned wholly to Siberia. A system of corresponding with all the chapters direct from Vladivostok and of outlining the main features of their production in order to standardize their work was inaugurated with good results. The office also had charge of general correspondence and handled many executive tasks. Upon Dr. Teusler's departure for the west, Major Castle became acting chairman of the Commission, an office in which "his familiarity with the Red Cross work, enthusiasm and appreciation of the needs of the field as well as of national Red Cross policy were of utmost assistance."

After completing his mission to Siberia, he left Vladivostok on December 3 to visit Japan, China, and the Philippine Islands and then to return to Hawaii. As a news article published in Vladivostok stated, his experience in Red Cross work had "stood him in good stead in approaching the difficult Siberian situation and in helping him to build up a large popular organization." After making an inspection of the principal workrooms in the various countries and assigning allotments for the period ending

June 1, Major Castle boarded the steamer *Nanking* at Yokohama and arrived in Honolulu February 2, 1919. Taken seriously ill on the voyage, he recovered after a long and critical struggle.

The publicity bureau of the department of administration was organized in November, 1918, by Riley H. Allen, with the primary aim of "covering" the Far Eastern and Hawaiian field with news articles concerning the work of the commission and of developing the necessary and vital chapter and community interest. News articles and photographs were sent to a mailing list of more than 100 American newspapers, to those of the entire Far East, and to magazines and bulletins. Correspondents in Vladivostok were also supplied with Red Cross news; thus much was done to promote a friendly feeling for the organization and to assist in its work.

With the departure of Major Castle, Mr. Allen became executive secretary, receiving his appointment with the rank of first lieutenant dating from February 20, 1919. On March 11, he was made Deputy Commissioner for Siberia with the rank of major (later promoted to lieutenant colonel). In his official capacity Major Allen made a trip into western Siberia, in the course of which he was stricken with typhus fever in April, and, unable to travel, was left at the town of Petropavlovsk, near the Ural mountains. Upon his recovery and return to Vladivostok he continued his work in the administration department until the summer of 1920, when he left Siberia with the Petrograd Children's Colony.

The most difficult problem with which the Red Cross in Siberia had to deal was that of transportation. Except for the comparatively small amount of Red Cross supplies retained at Vladivostok for distribution in the hospital and relief work of eastern Siberia, everything arriving at that port had to be sent out along the line of the Trans-Siberian railway. Though unusual consideration was shown the Red Cross by Russian railway officials and the Russian Railway Service Corps, composed of American railway men, and others also gave invaluable aid, yet owing to the breakdown of the rolling stock, the unpaid crews,

and an enormous demand for freight by other agencies, railroad conditions were very poor. It was said that the section of transportation could have sent to the west each week a 25-car train, had engines and cars been available.

Within the period up to the end of 1918, five trains of 20 to 32 loaded cars carrying a vast quantity of relief supplies had been dispatched to the interior and a sixth and seventh were being prepared. This work was continued throughout the following year.

After the first of the year, H. A. Walker was assigned to the section of transportation, and after having taken his second relief train to Omsk, he returned to Vladivostok about the middle of May with the rank of captain. Dr. Baldwin said of him that he had "a remarkable way of compelling the Russian railway authorities to do his bidding." And Mr. Allen wrote:

"I came down with 'Kid' Walker a few days ago from Omsk, and he has now gone back to Suchan to handle a specially important distribution of civil relief supplies. There is a question of how these supplies can be handled without getting them into the hands of the Bolsheviks." As previously related, Captain Walker left Vladivostok in June, 1919, on the S.S. *Archer*, which was carrying invalid Czech soldiers back to Trieste.

It was necessary for the Red Cross to find and to maintain storage space for the thousands of tons of supplies which poured into Vladivostok on transports and commercial steamers and which, of necessity, were held there while awaiting transportation. Warehouses were maintained for clothing, medicines, hospital supplies, soldier comforts and similar articles.

On his arrival at Vladivostok Henry P. Beckley was first placed in charge of the Red Cross warehouses. After a strenuous winter at that work and that of train loading, he was chosen to conduct the first train to go into European Russia and destined for Perm, beyond the Ural mountains—an expedition attended with considerable hazard as the section was overrun with Bolsheviks. This was the eleventh train sent out by the Siberian Commission and included twenty-three full cars of drugs, drain-

age bandages, and other hospital supplies. The train carried thirty-two passengers, including two interpreters, a doctor, a druggist, four nurses, and a guard of eight soldiers as well as numerous casuals who were to be dropped at sundry points along the line. Captain Beckley was in charge of supply trains during all of 1919 and returned to Honolulu in the following year after a trip through China.

#### DECORATIONS

Several of the members of Hawaii's Red Cross unit sent out for service with the Siberian Commission received decorations from the All-Russian government. These were awarded in the closing days of the Admiral Kolchak regime (before Bolshevik domination), but the services for which they were granted extended over the whole period and covered several branches of Red Cross activities and other forms of assistance to those people in their time of need. Riley H. Allen was given the medal of St. Anna of the second degree; Dr. Arthur F. Jackson, the medal of St. Anna of the third degree; Henry P. Beckley, the medal of St. Stanislaus of the third degree; Misses Reba Dobson, Christine Kemp, Janet Dewar, Ruth Benedict, Jeanette Searight, and Sarah Mathews received the silver medal "For Zeal" on the yellow-bordered red ribbon of St. Anna.

Even more prized than the medals and perhaps even more significant—were the testimonials and memorials, official and unofficial, from Russians, Czechs, Poles, and many other nationals, given to Red Cross workers. These testified uniformly and with a gratitude often pathetic, to the acts of mercy and relief which the American Red Cross had performed for nearly three years in a stricken country.

Another testimonial was the statement from the national headquarters of the Red Cross, at Washington, that the organization, the operations, and the financial and other records of the Siberian Commission were unusually complete, and that the Siberian Commission set a high standard of efficiency throughout its entire period of existence. The men and women sent from Hawaii shared in the credit for this record.

## CHAPTER IX

### SPECIAL RELIEF FUNDS

#### BRITISH RELIEF

THE Hawaii Branch of the Prince of Wales Relief Fund seems to have been the first organized war relief enterprise in this territory. The organization was formed at a meeting of the British Benevolent Society in Honolulu on September 10, 1914, and Robert Catton was entrusted with the management of the fund. A printed appeal was sent to the several islands and the money began to come in. Among the most noteworthy of the contributions were two of a thousand dollars each, one of \$35 from Midway Island, and one of \$800, the upset price of an automobile offered at auction and bought in by the owner. Within less than three months, nine remittances had been made to London, for a total of four thousand pounds. In December a letter of acknowledgment was received from the Prince of Wales' treasurer, in which he said:

"His Royal Highness has been greatly touched at receiving successive contributions from Hawaii, and sends his warmest greetings and thanks to all those who have responded so generously to his appeal."

At the beginning of September, 1915, Mr. Catton, who was on the point of leaving Hawaii for a trip to England, handed over the management of the fund to the British Association. The fund was finally closed on December 7, 1916, at which time remittances had reached a total of 4,726 pounds, 12 shillings, and a penny.

In the meantime the attention of the local British residents had been called to the needs of the British Red Cross Society. The British Association proposed that a tag day be held on May 24, 1916, in honor of Empire Day and to aid in building up a larger war relief fund upon which the British Red Cross and the Order of St. John of Jerusalem might draw for their

work among the sick and wounded on the battlefields. No war lines were to be drawn, though the greater part of the work of the British Red Cross was for the Allies and the British army. A women's committee was appointed, headed by Mrs. E. L. S. Gordon, wife of the British consul. Portuguese and Japanese committees were also formed, the women of those nationalities offering to lend every assistance in their power. The proceeds of the tag day exceeded \$2,500.

Another special effort was made in connection with the observance of Trafalgar Day ("Our Day") in October, 1916. The total collections at that time amounted to nearly \$10,000, four hundred seventy dollars being received from a concert at Mission Memorial Hall on the evening of October 21. At the annual meeting of the British Club held during the first part of July, 1917, a resume of the club's activities for the past eleven months showed that its members had contributed \$11,131.10 to the British Red Cross and the Order of St. John of Jerusalem.

Early in the summer of 1918, Harry Lauder wrote to James A. Dunbar, an old friend, urging him to ask his "brither Scots" to "come across" with some contributions to the Harry Lauder Fund of one million pounds for the aid of Scottish pensioned and discharged soldiers and sailors. In response to this appeal a meeting of local Scotchmen was held in Honolulu on June 17 and a committee appointed to have charge of the matter. Contributions were asked only from Scotchmen and direct descendants of Scotchmen within the territory, though voluntary donations from others were accepted.

By November 12, \$5,323 had been raised and the total remitted to Lord Balfour of Burleigh, treasurer of the fund. Hawaii had sent in \$1,799; Oahu, \$1,757; Maui, including Lanai and Molokai, \$444; and Kauai, \$1,322. In acknowledgment, Mr. Lauder wrote:

"My dear friend Jimmie: Yours to hand. I have just arrived home. Been at Dundee, Edinburgh and Glasgow. Now I am here to pack up for Australia, so I am, in all likelihood, to pass through Honolulu on my way as I am going via America.



And I tell you I feel grateful to you and those who have helped you to raise the \$5,000. It is just splendid. We must depend on subscriptions from abroad, as we here in Scotland cannot really do more than we have already done. [Since the death of his son in active service in France, Lauder had been on tour raising money.] It is an awful war, but thank God the victorious end is near now. But it is these men who have to be reinstated. Just keep at it, Jimmie, same as myself, and I shall see you when I am on my way to Kangaroo land, in April or thereabouts."

When Mr. Lauder and his party arrived in Honolulu on April 14, they were greeted by the combined memberships of the Ad, Rotary, and British clubs, a luncheon being given in their honor by the latter organization. Mr. Lauder gave a lecture and concert at the Bijou Theater in the afternoon, the Consolidated Amusement Company allowing the use of the theater without charge. The total proceeds of Honolulu's "Harry Lauder Day" were \$6,114.12, which, added to the \$5,323 raised by the special committee the year before, made a grand total of \$11,347.12 given by Hawaii to the war relief fund of the man who wrote the song, "I Love You, Honolulu."

One interesting form of relief to which the people of Hawaii contributed was the endowment of "knitting chairs." Soon after the outbreak of the war in 1914, some American women in London started a "factory" in which they gave employment to women in need of assistance who could not perform ordinary work but could knit and sew. The factory produced socks, sweaters, and other knitted garments for the hospitals, soldiers at the front, etc. The women workers occupied chairs which were endowed (i. e., their wages were paid) by contributions, the endowment of one chair for one year costing about \$150. By the spring of 1915 donations from Hawaii were paying for four chairs, which were named "Aloha," "Honolulu," "Hawaii," and "Hawaii No. 2." Mrs. W. L. Eaton had charge of the fund in this territory. Later, the Honolulu Ad Club endowed one of the chairs.

In addition to these organized efforts, the British residents of Hawaii contributed smaller amounts from time to time in response to special appeals, such as those for the families of soldiers and sailors killed in the war, and for blinded Scottish soldiers; they also undertook to supplement the allotments made to the families of the men who went from Hawaii into the British military or naval forces.

#### THE CHRISTMAS SHIP (1914)

"In the name of the Christ child who was born nearly 2,000 years ago to bring love and peace to all the world, we ask all the children of Hawaii to make contributions . . . for Christmas cheer to the children of the war zone." So read a notice which appeared in the local papers in October, 1914. Following out the suggestion made by James Keeley, editor of the *Chicago Herald*, the U. S. Naval Collier *Jason* was to play Santa Claus to the thousands of little ones in the war stricken areas of Europe and the children of Hawaii were asked to help the children of the mainland fill that ship with Christmas cheer.

The Guild of St. Andrew's Cathedral started the idea in Hawaii. Mrs. Walter L. Emory was named chairman of the committee which included Mrs. Chas. M. V. Forster, Mrs. J. W. Caldwell, Mrs. C. M. Cooke, Jr., and Miss M. M. L. Catton, the last named being the treasurer. The Woman's Auxiliary gave the movement full support. The newspapers, including the *Honolulu Star-Bulletin*, the *Honolulu Advertiser*, *Hawaii Shinpo*, *Nippu Jiji*, *Hawaii Hochi*, *Japanese Daily Chronicle*, and *O Luso* kept the fund before the public. The Board of Education took an active interest and the teachers did much to arouse the sentiment of the children.

Sunday, October 25, a special appeal was made through the churches of the territory, and the Sunday Schools, "irrespective of denomination, race, or creed," were asked to lend their sympathy and support. Contribution boxes were placed in the stores of Benson, Smith & Company, Chambers Drug Company, Hono-

lulu Drug Company, and Hollister Drug Company. Donations of money were especially sought but books and toys in good condition were accepted.

The slogan, "Carry Christmas to the children of Europe," was a real challenge and the response was most generous. The sum of \$1,595.50 was sent to Washington to go by the good ship *Jason* to the stricken war zone. Of the result it was said, "This was the most gratifying response that was given to the Woman's Auxiliary during the past year [1914]. This committee stated their purpose, published their aims and *did not ask one person for any money*. Gifts came from all nationalities and creeds all over the islands." Most gratifying of all was the response given by the children themselves who seemed to feel the sincerest sympathy with their little brothers and sisters in the heart of the great war and many made very real sacrifices to be able to give to the cause.

The Christmas season was approaching and after the fund was sent off for the Christmas ship, there still remained a desire on the part of the people to do more "in the name of the Christ Child." The Chamber of Commerce drive for the Belgians was under way, so it seemed fitting that the "Christmas Cheer Committee" carry on, the money collected to go to Belgian children's relief. The Committee wrote immediately to the Belgian minister in London asking him to specify an object among little Belgian children who would benefit by the money raised. In the meantime, Miss Catton went right on receiving money for the cause. After Thanksgiving season the Committee offered this appeal:

"As we sit at our bountiful table, surrounded by comfort and luxury, let us not forget those who are less fortunate in lands where it almost seems as though God Himself had forgotten His children. Let our hearts and prayers turn toward stricken Belgium, the little country which, one short year ago, was full of comfortable homes and happy families—careless, healthy, merry little children, many of whom are now mourning the loss of father, mother, home and country. In gratitude for our many blessings can we not dispense with some non-essential, luxury

or delicacy, and use the money instead for the little sufferers across the seas?"

At Christmas time, many gave money into the fund rather than spend needlessly for presents to relatives and friends when there was such dire need elsewhere.

On November 7, a children's fair was held at the home of Mrs. A. H. Tarleton. Under smiling skies, in a beautiful garden setting, the children made merry, happy because they could bring a little joy to the hearts of little ones who were homeless and strangers in a strange land. The sum of \$93.61 was turned over to the committee from this fair.

The first money sent away (\$1,220) left soon after Christmas and went to the war refugee committee in Folkestone, England. But as the demands for these destitute people were so great and many, it was decided to keep the fund open. Miss Catton's books show that \$189 was sent on April 7, 1915, and \$86.65 in June of the same year. A letter of grateful thanks, dated February 4, 1915, was received by Miss Catton. It read in part:

"I need hardly say how grateful we are to those so far away who should so have interested themselves in the work we are doing here. Owing to the dreadful war, there are so many calls upon our own country people, and though it is quite wonderful what they have done for the Belgians, we are more than glad of help from elsewhere, to be able to provide bare necessities for the hundreds of suffering people who arrive at Folkestone day after day. In nearly all cases they have left their homes in flames, having lost everything, including, in many instances, their friends and relatives, often almost out of their minds from the hardships that they have been through. We have at this time about 6,000 refugees, resident in Folkestone alone. . . . We also have maternity homes, which have been largely used and very much appreciated. All these matters absorb a lot of money and we are very grateful for any help which generous friends are kind enough to send us."

## BELGIAN RELIEF

Sympathy for the Belgians was aroused as soon as the first news of the war reached Hawaii. In the fall of 1914 the Chamber of Commerce, with the help of the War Relief Committee, raised a considerable sum for the widows and orphans. The Christmas season found people ready to donate to the Christmas fund in which Miss Catton was interested. But at the same time a movement was being started in a quiet way which was to continue throughout the war and to hold the cause of these stricken people ever before the public.

Mrs. Joseph S. Emerson was, perhaps, in more intimate touch with Belgian affairs than anyone in Hawaii. Though English-born, she was partly educated in Belgium and had always loved the people among whom she had spent some of her happiest years. Concerning the beginning of her work Mrs. Emerson says:

"In August, 1914, when the war started, a number of Belgian families took refuge in Oxford, England, where were living at the time my mother and sisters, two of whom had previously lived in Honolulu. When we were young my family had lived several years in Bruges, Belgium, and probably on this account my sisters immediately interested themselves in these unfortunates and wrote me long accounts of the efforts made by the Oxford ladies to render this involuntary residence less painful than it would otherwise have been. These accounts made me anxious to help and I resolved to try and raise among my friends and my sisters' here, the sum of \$500 to aid certain families living very near them in Oxford. In this humble way the Belgian Fund started."

The work went on quietly for a time. The first public appeal was to attend an illustrated lecture on Bruges given by Mrs. Emerson in October.

Honolulu's first Belgian Tag Day was held on Saturday, April 3, 1915. Headquarters were established in the old Sachs' store and Mrs. Emerson was chairman of the committee in charge. "Buy a Rosette" was the slogan of the thirty young

girls who toured the downtown district in threes—one carrying a money box, another the rosettes, and the third, pins with which to affix them to the contributors' lapels. Over \$800 was raised, part being sent through Mrs. Emerson's sister to the aid of the civilian population of Belgium, part to the nuns at Streatham, near London, who were caring for Belgian girls of all classes, and part to the refugees at Oxford. By June 21, Miss Annette Lamb had received two remittances aggregating \$864.66 and subsequent subscriptions made and pledged brought the Oxford fund to a little more than \$900.

Of the first contribution, which amounted to nearly \$300, she wrote: "I don't know what we should have done without it. We have been able to help so many in ways in which the committee could not assist. . . . The little fund from Honolulu has purchased a good deal of new clothing, and has provided coal for at least one family all winter and helped regularly with the maintenance of several families." A little more than \$800 had been received when Miss Lamb wrote further: "I am sending the nuns in London £50, Mademoiselle L. for 'L'Appui Belge' fund £25, and the Oxford Committee £25. This leaves a balance in the bank for future use of a little more than £69."

Letters of appreciation were received by Mrs. Emerson from those to whom the money was apportioned. The nuns, under date of May 4, sent a touching letter of thanks, describing their work among the refugees and expressing great gratitude for the money and parcels of clothing sent from Honolulu. "Both are a great godsend to us, for, as the months drag on, it is increasingly difficult to pay expenses. . . . How little we thought that in far away Honolulu earnest Christian workers were gathering thus for our poor clients! . . . Please thank in our name all who have contributed and assure them how deeply we appreciate their very practical sympathy and cooperation. We pray God to reward them."

Early in September Miss Catton, who had been receiving contributions for Belgian relief as a continuation of the Christmas Ship and Dollar Christmas fund and who had charge of

the contribution boxes in various stores throughout the city, left for the mainland and turned over her work to Mrs. Emerson.

Mayor John C. Lane gave the second Belgian Day his official endorsement, writing to Mrs. Emerson on December 9: "I heard with pleasure that the Belgian Committee, headed by you, is making a collection to buy warm clothing to be forwarded to the Queen of the Belgians, who will distribute the same among her stricken people, and that said committee intends to have a 'Tag Day' on December 18 for this cause. I am confident that the good people of Honolulu will respond generously . . . and that you will be well rewarded in your noble work."

Queen Liliuokalani also sent an expression of interest: "Feeling as I do the deepest sympathy for the Queen of the Belgians and her stricken people, I wish every success for the 'Belgian Day' in Honolulu."

The public again contributed freely, giving \$1,478.35 to the fifty girls who sold the Belgian national colors in the downtown district; and, later \$2,062.18 was forwarded to a responsible business firm in London for the purchase of warm clothing for the children and old people of Belgium. The Queen of the Belgians caused this gracious acknowledgment to be sent to Mrs. Emerson:

"Her Majesty the Queen has charged me to thank you very warmly for the efforts that you made to organize a Belgian tag day in Honolulu and for the magnificent gift of clothing that you have sent to our refugees through M. van der Velde, minister of state.

"In this way much poverty will have been helped, much suffering spared."

On December 16, 1916, the tri-colored emblem of Belgium was in evidence for the third time in Honolulu in the form of ribbon bows and tiny flags on brass standards; and, at headquarters on the corner of Fort and King streets, tiny shoes and other souvenirs made by the children of Belgium were offered for sale. The generous response for this "Belgian Day" was \$1,140.

Concerning the work among the Belgian soldiers, Mrs. Emerson says: "Early in the war the Belgian and English newspapers asked for aid for the soldiers, many of whom were young boys, entirely cut off from their families and discouraged by their privations and lack of success. Ladies were asked to send a parcel of little comforts at least once a month to some individual soldier and to write him letters of encouragement. The work was affiliated with 'L'Union des amis du soldat belge.'" Miss Mary Morris was in charge of the work at the London headquarters and from her the names were procured. The "marraines" or godmothers were to pay four shillings a month.

Mrs. Emerson's list in Honolulu began with the names of two boys. At the end of January, 1917, godmothers in the islands were caring for 150 Belgian soldiers. In April the number had increased to 171, including 10 prisoners, since part of the work was done for prisoners in Germany through the co-operation of the "Oeuvre International pour Prisonniers de Guerre et Internes dans tous Pays," operating under the patronage of the Red Cross of the Netherlands. Often as many as 100 letters reached Honolulu in a week. It was necessary to translate most of them from French or Flemish and this work was accomplished by Mrs. Emerson with the assistance of Mrs. Kenneth Brown, who devoted many hours of her leisure time to writing translations on the typewriter as fast as they could be dictated.

Each of the soldiers received a monthly parcel of comforts which were packed in London and paid for with money sent from Hawaii. Some godmothers paid a dollar a month and some as much as \$2.50. Many in addition to the parcel sent presents and money to pay for little vacations or to buy warm underclothing or other comforts. The number of soldiers who had found godmothers in Hawaii passed 200 in the month of August. Letters took longer to come then and the boys often reported themselves as being "too busy or tired to write." "When we have a little leisure we get together and read aloud our letters and talk of your wonderful country," one boy wrote.



"The comfort and encouragement this gives us you might not believe."

"Only 292 letters and cards have come from our soldiers and prisoners," Mrs. Emerson wrote of the work for August, 1918. "Many are taking on a new tone of encouragement and hopefulness." The need for assistance to the Belgian Soldiers' League of Friendship ended in December, 1918, a draft which Mrs. Emerson sent to Miss Morris after that date being returned. The money (\$289.85) was then mailed to Dr. Stievenard of Nice, France, for the aid of the tubercular Belgian children in his hospital. Up to the close of this work the number of names (of soldiers and prisoners of war) on the Hawaiian list had reached a total of 370.

Through a Belgian, M. Georges Marsily, former consul for the Netherlands in San Francisco, Mrs. Emerson had been placed in touch with the Countess Marie de Hemptinne, who was carrying on work under the Belgian government among those who had fled from their homes at the beginning of hostilities and who had taken refuge in that part of Belgium along the Yser which was never under German rule. This part of the work in Honolulu was begun early in 1917. In her letter of thanks for the first money received, Madame de Hemptinne invited Mrs. Emerson to be the head of the "War Babies' Cradle Fund" for Hawaii. A letter received in July told of a plan to place in each Belgian village as it was retaken, a *creche* or day nursery for tiny children in order that they might be cared for while their mothers worked. "We shall need every available hand. The babies must be cared for. Every single infant must be saved; they are the only hope of Belgium. Can you not collect enough money for one of the Creches?"

From this time on the bulk of the money raised went to help Madame de Hemptinne and to provide for the "Creche d'Hawaii." The fourth Belgian Day (December 16, 1917) raised sufficient funds to support forty-four beds in the Creche. One of the beds was to be named "Moanalua" in appreciation of the beautiful flowers sent from those gardens for the flower sale.

Two "Edith Cavell" beds were financed, one by the doctors and one by the nurses of Honolulu; and the "Mary Morris" bed was given by the Soldiers' League of Friendship. The fifth Tag Day (December 14, 1918) was even more successful. In January, 1919, the Creche d'Hawaii was established in old Beguinage, Ghent, where fifty babies were cared for. Ghent being a manufacturing city, recovered early from the war, and the countess moved her work to the fishing port of Ostend where the remainder of the fund was used to assist a number of orphans who were under the protection of nuns in a convent known as L'Abri Elizabeth. The fund continued to help the work of the nuns until January, 1923, when it was felt that Belgium was recovering from her misfortunes.

A portion of the money sent to Madame de Hemptinne went to her work for needy children and mothers, a work carried on among the refugees in France and the unoccupied portion of Belgium. Assistance in the form of milk and food, clothing, coal, and shelter, necessary things that kept life going for a while, were made possible by Hawaii's contributions. Such messages as the following tell of the use made of this part of the fund:

"Part of our monthly remittances has been used for the purchase of potatoes, on which vegetable the poorest classes of Belgians have been accustomed to live largely. I have been sent a number of little letters from those who have been benefitted from this distribution and these letters are more indicative of extreme poverty than any I have ever received. Only one is written on letter paper, the rest being on any dirty little scrap of paper that the writer happened to have or be able to secure."

"Without the help of the kind souls of Hawaii, most of these unfortunate children will be without warm clothes to protect them from the cold of winter so hard to bear."

"We are distributing canned milk not only to the children but also to the mothers unable to nurse their infants."

In certain cases pledges were made so that the children were fully provided for during a definite period of time. Much of

this money came in small amounts from people who made real sacrifices to give it.

The total sum raised through Mrs. Emerson's efforts was \$51,437.68. A report published May 10, 1919, when the fund had reached \$46,791.48, shows how the money was distributed up to that time: For the support of families and individuals in Oxford, \$3,600.86; for soldiers at the front, \$9,674.28; for prisoners in Germany, \$1,257.27; to fund for re-education of mutilated soldiers, \$1,429; to Madame de Hemptinne for various causes, \$24,148.42. In addition to the money raised, a large amount of clothing was collected and forwarded. One hundred forty-eight cases were sent to Madame de Hemptinne.

The money came in from various sources—from schools, from churches, from tag days, from contribution boxes, and from individual pledges. The children were easily interested and large sums went from "the children of Hawaii to the children of Belgium." In November, 1917, the pupils of Ewa schools raised \$231.85. Mrs. G. F. Renton, in charge of the work in that district, forwarded the money through Mrs. Emerson to Madame de Hemptinne and received a letter, extracts from which show the gratitude of those who were helped by the money:

"Calais, January 5, 1918.

"My dear little Friends:

"Mrs. Emerson has just sent me the splendid check which you gave her for my babies. I thank you with all my heart in the name of the poor children whom I am helping with your gift. It was so generous of you to decide to send me that money. . . . I am also quite pleased because dear Mrs. Emerson has given me your name to one of the beds in the Hawaii Creche. . . .

"Just before your check arrived I was very much depressed and worried about some children. I needed absolutely a few dollars and I did not know where to find them. This was to send a whole family out into the country. I don't know that you realize what life is here for us, as we are very near the firing lines. At any time during the day or night the aircraft

of the enemy may bombard the town. Often when the children are playing or dining or sleeping, suddenly the alarm signal goes and many guns begin to shoot without a minute's rest. The children if not yet in bed rush to the cellars (if there is one, which is seldom the case), and of course are frightened to death when they hear the bombs fall close to them. Sometimes in the middle of the night the poor little things are taken from their beds and rushed through the cold to cellars several yards from their homes. . . .

"A few days ago I asked the children what food would please them the most for Christmas Day. Their answer was, 'We would rather eat dry bread every day and Christmas Day, and keep the money that you would spend for that food to pay the expenses necessary to get us out of town to a place of safety.' The poor children are so nervous and are really ill. The doctor said that I must get them out of town if I wanted to save them. I was very sorry not to be able to send them away, for I had been working since 1916 to keep these babies alive, and it would give me much sorrow if something should happen to them now. . . .

"You may be sure that many children are praying God to bless you, which is all the poor little things can do. They are too little to write and thank you in their names, so I am doing it for them, and I assure you that it is for me a great pleasure. I am, too, very proud to know that I may consider you as my dear helpers to save the unfortunate little ones of poor martyred Belgium.

"Thanking you again for your kindness and hoping that you will get this letter in spite of the under-sea boats,

"I am most gratefully yours,

"MARIE DE HEMPTINNE."

No group of people were more touched by the appeals for the Belgians than the Japanese, who helped very materially with the fund. Bishop Y. Imamura, of the Hongwanji Mission, set aside a special Belgian day (December 17, 1918) for his com-

munity. The interest aroused continued and spread throughout the Buddhist associations. Their share of the total sum raised was \$3,750, "a beautiful proof that the cause of suffering Belgium appealed to rich and poor, old and young, Christian and Buddhist alike." Madame de Hemptinne sent them a letter of appreciation and gave them special mention in her "Report of My Work During the Terrible Years 1914-1919." Mention was made, also, in that report of the work done at Hilo by Miss H. C. Hitchcock and Miss A. Chalmers. Miss Hitchcock sent thirty-nine cases of clothing and a considerable sum of money.

"The work has succeeded beyond my dreams," Mrs. Emerson said at the end. "I cannot express my gratitude for the general support received. The thousands of letters which have come from those benefited testify to the relief the funds have given."

In recognition of her service, King Albert awarded to Mrs. Emerson the Medal of Queen Elizabeth, accompanied by a letter which said the decoration was given "as a token of Their Majesties' gratitude for your constant devotion to the charitable works destined to alleviate the sufferings of our stricken people and for the sympathy you have shown to the Belgian cause." Mrs. Kenneth Brown was honored, also, with the same medal.

#### FRENCH RELIEF

The Hawaiian committee for the relief of the Fatherless Children of France was organized in December, 1916, with Miss Elizabeth Anderson as treasurer. This marks the beginning of organized French relief in Hawaii. In January, Mrs. Walter F. Dillingham was appointed Hawaiian representative for the American Society for the Relief of French War Orphans. The following statement from the committee for "The Fatherless Children" published in March, 1917, gives the general plan of the work:

"The committee of Hawaii of 'The Fatherless Children of France' has received another list of names and addresses of little children whose fathers have given their lives for France in this great war. Hawaii has already sent to France through this

committee \$5,876.50 to care for sixty-four children for two years, and thirty-three others for one year, and the money for most of these thirty-three is pledged for the second year. But there are thousands of others waiting to be 'adopted.' . . . Ten cents a day; \$36.50 a year; \$73 for two years is what is asked for each child. This is given to the child's mother month by month, to enable her to keep her little ones with her and train them up to be useful citizens of France."

There were several methods used to collect the funds. Various organizations and individuals were asked to adopt orphans and to provide fully for their support. The bulk of the money came in this way. By the last of May, 1917, 196 of Hawaii's quota of 350 children were cared for—conclusive proof that the islands had awakened to the sentiment of the "living memorial" to Marshal Joffre proposed by public spirited men and women of the city. By the last of June, 1917, 500 children were being provided for and a letter was sent to Marshal Joffre carrying the news. New lists were obtained and the work continued to grow until more than 1,000 orphans were being cared for.

The children of Hawaii were called upon to aid the fund. June 22, 1917, was set aside by Governor Pinkham as a special children's day, when the children gathered at the Capitol grounds and donated their pennies. The sum of \$225 was collected and three children from one family—Odette, Joseph, and Marguerite Basile—were adopted. The employed boys of the Y. M. C. A. maintained an orphan. A children's knitting unit organized under the supervision of Mrs. A. F. Judd and Mrs. W. A. Love held a sale at the home of Mrs. Judd to obtain money to support an orphan. A report published December 19, 1918, says that twenty schools in the territory had adopted orphans. This was done largely by each child giving ten cents "to keep a French child a day."

Forty-one organizations and two individuals at Schofield Barracks subscribed for fifty-six children in the first part of July, 1917; Battery D contributed \$147.50; Battery E of the First Field Artillery, \$101.50; and the headquarters company of the

Ninth, \$36.50. The quartermaster corps gave \$109, and in September employees of Catton Neill & Company signed pledges to support seventy children. Early in October of the same year, the Honolulu chapter, American Red Cross, contributed \$1,080 as an obligation inherited from the Hawaiian Allied War Relief Committee; and, on October 5, in answer to an appeal from Mrs. Hodgins, employees of the Honolulu Iron Works pledged themselves to care for sixty orphans for two years, plans being even then on foot to assure them a merry holiday season. Numerous entertainments—lectures, moving picture shows, plays, dances, concerts—were given for the cause.

There were various public appeals for money. A tag day was conducted under the direction of Mrs. Dillingham on April 6, 1917. Souvenir medals, stamped from designs drawn by the French artist Lalique, were sold and nearly \$3,000 was added to the fund. During the last of May of the same year, a two weeks' intensive campaign was carried on.

In November, 1918, a special drive was launched throughout the territory to raise \$10,000. Mrs. James R. Judd was chairman of the committee. Mrs. C. F. Eckart was head of a sub-committee for Hawaii, Mrs. D. C. Lindsay for Kauai, Mrs. E. N. Young for Maui, and Mrs. E. S. Goodhue for Molokai. As a feature of this drive, thirty pretty girls, carrying trays decorated with the tri-color of France, canvassed the downtown district selling coconut candy and French medals and pinning red, white, and blue rosettes on coat lapels. Several Molokai songsters donated by Mrs. George Cooke were disposed of at \$4 each. Tri-color envelopes each designed to hold ten cents and "an expression of love from a child in Hawaii to a child in need" were distributed through the schools, and boxes in which they might be deposited were left at the Kalihi Store, at a store on Twelfth avenue, Kaimuki, and at committee headquarters at the Bergstrom Music Store. A painting by Charles W. Bartlett was auctioned at the stock exchange on November 27, and one by Lionel Walden was auctioned at Laniakea for the benefit of the orphans. In order to give impetus to the campaign, four-minute

speakers gave addresses at local theaters, girl workers passing through the audiences for donations. 'The campaign closed with a fund of \$15,165, exceeding the quota by one-half, according to an announcement made by Mrs. Judd at a luncheon at the Commercial Club on November 30. By December 19, approximately \$26,257 had been received by the committee. Oahu had given \$11,938; Maui, \$3,275.95; Kauai, \$3,258.87; Hawaii, \$7,558.98; and Molokai, \$224.90.

Another drive was held in 1919, beginning on November 11 with a series of moving pictures shown at the Bijou Theater. On that day, a notice flashed on the screen gave the information that, in 1918, Honolulu had given more for the work, in proportion, than any other city of its size and its contribution had been exceeded by only fifteen cities of the mainland. Mrs. Elgin, secretary of the local organization, asked that Hawaii maintain her standard until 1920. During the last week in November and the first week in December, post cards, calendars, and other articles made by wounded French soldiers were sold from a booth in front of Odd Fellows' Hall on Fort street. A sale of Christmas articles, including souvenirs made by the French wounded and American veterans of the war, was held by the Honolulu Committee at the Library of Hawaii on November 21, Miss Ethel Damon, who had been in France with the Red Cross, being the principal speaker.

The treasurer's report, from the organization of the committee in November, 1916, up to May 1, 1918, showed that total receipts had been \$53,694.69, of which about \$442.37 had gone to defray expenses. Contributions to Demetre Brothers and Beals had amounted to \$844.50; to the Society for the Relief of French War Orphans, \$260; and to the Society for the Relief of the Fatherless Children of France, \$44,931.50, a total of \$46,478.37, leaving a balance of \$7,216.32. The amount forwarded from January 1, 1918, to May 1, 1919, was \$55,725. Various scattered appeals for French war sufferers other than those assisted by the committee reached Honolulu from time to time, many of which received a generous response.



In recognition of her services on behalf of French war orphans the French government sent to Mrs. Dillingham, through the State Department at Washington, a medal bearing the inscription, "Temoignage de profonde reconnaissance de la France à Mrs. Walter F. Dillingham" ("A testimony of the profound gratitude of France to Mrs. Walter F. Dillingham").

#### AMBULANCES AND HOSPITAL WARDS

Of the total amount collected for the British Red Cross Society and the Order of St. John of Jerusalem on Trafalgar Day ("Our Day") in October, 1916, the local committee proposed that five hundred pounds should be used to provide a fully equipped motor ambulance for service with the British Expeditionary Force in France, and the British Club undertook to raise funds for its maintenance. The plan was carried out and in the spring of 1917 a picture of the ambulance was received in Honolulu. The car bore on its side the inscriptions, "British Red Cross Society—St. John Ambulance Assn." and "Presented by the British Residents in the Hawaiian Islands."

On March 28, 1917, the members of the Honolulu Ad Club heard an address by Dr. J. R. Judd, who had just returned from a year's service in French hospitals. After hearing his appeal the club pledged itself to furnish an ambulance for service abroad. A committee was appointed and on April 28 a draft for \$1,600 was forwarded to Paris for this purpose. An ambulance was purchased and marked with a plate inscribed, "Honolulu Ad Club." In April, 1918, W. R. Farrington, president of the club, received the following letter from Stephen Galatin of the American Field Service in France: "I am writing to advise you that the ambulance donated by the Honolulu Ad Club and bearing that inscription is now in service, being No. 102 in one of our sections with the French army at the front. . . . I do not know how long we will be able to keep in touch with our donors as we have been taken over by the army."

In the summer of 1917 the University Club of Honolulu donated an ambulance to the American Field Service in France.

The record of this car shows that it "was sent to the American Echelon of the French First Army at Campdeville and was there attached to the United States Army Ambulance Service with the French Army, serving, among other places, in the campaign of the Amiens, Montdidier Sector."

As noted elsewhere in this volume, the Hawaiian Tennis Association donated an ambulance through the National Lawn Tennis Association for service in France.

From the time of his return to Hawaii in the spring of 1917, Dr. Judd urged larger contributions to the work of the American Ambulance in France. To that end he gave many illustrated lectures and in the fall of the year, through local contributions to the fund for the American Ambulance, a Hawaiian ward was established in American Military Red Cross Hospital No. 1, to be operated for two years with the \$12,000 raised in Hawaii. Early in 1919 Miss Mary C. Alexander, who was doing Red Cross reconstruction work in the devastated districts of France, wrote an interesting letter to Dr. Judd in which she described the "Hawaii Ward" which she found at the Neuilly Hospital.

"New Year's Day one of our unit asked me to go with her to visit a ward at the Neuilly Hospital. You can imagine my interest on reaching the ward to see 'Hawaii Ward' over the door. I had paid extravagant prices for an armful of flowers, and to my surprise found they didn't have any flowers at all and welcomed them so eagerly that in one instance I almost wept. Miss Alma Clark, the nurse's aid in charge of the Hawaii Ward, seems cut out for the work. She is young, robust and rosy, and so friendly and sympathetic and withal so sensible with the boys. There are eleven in the ward, a Frenchman and boys from New Jersey, California, Pennsylvania and I don't remember what other states."

Thirty-six hundred dollars of the proceeds of a Red Cross entertainment given in 1917 by the men of the First and Ninth Field Artillery at Schofield Barracks went to endow three beds for three years each in the American Hospital at Paris and were

said to be the only hospital beds in Europe endowed by the enlisted men of the American army. Over each of the beds was placed the name plate of the First and Ninth Artillery.

#### MISCELLANEOUS FUNDS

With the outbreak of the war in 1914 the German people living in the territory and their friends began to send contributions to the German Red Cross Society. These were kept up faithfully; in May, 1916, an explanation was given by Mrs. Carl Du Roi, in which it was estimated that \$110,000 had been contributed up to that time. Five committees were formed to have general charge of the work, representing the German (Lutheran) Church, the Deutsche Frauen-Verein von Hawaii, the Hermanns Soehne, the German-American Alliance, and the German ships in port. When the United States entered the war this organized German relief necessarily ceased, and no reports are available showing the total amount sent to the German Red Cross and other German relief organizations.

Early in November, 1917, a drive was launched by the A Patria Society of Honolulu for funds for the Portuguese Red Cross. The general committee was composed of Portuguese Consul General A. da C. Pessoa, president; Professor E. da Costa, vice president; L. P. Correa, secretary; Dr. L. R. Gaspar, treasurer; M. D. Santos, J. B. Ponte, and the following delegates from various Portuguese societies: J. C. Sousa, A. H. R. Vieira, B. Camara, Jr., Frank Branco, M. I. Paschoal, Felix Tranquada, J. M. Gomes, and K. F. Oliveira. The drive continued until the last of January, 1918, at which time Consul General Pessoa, custodian of the fund, forwarded to the minister of foreign affairs at Lisbon a draft for the equivalent of \$5,584.75.

In November, 1917, the Salvation Army received the endorsement of the Charities and Social Welfare Committee of the Chamber of Commerce for a drive to raise \$2,000. In May, 1918, similar endorsement was given for a further sum of \$5,000. And in the summer the local branch of the Salvation

Army undertook to raise \$50,000 as Hawaii's share of the national organization's two million dollar war fund. While no complete reports are available as to the outcome of these drives, the evidence seems to indicate that the total amount obtained was in the neighborhood of \$40,000.

As early as the spring of 1915 Honoluluans were receiving acknowledgments of their gifts of tobacco to men in the British trenches, Mrs. Frances Osmond having been active in the work of collecting the money. In October, 1917, Mrs. Edmund Johnson forwarded money enough to supply tobacco for 364 British Tommies. On February 14, 1918, the story of Arthur Guy Empey, the man who wrote "Over the Top," was read to the members of the Rotary Club at luncheon and they instantly decided to start a tobacco fund in Honolulu to purchase "smokes" for the boys in France. A territory-wide drive was organized; Major C. G. Mettler, Julius Unger, Fred L. Waldron, Irwin Spalding, and Riley H. Allen being appointed members of the "Smoke" Committee. The committee would not solicit subscriptions, it was stated, but only asked the denial of some small pleasure. By the last of May about \$3,600 had been remitted and was in the hands of the national "Our Boys in France Tobacco Fund" when it was announced that the government had taken over the entire output of six large tobacco manufacturers and would ship and sell the tobacco and cigarettes to the soldiers at cost. The local campaign was therefore closed.

At a luncheon meeting of the Honolulu Ad Club on June 27, 1917, Colonel R. G. Ebert, chief medical officer of the Hawaiian Department, expressed the opinion that the women of Hawaii could do more for the soldiers by making guava jelly than by rolling bandages. While the suggestion did not cause any lessening of the supply of surgical dressings which were being sent to the front from this territory, it did result in the appointment of an Ad Club committee to investigate the jelly proposition. The upshot of the matter was that in January, 1918, fifteen cases (fourteen from the Ad Club and one from Mrs. Henry Williams), containing 10,000 small jars of guava jelly were

shipped from Honolulu under direction of General John H. Soper, to be distributed in the military hospitals in France by the American Red Cross. Other shipments were made later, some of them going to military and naval hospitals in the United States. Letters of thanks were received both from the Red Cross and from some of the boys to whom the jelly was delivered. One of the latter (A. F. Hennes of the U. S. S. *North Dakota*) wrote from a naval hospital in New York: "And tonight each one of us got one of your little jars. 'Smile with the Honolulu Ad Club!' Believe me, I did, with delight and surprise. It is with fond recollections that I think of Honolulu and Kauai, for I taught school at Anahola."

In August, 1917, Mrs. Mary E. Soper started the Trinket Fund, of which the following explanation was given in a local newspaper: "The idea is that if the bits of broken and discarded jewelry lying around, the silver spoons that are broken, and the other bits of precious metals in unused trinkets can be brought together, the value of the miscellaneous collection will be considerable and provide the money for some ambulance unit or some other urgent necessity. If you have any trinket considered not worth repairing or a worn silver thimble or anything of the kind, take it to the Hawaiian News and drop it in the Trinket Fund Box, kept there in charge of Miss Minnie M. Todd. Make it help win the war." By the last of August many valuable trinkets and heirlooms had been collected and sent in. Two boxes were used—one for gold and one for silver. Soon after the middle of September twenty-eight pounds of gold and silver were sent away and thirty-five pounds were forwarded about the middle of November.

A Ball and Bat Fund started about the end of October, 1917, to help send baseball equipment to the American fighting men in France, found a ready response in Hawaii. The particular occasion for the fund grew out of the fact that the steamship *Kansan*, carrying several thousand dollars worth of baseball paraphernalia, was sunk by a German submarine. Mrs. Isadore R. Scharlin had charge of the local fund. The soldiers in the

Hawaiian military posts gave substantial sums and contributions came in from all the islands.

"Eyes Are Wanted for the Navy; Hawaii Will Contribute Glasses" was the headline appearing over a newspaper story on February 13, 1918, notifying the people of Hawaii that a movement had been started for the contribution of binoculars and other glasses to the Navy Department. Colonel J. W. Jones, former adjutant general of the territory, inaugurated the movement after reading in a mainland periodical an appeal from Assistant Secretary of the Navy Franklin D. Roosevelt. H. F. Wichman & Company offered to receive all glasses contributed, put them in order, list, pack, and send them without charge. The first shipment, consisting of 254 opera glasses, telescopes, and binoculars contributed by the citizens of the territory, was sent off on February 23 en route to Secretary of the Navy Daniels at Washington, a letter also being forwarded to him by Colonel Jones through Captain G. R. Clark, commandant at Pearl Harbor, giving the full list of donors, and types of glasses, together with stories attached to many of them. In acknowledgment it was stated that the Navy Department would write a letter to each donor, accompanied by a government voucher for \$1. As soon as 850 glasses had been donated, the second shipment was sent off. The goal was set at 1,000. Early on the morning of May 7 that mark was passed and Colonel Jones closed the collection at noon on May 13, the total number being 1,014.

A typical letter of thanks was received by Otto Bierbach in January, 1919, when his glasses were sent back to him from the Naval Observatory at Washington—the first pair returned to Hawaii, so far as was known, of the many that were donated. "We hope that the signs of use on these glasses will be compensated by the knowledge that they have been of use to the United States during the war." Similar letters were received by others, and each person who contributed received an engraved certificate from the Navy Department.

CERTIFICATE OF SERVICE

1914

1918

AMERICAN FIELD SERVICE IN FRANCE

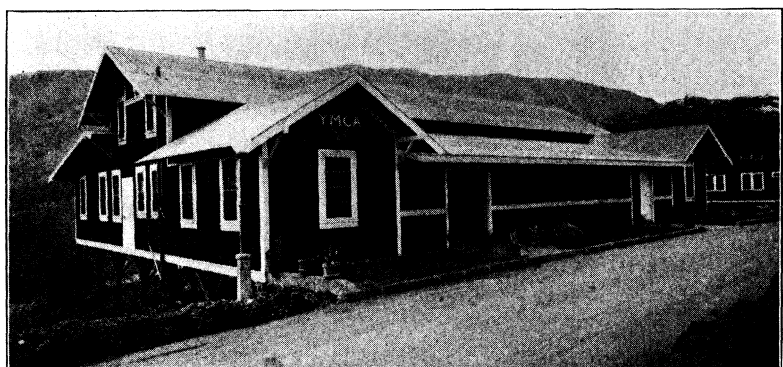
To  
The Members of the University Club of Hawaii  
Friends of the  
American Field Service  
Donors of Car No 1012  
Bearing inscription  
"University Club  
of Hawaii"

Ambulance No 1012, donated in the summer  
of 1917, was sent to the American Echelon of  
the French First Army, at Campdeville, and  
was there attached to the United States Army  
Ambulance Service with the French Army,  
serving, among other places, in the campaign  
of the Amiens, Montdidier Sector.

*Harry S. Jones*  
Director

Donnelly & Berg

SERVICE CERTIFICATE OF AMBULANCE DONATED BY  
UNIVERSITY CLUB OF HONOLULU



#### Y. M. C. A. WORKERS AND BUILDINGS

Above (left to right): James Wakefield, member of National War Work Council of the Y. M. C. A.'s of the United States, and chairman of Honolulu Advisory Committee; Urban Williams, District Secretary for National War Work Council; A. H. Tarleton, city demobilization secretary.

Middle: Y. M. C. A. Hut at Schofield Barracks erected by N. W. W. C.

Below: Hut at Fort Ruger.



## CHAPTER X

### THE ARMY AND NAVY Y. M. C. A.

#### "WHAT CAN HONOLULU DO FOR THE SOLDIER?"

THE question, "What can Honolulu do for the soldiers?" was a topic of general discussion over a period of years. Many individuals and organizations took an active interest in the question; investigations were carried on and various plans suggested. The solution of the problem, through the purchase of the old Royal Hawaiian Hotel and its transformation into the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., was in large measure due to the intelligent and persistent efforts of James Wakefield, backed by the Honolulu Ad Club.

On August 10, 1914, Mr. Wakefield, who was present by invitation at a meeting of the territorial affairs committee of the Chamber of Commerce, spoke in behalf of a project which had been in his mind for a long time—that of a clubhouse for soldiers who came to Honolulu from the various army posts on the island. The men required a place where they could obtain a wholesome meal and a bed for the night at a minimum price, he explained, and they also needed various types of amusement. It should not be necessary for them to go to the saloons for the lack of a better place.

Though no definite plan was formed at the time, it was the consensus of opinion that some provision should be made and it was thought best to consult with the soldiers and get their views; to ask the Oahu railroad company to reduce soldiers' fares to Honolulu; and to address a letter to General Carter, in command of the army on Oahu, and find out, if possible, what plan would best suit the service men. Mr. Wakefield, accompanied by J. D. Dougherty, was to call on the governor.

The subject was also discussed at a "Soldiers' Day" meeting of the Honolulu Ad Club on August 12, at which Mr.

Wakefield was again the principal speaker. He expressed the opinion that the citizens ought to take a greater interest in the soldiers, and suggested a lower railroad rate between Schofield and Honolulu and a service club in the city, preferably at the beach. Another idea brought out by other speakers was that the soldiers ought to have the right to wear civilian clothes when off duty. Definite action was taken by the appointment of a committee, consisting of James Wakefield, H. L. Strange, and Lorrin A. Thurston, to devise some practical plan for dealing with the problem.

An open letter to the soldiers sent out by the Chamber of Commerce toward the end of the month asked them to suggest amusements which they would appreciate on their visits to town. One of the most pertinent of the replies received advocated the establishment of an army and navy Y. M. C. A. in Honolulu. The expressed opinion of both officers and men, it developed at a meeting of the territorial affairs committee on August 27, was that the wearing of civilian clothes when off duty would be a help; and Chairman L. Tenney Peck was asked to consult with General Carter in regard to the feasibility of approaching the war department in regard to the privilege. Reporting on a conference with the General, Mr. Peck stated on September 17, that much correspondence had already been formally passed on the subject but that the matter would be taken up with the secretary of war through the territorial delegate to Congress.

The Oahu Railway did not think it advisable to decrease the \$1.25 round trip fare from Schofield for soldiers, unless a larger volume of traffic was guaranteed, and it was decided that, if the request did not interfere with interstate commerce acts, the railroad company should be asked, as an experiment, to extend a reduced excursion rate to the soldiers at Schofield for a brief time.

The Ad Club committee, which was finally composed of five members (James Wakefield, chairman; Brigadier General S. I. Johnson; Captain Norris Stayton; L. A. Thurston, and Emil A. Berndt), "devoted much time and thought to the sub-

ject, visited the several army posts, interviewed officers and men and consulted civilians who had made a specialty of the subject, and finally recommended the establishment in Honolulu of an Army and Navy Y. M. C. A." Mr. Thurston, commenting on this period in an address given in 1916, stated that as a member of the Ad Club committee he had gone to Schofield Barracks, had interviewed officers and chaplains and had received a strong suggestion from the latter that a club of the type of the Y. M. C. A., with a reading room and gymnasium and a place to swim, would be advisable. A site on government land in Kewalo had been found and as it was thought this might be set aside for the purpose, builders had been asked to give preliminary estimates. Various objections were raised, however, and the matter was finally dropped.

The committee took up the subject with the International Y. M. C. A. committee and after considerable correspondence sent that committee an invitation to establish a branch of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. in Honolulu. In response to their request, John S. Tichenor, executive head of the national body, and Fred A. McCarl, came to Hawaii in the fall of 1915, investigated the subject and recommended to the national organization the opening of the work in Honolulu. Mr. Tichenor showed great familiarity with the subject stating that he had communicated with the secretary of war, the latter being most urgent that a branch of the organization be established here.

While in Honolulu, Messrs. Tichenor and McCarl attended a meeting of the territorial affairs committee of the Chamber of Commerce (October 13, 1915) called for the purpose of considering whether the Chamber in conjunction with the local Y. M. C. A., could do anything for soldiers and sailors when off duty. Mr. Tichenor recommended to the committee (1) the securing of an annual budget of \$3,000 or \$3,500 for three years to place a trained army and navy secretary in Honolulu for investigation, study, and organization of the work for soldiers and sailors; (2) the securing as soon as possible of a \$75,000 army and navy Y. M. C. A. building for Honolulu; (3) the securing as soon as possible of a \$10,000

building for the 25th Infantry at Schofield Barracks and eventually the erection of an army "Y" building at Castner. The committee decided to recommend that the Chamber underwrite the amount of \$3,000 for three years for the purpose of securing a secretary in accordance with Mr. Tichenor's suggestion. A meeting of the board of directors of the Chamber on November 10, to which the matter had been referred, expressed the opinion that there were, no doubt, other and more direct ways of accomplishment as the matter was out of the scope of the Chamber, and the question was referred back to various committees jointly.

"Enlisted men of the army on Oahu do not want to be treated as 'soldiers' but as 'human beings,'" General Carter said toward the last of October, adding that Honolulu should not go on multiplying institutions of various kinds for the exclusive use of soldiers, as the men wanted to be considered on their own merits and to be allowed some measure of participation in the life of the community as men. He drew attention, a few days later, to the very large military population which was becoming an integral part of Honolulu life and emphasized the need of suitable amusement places.

Various additional plans were suggested during November, among them being the establishment of an Army Y. M. C. A. at Schofield Barracks, a strictly supervised public dance hall, and a bathing pavilion at Waikiki. The Chamber endorsed the request of Mrs. Melville Moncrief to solicit subscriptions to the sum of \$400 with which to establish a comfort station, lunch counter, and reading and smoking room at the corner of Nuuanu and Pauahi Streets for the accommodation of soldiers and sailors and men who had no other place to go.

Upon considering the underwriting of expenses of a secretary to demonstrate the necessity for an Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., the finance and audit committee of the Chamber of Commerce reported in the negative, and after an address by Frank Atherton, Y. M. C. A. president, on December 9, the matter was referred to the January meeting. Mr. Atherton explained that, if the merchants wished to contribute to the

fund with which to employ a secretary, one could be secured, but in the absence of financial backing, it would be impossible for the Y. M. C. A. to meet the expense. If an army and navy "Y" building were obtained, he said, it would cost not less than \$40,000 or \$50,000 and the money for it would have to come from the community.

The discussion of the subject was continued by various committees in the early part of 1916.

Chaplain Ignatius Fealy, athletic officer of the First Field Artillery at Schofield, after gaining the approval of the governor and of the department commander, asked for the favorable opinion of the board of retail trades on the matter of erecting and maintaining a frame and concrete building at Schofield at a cost of about \$10,000 which would be used for athletic sports, explaining that, if such a building were erected, it would meet the desire of the people of Honolulu to do something for the soldier. This resulted, at a members' meeting on February 16, in the decision of the Chamber to ask the soldiers themselves, through an article with an attached coupon, to appear in the daily papers each day for one week, what the city of Honolulu could do for them.

Responses to the question gave a variety of views. Army men, as well as readers in general, advised the Chamber regarding local improvements in the way of amusements; many of the replies were critical; and opposing answers were given. A members' meeting on March 15 disclosed the fact that only 79 answers had been received from the approximately 7,000 men at Schofield Barracks and at Castner, and the matter was finally referred to the new board of directors.

At a meeting of the charities and social welfare committee on May 10, the matter was disposed of for the time being by the adoption of the following resolution:

"Whereas, so little interest has been shown by soldiers themselves, only about 1 per cent having replied to coupons published in the newspapers; and

"Whereas, there is also a difference of opinion among the members of the committee as to what should be done;

"Now, therefore, be it Resolved, That, for the present, the question as to what shall be done for the soldier be held in abeyance until such time as the soldiers themselves may reach a more unanimous opinion, at which time the matter again receive serious consideration, and, in the meantime, further study be given."

The question was again presented to the Chamber of Commerce on January 9, 1917, when Colonel Bolles of Fort Shafter protested to a directors' meeting over a raise in the price of films to army posts by the Consolidated Amusement Company, saying that, if the soldiers could not have their pictures, they would have to come to town for their amusement.

In the meanwhile the efforts of the Ad Club committee and the investigation of Messrs. Tichenor and McCarl had resulted in the decision by the national organization to establish an Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. in Honolulu. Mr. McCarl was appointed to take charge of the work and it was expected that he would arrive sometime in the fall of 1916. Unfortunately, the Mexican border trouble required the entire available force of the national organization and the inauguration of the work in Honolulu had to be temporarily postponed.

An editorial in the *Advertiser*, March 5, 1917, reviewed the earlier work of the Ad Club and made this statement:

"During the past week the committee has received word that Mr. F. A. McCarl, the head of the San Francisco branch of the organization, would arrive in Honolulu before the middle of March, accompanied by an associate, for the purpose of taking up the work actively. Mr. McCarl is one of the ablest and most experienced men connected with the administration of army and navy work. His personal presence is a guarantee that the work will be begun right and prosecuted with vigor. The establishment and operation of a plant that will cater to the great posts located in and about Honolulu will ultimately require a large sum of money—more than the people of this city can be expected to meet alone. It will, in fact, be a national enterprise; but with a very decided local end. There is no question, however, that Honolulu should, can and will

finance the preliminary expenses, which have been estimated at not to exceed say \$3,500 to \$5,000 for the first year. As soon as the gentlemen of the national organization have got their bearings and formulated a plan of procedure, it will be put into operation forthwith, and an opportunity will be given to Honolulu to start this enterprise 'for the benefit of the soldier.' The Advertiser is confident that our citizens will consider it a privilege to join in the inauguration of a project which will afford the men of the Army and Navy who are from time to time located among us, more profit, pleasure and permanent as well as temporary benefit, than any other which can be devised."

An article in the May number of *The Friend* explained the situation at the beginning of that month.

"Mr. F. A. McCarl, Secretary of the International Committee's Army and Navy Department, arrived in Honolulu early in March to spend several weeks making a survey of the need of Association work for soldiers and sailors. Mr. McCarl brought with him Mr. W. A. Horn, who was formerly General Secretary of the Oakland Association. Mr. Horn has been appointed secretary of the local work. He resigned his position in charge of the Navy Y. M. C. A. at Mare Island to accept the work in Hawaii.

"Although the survey has not been completed and definite plans decided upon, Mr. McCarl says that he knows of no place in America where there is greater need for this work. There is no other post or group of posts in such a small area containing so many men. He states that two changes in the character of the men in the Army make it urgent that this work be inaugurated at once. The first of them is the fact that the age limit for enlisting has been reduced from 18 to 16 years. This means that a large part of the soldiers will be mere boys. The second thing is that the recruiting is now being done in the interior states instead of the coast and river cities. This is resulting in a higher type of young men enlist-

ing and the possibilities of constructive religious work among them are greater."

#### PURCHASE OF ROYAL HAWAIIAN HOTEL

The survey of the situation by Messrs. McCarl and Horn and the Ad Club's Army and Navy Committee resulted in a recommendation that the Royal Hawaiian Hotel be purchased and fitted up as an Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. This recommendation was embodied in a report by the committee to the Ad Club at its meeting on May 2, 1917, with the endorsement of General Strong, commander of the Hawaiian Department, Captain Clark, commandant of the Naval Station; F. C. Atherton, president of the local Y. M. C. A., and Dr. Lucien C. Warner of New York, a member of the International Committee, who was visiting in Honolulu at the time. The plan called for an expenditure of \$275,000 for the purchase and remodeling of the property, Hawaii to supply \$100,000, the International Committee to contribute the balance. The Ad Club committee had secured an option on the hotel building and grounds. The Alexander Young Estate, owner of the property, offered the furnishings of the hotel, valued at \$10,000, and an initial subscription of \$12,500.

The project was unanimously endorsed by the Ad Club which immediately laid plans for a whirlwind campaign to raise the amount required from Honolulu. A resolution was adopted requesting the cooperation of other organizations and of the people generally. The committee was enlarged and reorganized in order to give it greater scope; as finally made up it consisted of Lorrin A. Thurston, chairman; J. R. Galt, treasurer; Georg Rodiek, W. O. Smith, Walter F. Dillingham, W. R. Farrington, James D. Dougherty, Emil A. Berndt, J. Morton Riggs, Major Edward Carpenter, representing the army, and Lieutenant Benjamin F. Tilley, representing the navy.

As soon as the project had been definitely outlined, Mr. McCarl departed for New York to place the matter before the



national organization and urge the appropriation of the \$175,000 needed from that end. The local campaign had to be pushed as rapidly as possible, since action by the national body was dependent upon an assurance of adequate local support, and the option on the hotel property could not be held indefinitely.

The launching of this movement met with an enthusiastic response from the entire community. The newspapers gave it the heartiest support. The *Star-Bulletin* said editorially, "A hundred thousand dollars is a small price to pay for a move that will give to our fellow-citizens in khaki and in sailor blue a home here among us—will make them a part of this community in a social, livable, and friendly way as they are now part in a military way." General Strong called the idea the finest thing ever suggested for the army in Honolulu. "Such a Y. M. C. A. as Honolulu proposes to establish for the army and navy is far and away the biggest thing for the welfare and happiness of the enlisted man that has ever come to these Islands." The General issued orders to post commanders directing them to appoint treasurers to receive contributions, adding, "it is important that the army indicate in no uncertain terms its desire to have this enterprise succeed."

A sub-committee (W. F. Dillingham, J. R. Galt, Georg Rodiek, and E. A. Berndt) outlined a plan of campaign for raising the \$100,000, and the soliciting of subscriptions was begun without delay. The Chamber of Commerce and Rotary Club gave their endorsement. By May 10 the fund had been pushed well over the half way mark. On the evening of that day, Mr. Horn cabled to New York, "Sixty-three thousand subscribed. Hope to get balance soon." On June 11 a cablegram brought the news that national headquarters had taken final and favorable action on the purchase. It was stated that a mortgage would be placed on the property for two years, the international committee to make the final payment. The last of the necessary \$100,000 was pledged by June 21.

The passing of the deed of the Royal Hawaiian Hotel from

the hands of Archibald Young to those of James Wakefield, chairman of the committee of management, was accomplished on the hotel premises at 10 o'clock on the morning of August 3. Thus was established the first Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. in the territory; and thus passed a famous center of the social, political and military life of the islands for forty-five years. Mr. Young was accompanied by C. C. von Hamm, secretary of the estate; and with Mr. Wakefield were W. A. Horn and members of the Ad Club Committee on the Army and Navy—L. A. Thurston, W. O. Smith, W. R. Farrington, J. R. Galt, and J. D. Dougherty.

With C. B. Ripley in charge, the remodeling of the building was started on August 6, most of the work being done on the first floor, as only minor changes were made on the others. The cottage plan was to predominate, it was announced, and apartments would be rented to enlisted men with wives. Rooms were to be available at 50 cents, 75 cents, and a dollar.

"They won't believe it's true," said Mr. Horn on August 18. "I have seen the men come into the yard, look up at the big building and across the pretty grounds and hesitate to come in. The soldiers can hardly believe that this place belongs to them."

The dedication and opening exercises of the new Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. were held November 25-29, 1917. With the grounds, lanais, and corridors made colorful with hundreds of American and Hawaiian flags, the building was presented to the men of the army, navy, and marine corps at 3 o'clock on Sunday afternoon, November 25, James Wakefield presiding. The U. S. Navy band, Charles E. Douglas, bandmaster, furnished the music; Rev. David C. Peters gave the invocation, Rev. Leon L. Loofbourow, a Scripture reading, and Rev. J. H. Williams, D. D., the prayer of dedication. George A. Brown sang and Fred B. Smith of New York made the dedicatory address. After songs by Mrs. Charles L. Hall and the singing of the national anthem, Bishop Restarick gave the benediction.

On Monday, November 26, a reception was held for the contributors to the fund, the members of the Honolulu Ad Club, the

board of directors, and officers and committees of the Y. M. C. A., the Y. W. C. A., and friends. The next day there was a reception for the contributing officers and enlisted men and their friends, James Wakefield presiding. Greetings were extended by the secretaries in charge. Brigadier General John P. Wisser, commanding the Hawaiian Department, Captain George R. Clark, commandant of the Pearl Harbor Naval Station, and Brigadier General Samuel I. Johnson, commanding the Hawaiian National Guard, made the responses, and an address by Fred B. Smith concluded the program.

A union prayer service of all the churches, followed by a reception and social hour, was held in the auditorium on the evening of November 28; and on the next afternoon and evening the public was invited to view the building. "Men of the Army, Navy and Marine Corps," the program announced, "this is your club. Make it your headquarters while in town. There are no membership fees. Your uniform entitles you to all privileges of the Army and Navy Young Men's Christian Association." A gymnasium, bowling alley, and swimming pool would be provided, it was stated, as soon as funds could be secured.

#### WORK OF THE ARMY AND NAVY Y. M. C. A.

As permanently organized, the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. in Honolulu was under the control of a committee of management consisting of James Wakefield, chairman; F. D. Lowrey, treasurer; E. A. Berndt, Arthur G. Smith, Dr. James A. Morgan, and John Waterhouse. The men in charge of the building were W. A. Horn, supervising secretary; Howard N. Mosher, associate secretary, and George A. Andrus and Thomas A. Fisher, assistant secretaries.

About this time an important change took place in the national organization, the Army and Navy Department of the Y. M. C. A. being taken over by the National War Work Council. The *Star-Bulletin* of October 5, 1918, published an article which explained the working of this new Council.

"The National War Work Council of the Young Men's Christian Association is a war-time organization, which was brought into being early in 1917 at the event of our going into the present world war. It consists of one hundred and seventy-five prominent business men of the entire country who are definitely interested in the social and religious welfare of the enlisted personnel and who are backing the organization with their influence and their money. William Sloane of New York is its chairman; Cleveland H. Dodge, treasurer, and Dr. John R. Mott, general secretary. The newly formed organization has practically taken over all permanent work which was formerly operated under the supervision of the army and navy department of the Y. M. C. A. and has built buildings in all the camps and cantonments on the mainland and have, at present, about seven hundred centers in operation with approximately four thousand secretaries to make the work possible."

By the first of the year 1918 accommodations at the new Army and Navy "Y" were found to be inadequate to house all the soldiers who daily went there for amusement and recreation and Mr. Horn left Honolulu for New York to ask the directors of the national association for appropriations to erect necessary additions. He had in mind the construction of a 500-room building in front of the main building, a large athletic court with seating accommodations for 1,500 persons, and a 90-foot swimming pool. He was also to discuss with the National War Work Council the general situation in Hawaii.

Mr. Horn's trip east was fruitful of results. In March it was announced that, as part of its large building program for the army posts and cantonments throughout the country, the National War Work Council had decided to erect buildings for its work at the various posts in Hawaii. The Council appropriated money for the erection of the buildings, but it was hoped by the officers in charge that many of the furnishings would be given by the people of Honolulu. Such buildings would become branches of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. in Honolulu and all work in them would be directed from that point. Three new

secretaries (F. R. Dudley, C. H. Blesse, and C. L. Glenn) were assigned to the work in Hawaii and arrived in May.

Upon Mr. Horn's return from New York the extension of the work was actively taken up. General Wisser, commander of the Hawaiian Department, selected appropriate sites for buildings at Schofield Barracks and at Fort Kamehameha, and plans for the buildings received consideration. By the middle of July, branches of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. had been opened at Fort Armstrong and Fort Shafter. A tent at the former post was fitted up with a piano, reading materials, and other additions to the comfort of the soldiers. C. L. Glenn was in charge with Nicholas Dizon, new secretary of the Filipino Y. M. C. A., as his assistant. Major E. F. Witsell, post commander, had made every provision for carrying on successful work. Colonel Riley, commandant at Fort Shafter, had assigned a room in the headquarters building for the use of the "Y"; it was opened July 11 with C. H. Blesse in charge, assisted by W. M. Templeton.

In the fall of 1918 Clarence P. Dodge and F. A. Jackson, officers of the National War Work Council, arrived in Honolulu to make a survey of the local situation. *The Friend* for September gives this account of their visit:

"Mr. Clarence P. Dodge, a member of the National War Work Council, and F. A. Jackson, associate secretary of the Western Department, are now on a visit to the islands and with the Committee of Management of the Army and Navy Association have been making a careful study of the needs. They have met with a cordial reception from officers and men. According to the report which has been adopted, the National War Work Council of the Y. M. C. A. will take over the operation of the Army and Navy building for the period of the war. An adequate staff will be provided to carry on the work in this building and to extend it into all the posts on the islands.

"Urban Williams, one of the executive secretaries of the Southern Department, has been assigned to Honolulu as camp general secretary in place of W. A. Horn, who has been assigned

to duty on the mainland. Howard Mosher is the assistant camp secretary and secretary of the Honolulu building. F. R. Dudley will continue his duties as supervisor of religious work in the main building and in the various camps. C. H. Blesse will supervise the athletic work in all the camps and directly promote them in the smaller camps not having athletic directors. Charles F. Loomis, of Kauai, has assumed his duties as camp educational director, and, with Paul Steele as associate, is cooperating with the officers in charge in an extensive program of studies in English among the men of the first and second Hawaiian Infantry. About five thousand men are enrolled in these classes. C. L. Glenn has been assigned as physical director at Schofield and M. I. Condon social secretary at the same post.

"Plans have been accepted and construction begun on the Schofield and Kamehameha buildings at once, and it is expected that they will be complete within a month. A smaller building is planned at Fort Ruger, and one is contemplated at Fort Shafter. The small posts and stations will be served by an extension secretary, who will pay frequent visits to the men and provide writing material, reading matter, arrange athletic events and other forms of entertainment. Among those to be added to the staff is a camp song leader. The work of the song leader is proving of great value in the program of good cheer put on by the Y. M. C. A. men.

"The buildings as planned will contain social and class rooms, well provided with writing tables, reading matter, games, etc., and athletic equipment will be provided out of doors near the buildings. The plan being used is the standard F type being used on the mainland with a broad, screened lanai added and other changes made to suit conditions here. The work will be administered with the advice and cooperation of an advisory committee consisting of James Wakefield, chairman; Frederick D. Lowrey, treasurer; and Dr. J. A. Morgan, John Waterhouse, Arthur G. Smith and E. A. Berndt. All of these men have rendered valuable service as members of the committee of management of the Army and Navy building. The interest of other citizens will be asked from time to time."

At the beginning of September, 1918, the National War Work Council of the Y. M. C. A.'s of the United States, with Urban Williams as district executive secretary for the Hawaiian Islands, took over the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. administration in the territory, including not only the central building, formerly the Royal Hawaiian Hotel, but all the work conducted in the military posts.

The *Star-Bulletin* of December 14, 1918, states that "more than \$50,000 will be spent for buildings and equipment in this district and a monthly budget of from \$8000 to \$9000 will be necessary to meet the expenses when present plans are realized."

Ground was broken on September 12 for the "hut" at Schofield, a building 112 feet long with an extreme width of 70 feet, which was planned to contain an auditorium, games room, reading and writing room, and other equipment including a piano and phonograph. The location—between the Schofield National Bank and the Post Exchange and the theater of the Fourth Cavalry—had been made possible by Col. J. W. Heard, post commander; General Blocksom, department commander, and Col. G. S. Bingham, department quartermaster.

At the opening of this Y. M. C. A. hut on the evening of November 13, 1918, Governor McCarthy made the principal address. James Wakefield, chairman of the advisory board of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., gave the dedication speech. Urban Williams, representing the National War Work Council, formally presented the building, and Lieutenant Colonel Donald S. Bowman of the First Hawaiian Infantry accepted it on behalf of the post. Between fifty and seventy-five prominent social workers of Honolulu were present. The building and equipment cost about \$11,500. Later two government buildings were fitted out for use in the old post.

Paul Steele was assigned to the Castner "Y" building as ranking officer in charge. With him were C. L. Glenn, athletic secretary; M. I. Condon, social secretary, and Juan Regala and Pedro Royola, assistants. Frank S. Scudder was in the work at Schofield for six months beginning with October 1, 1918.

Lloyd R. Killam, who had had wide experience as a worker in camp service, was located at Castner for two months from the middle of December. During the spring of 1919, Charles F. Loomis was appointed special demobilization secretary at Schofield Barracks and was very helpful during that critical period.

Immediately following the completion of the building at Schofield, work was begun at Fort Ruger and the building was completed and dedicated in December, 1918, at a cost of \$7,500 for construction and equipment. The building at Fort Kamehameha was dedicated on the evening of January 30, 1919, being the third unit erected since the first of September. On this occasion, Mr. Wakefield made the dedicatory address. Urban Williams presented the building, and Colonel John W. C. Abbott responded for the army. The special need at that post was found to be educational, and classes were conducted in English, mathematics, spelling, penmanship, civics, and automobile engineering.

A new addition to the string of Red Triangle huts was opened in May, 1919, at Fort DeRussy with C. C. Barns in charge. Appropriations were made in the fall of 1918 for a building at Fort Shafter, of the same type as those at Schofield and Fort Ruger, but it was finally decided that this building was not necessary, owing to the proximity of the post to the city.

At the beginning of November, 1918, when the work was just getting under way in the camps, there were fifteen Y. M. C. A. secretaries working in Honolulu and the adjacent posts. This number was increased as more buildings were completed and the need became greater. In July, 1919, the Hawaiian district staff of the National War Work Council was composed of the following secretaries: Urban Williams, B. D. Beck, G. A. Wesson, D. L. Foster, W. E. Givens, John W. Wadman, I. D. Vayhinger, H. W. Metcalf, R. W. Thacker, C. E. Bingman, M. M. Morgan, O. E. Long, H. W. Page, E. D. Bayerle, R. N. Corbaley, R. W. Bayless, C. C. Barns, E. A. Corey, Huber Burr, H. A. Rudin, and Don Williams.

The work done by these secretaries in the camps followed the usual threefold idea of the Y. M. C. A. As in cantonments on



the mainland, there was found to be a special need for educational work. Of this work at Schofield, *The Friend*, October, 1918, states: "One of the pressing needs is to teach English to the large number who are deficient in this important qualification. Compulsory attendance of those in need of this instruction brings the educational secretaries a rare opportunity for wide acquaintance and good citizenship work, and an open sesame to swing open the doors for religious instruction." At Fort Kamehameha, there were classes in English, mathematics, spelling, penmanship, civics, and automobile engineering. The other camps carried on work of similar character. At Fort Shafter the secretary was in charge of certain activities under government direction, and was responsible for educational work and hospital visitation at the department hospital.

The report for April, 1919, showed a total attendance at the "Y" buildings in town and at the posts to have been 44,180; 13,090 letters had been mailed at the "Y" huts, and twenty-two service men had taken part as entertainers in forty-four entertainments and movie shows. There had been 495 interviews with soldiers, sailors, and marines, and 469 visits to the sick in hospitals. Through the efforts of the Y. M. C. A. secretaries 4000 men of the First and Second Hawaiian regiments were taught English. Physical and religious activities were correspondingly emphasized. In June, 1919, the total attendance at buildings was 54,788 and about 16,000 letters were written. Much work had been done by the staff of 23 employees at Castner, Schofield Barracks, Fort Ruger, Fort Kamehameha, Fort Shafter, the Department Hospital, Fort DeRussy, and the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. in Honolulu.

Each night during the first week of July the contingent of men scheduled for demobilization at Fort Shafter the next day were marched to the association building and received final instructions from their officers, followed by talks from the "Y" secretaries.

At the last of August, 1919, Secretary Don Williams of the Kamehameha "Y" granted thirty-two certificates to enlisted men

who had successfully passed examinations in spelling, arithmetic, English, and penmanship, classes having been held in those fundamental subjects in order that the men might be better fitted to fill positions upon leaving the service. Instruction was also given in typing and bookkeeping and much help was extended to Filipinos at Luke Field who were learning to read and write English.

The report for the year ending September 1, 1919, showed that a total of 439,000 men had visited the "Y" buildings either in town or at the posts and 156,798 letters had been written and mailed at "Y" huts. At the city building, 29,457 rooms had been rented during the year; 1,202 persons, including service men and civilians, had taken part in entertainments; and 30,000 men had joined in athletics.

The National War Work Council remained in charge of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. work in Hawaii until the end of May, 1920, on which date the buildings erected at the various army posts were turned over to the War Department fully equipped and without expense or consideration, to be operated by the War Plans Division of the army as service clubs. The building in Honolulu (the old Royal Hawaiian Hotel) continued in operation as the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A.

#### DEMOBILIZATION

As soon as hostilities had definitely closed after the signing of the armistice, and work had begun on the demobilization of the men called into military and naval service for the duration of the war, plans were made to welcome the returning service men. The Y. M. C. A. took an active part in this work. An announcement published in January, 1919, under the red triangle of the "Y" contained this statement: "Through the National War Work Council complimentary full membership for three months has been provided for returning men of the service. Make the 'Y' your headquarters in Honolulu; meet your friends there, make business appointments. Make full use of the educational classes and employment bureau. Enjoy the gym, pool, billiard room, bowling, cafeteria and all full privileges."

Representatives of seventeen organizations were present at a meeting called by W. E. Hopkins, director of the War Camp Community Service, on January 17 for the purpose of bringing about a unification of effort for the welcome and entertainment of the returning men, and it was planned that, with the cooperation of Honolulu's civic, religious, and social organizations, the Chamber of Commerce should direct the reception and entertainment of our own boys as well as those of the allied nations visiting the islands, the Y. M. C. A. to aid in matters of employment. With Miss Grace Channon, general secretary of the Y. W. C. A., as chairman, a committee of women was later delegated by the Chamber's entertainment committee to meet all trains and steamers arriving in Honolulu with discharged men, and, as a token of appreciation and aloha, to place about the neck of each a paper ilima lei. The Hawaiian band was also to be present.

A. H. Tarleton, executive secretary of the Hawaiian Pineapple Packers' Association, who had offered his services as assistant in the war work of the Y. M. C. A. and had been an active volunteer worker for the organization for a number of years, was loaned by his employers to the cause and toward the last of January was made demobilization secretary for the ensuing four months, representing the National War Work Council. In addition to bringing about a close personal touch between the demobilized men and the Y. M. C. A. and extending to them the privileges of the Central "Y" and the Nuuanu "Y," Mr. Tarleton's work included the meeting of trains and steamers, giving help to those in need of employment, and cooperation with other organizations interested in tendering a public welcome to the returning service men.

"The Chamber of Commerce of Honolulu," it was stated in a notice made public on January 24, "with the affiliation of the Y. M. C. A., Y. W. C. A., the War Camp Community Service, and many other organizations of Honolulu, have arranged to meet the men of the service as they come into Honolulu after they are demobilized from the various camps on this island. Demobilization will begin on Monday next, January 27, and the

first contingent will arrive in Honolulu at the railway station at about 1 o'clock p. m. In order to show these men proper appreciation of what they have done for us, the Chamber of Commerce asks that the public assist in a welcome and be at the railway station Monday afternoon at 2 o'clock. The Hawaiian Electric Company has agreed to blow five blasts of their large whistle one-half hour before the arrival of the train carrying the men. When you hear this whistle, come to the railway station."

In company with delegates from the Central and Nuuanu departments, the demobilization secretary made a number of trips to Castner to get in personal touch with the men at the time when they were assembled for demobilization talks at the "Y" hut. He distributed literature bearing on the various activities of the association and explained the offer of a complimentary full membership, facilities for helping men to secure employment, and the advantages to be gained in the school courses.

An enthusiastic welcome was given the first 200 of Hawaii's demobilized men—members of the "discharge regiment," the Second Hawaiian Infantry—as they arrived in Honolulu at 4 o'clock on the afternoon of January 27 after having been given their final pay accounts and steamer tickets at Castner. The Hawaiian band awaited them and each was presented with a lei, the first being placed about the neck of an Hawaiian boy by Mrs. Charles McCarthy, wife of the governor, who, accompanied by Captain Gerrit P. Wilder of the Red Cross, and Messrs. Tarleton, Hopkins, and Brown, headed the crowd at the station. The men sang "America;" then, carrying their suitcases and followed by the crowd, they marched along King and Queen Streets to the inter-island wharf where, drawn up before their respective steamers, their officers called their names for the last time and they received their discharge papers. They embarked singing Hawaiian songs—100 boarding the *Claudine* bound for Maui and 100 the *Kinau* for Kauai—and received a rousing welcome on each island.

With the beginning, on that morning, of the demobilization of nearly 4,000 men at Castner, soldiers bound for Hawaii, Maui,

Kauai, and Molokai arrived in town on various trains for the next several days. Honolulu men were demobilized a few days later and were given the same sort of welcome. "Y" secretaries boarded each incoming train at Puuloa in order to explain the organization's services, and aid was given to the men at the docks. The Filipino soldiers, particularly, needed assistance with their baggage and in getting their families provided with transportation. Trips were made to tenements to secure household effects, and arrangements were made to have them cared for while awaiting transportation. In instances where large groups of men were departing, secretaries accompanied them to their destinations.

A circular letter signed by the city demobilization secretary was sent to each returned soldier with the following message:

"You have rendered a mighty fine service. It's all over and you are back home. Now, we want to extend our compliments to you by giving you a complimentary three months membership in our Association. We have much that you will like. For instance, one of these: reading and writing rooms, cafeteria, employment bureau, billiard room, Bible classes, educational classes, bowling alleys, gym classes, swimming pool, games hall, hand ball, tennis courts, social features etc., etc. Also think of the Association as the place to have an Allied War Veterans Club where you can meet and get together—we'll cooperate with you on this. What do you say? On the back of this note is an application blank for membership; fill it out and bring it right in and we will issue you a complimentary membership card at once.—'Do it Now.'"

A folder was enclosed giving details about the work of the association. In all, 192 men availed themselves of the privilege.

A feature of the demobilization work centered, on February 8, about the sailing of the army transport *Sheridan* with 270 mainland soldiers who had been stationed in Hawaii as members of the Coast Artillery and Medical Corps and the Sixth Aero Squadron and who were to receive their discharges in San Francisco. Mr. Tarleton made special arrangements for

their farewell and Mr. and Mrs. George N. Calfee sailed with them to supervise the entertainments on board.

Mrs. S. C. Huber, Mrs. J. Lewis, Mrs. R. E. Noble, Mrs. A. G. M. Robertson, and Mrs. Ralph Clark formed a women's committee to meet the men at the station; and headed by the Hawaiian Band, those who were to sail for the mainland marched to Pier 6, where the canteen service of the Red Cross in charge of Captain Gerrit P. Wilder awaited them. Mrs. Wilder, Mrs. F. L. Putman, Mrs. C. T. Wilder, Mrs. Arthur Berg, Miss Helen Wilder, Miss Dorothy Guild, and Miss Damon assisted in the serving. The "Y" gave each man a pineapple.

A typical note of welcome to soldiers passing through aboard transport appeared in a local paper about the middle of February:

Oh Boy!

Honolulu Welcomes You

Aloha

Program for stay in Port, Thursday, February 13, 1919

Land about 2 p. m.

Open house at Army and Navy Y. M. C. A.  
during the afternoon.

7:30 p. m. Outdoor Program.

Music and Movies at the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A.

Friday, February 14th.

8:30 a. m. Meet at Army and Navy Y. M. C. A.  
for auto trip throughout the city.

11 a. m. meet at Seaside Hotel for swim.

12 noon Red Cross provides Luncheon in the open.

Transportation back to dock will be provided by street car  
arriving at dock 1 hour before departure  
of vessel.

Honolulu Wishes You Bon Voyage.

Aloha.

Two large entertainments were given at the Central "Y" in honor of returned service men. The first, an athletic program of boxing and wrestling, was attended by about 800 men, tickets

being issued without charge. The second, devoted to movies, musical numbers, and a three-round boxing exhibition, attracted about 500. Three entertainments at the Nuuanu Department, conducted by the Chinese, Japanese, and Korean departments, respectively, had a total attendance of 200.

Honolulu's first "returned soldier" ball was given at the Armory on the evening of February 24, the reception committee for the occasion including officials of the War Camp Community Service, the two "Y's," the Red Cross, and the Chamber of Commerce. A short program preceded the dance, and gold chevrons showing overseas service were numerous on the crowded floor.

The problem of the unemployed service man in Hawaii was of little consequence, Mr. Tarleton stated in a final report. Though some might have been delayed a short time in securing positions to meet their wishes, there was at all times work for those actually needing it. The sugar plantations absorbed all labor presented to them and their cooperation was worthy of praise. "The business men and companies of this city are to be greatly commended for the stand they have taken in regard to the re-employment of their former men who have been discharged from the army, as in practically every case they have taken back their former employees, sometimes at considerable of a sacrifice. Only in one or two of the many cases I have personally investigated has there been any question of blame resting with the company," said Mr. Tarleton.

The employment bureau at the Central Department under the jurisdiction of Mr. Stone and that at the Nuuanu branch under his supervision were quite active, according to Mr. Tarleton. Men were advised as to the proper procedure to follow in securing work and it was made clear to all that, in case of failure, they would be given all the help they needed. In connection with the employment service a number of advertisements were run in the newspapers. One of these read:

"Employment wanted for discharged soldiers. This is the time to prove your appreciation for the sacrifice Hawaii's sons

made in joining Uncle Sam's forces. We have applications for the following lines of employment for discharged soldiers: yard boys, blacksmiths, store clerks, chauffeurs, bookkeepers, typewriters, office clerks, salesmen, laborers, and mechanics. What are you going to do about it?"

Another advertisement, addressed to "Mr. Businessman," read as follows: "Have you put up your returned service flag for the men returning from the service to whom you have given employment? Your first service flag honored you because you helped Uncle Sam. The new service flag honors you for what you do for the man who sacrificed so much to protect you. The Y. M. C. A. can put you in touch with returning men who will fit best in your organization."

A burden was removed from the shoulders of officers at department headquarters on March 3, 1919, when the city demobilization secretary offered to assume the task of preparing a proper forwarding letter to be signed by discharged soldiers seeking the \$60 bonus just authorized by Congress and to be paid to all persons who served in the military or naval forces of the United States during the war with Germany.

On March 6, discharged soldiers from the 1st and 2nd Hawaiian regiments—men of all rank and many still in khaki—"swamped the lobby of the Central 'Y'" and appeared before Mr Tarleton for information.

To get this \$60, they were told, a claim must be made in Washington. In order to have the claim properly made, the American Red Cross and the Y. M. C. A. institutions had prepared a letter in regular form for them to fill out and mail to Washington with their discharge papers enclosed. The form letter and the aid given to the men enabled them to present their claims correctly and promptly, and prevented many an unscrupulous person from making "easy money" out of commissions collected from the ex-soldiers.

As district demobilization secretary, Charles F. Loomis had charge of the work done by the Y. M. C. A. at Schofield Barracks in connection with the demobilization of the 2nd



Hawaiian Infantry. In outlining the work done there, Mr. Loomis stated that it had been similar to that conducted in cantonments and military posts throughout the United States incident to the return of the emergency soldiers to a civilian status. Lectures given at Schofield Barracks were made at the request of the chief of the morale branch of the general staff of the army and the themes utilized had reference to patriotic subjects, to difficulties attendant upon demobilization, especially in regard to the labor market, and to the obligation of all to meet the present problems and necessary delays in a spirit of steadfastness, broad humanity, and fine patriotism. The need for higher education was urged, and the men were asked to continue the self-improvement begun in the army and to become leaders and teachers in their home communities.

"By the direction and through the cooperation of Colonel Elliott Norton," Mr. Loomis stated, "the Y. M. C. A. was able to meet the requests for cooperation. The association was able to carry out its regular demobilization program of activities, the object of which was to say and do the things that would make for patience and cheer and courage while our young men were still under military authority and discipline and to make them as true and fine and efficient in civil life after their demobilization as they have been in training." The secretaries accompanied the men to Honolulu on the sixteen troop trains and had been present on the five steamers in which they embarked for the other islands.

"I wish to state that the work now under way and that which has been going on during the past months in the various army posts," Mr. Tarleton stated at the conclusion of his service, "is but a beginning and a demonstration of what can and must be done for the young men of these islands. This work must be carried into the outlying districts in cooperation with the plantations; there the field offers untold opportunities for good, both to the community and to the interests. . . . The work must be continued and the Y. M. C. A. is the logical organization to see it through."

The service rendered by the Y. M. C. A. under the direction

of Mr. Loomis and Mr. Tarleton in this demobilization period was of great importance. A. E. Larimer, general secretary, wrote to Mr. Tarleton on May 17, 1919, "I want to take this opportunity of expressing my hearty appreciation and approval of the splendid work you have done as city demobilization secretary of the Y. M. C. A. This is one of the finest pieces of volunteer service that I have ever seen."

#### Y. M. C. A. WORKERS OVERSEAS

Of the men who went from Honolulu to engage in Y. M. C. A. work, either in Europe or on the mainland, Rev. A. A. Ebersole was the first to go. In August, 1916, he resigned his position as associate minister of Central Union Church to accept overseas service with the Y. M. C. A. in its work among the prisoners of war. "His work in Austrian prison camps included the direction and supervision of social activities, extensive educational work, religious meetings and Bible classes, library and reading rooms, choir and orchestra. He enlisted the prisoners themselves in these activities and in that way was able to supervise several camps. During this time the demands upon his time and strength were enormous and the food which the secretaries were able to obtain was restricted in amount and variety. After about a year of this work international complications necessitated the withdrawal of secretaries from those camps and Mr. Ebersole returned to New York City," where he was engaged in war work for the international committee of the Y. M. C. A., not only at the city headquarters, but also traveling long distances to speak on his experiences while abroad. His special work was connected with the choice and training of secretaries to be sent overseas.

During the fall of 1917 and the spring of 1918, several men left Honolulu for service on the mainland, overseas, and in Siberia. Wilfred Humphries saw service in Siberia. Rev. John F. Cowan worked in mainland camps. A note for February, 1918, gives Paul Super as assigned to the secretarial bureau of the National War Work Council and Jay A. Urice as author

of a textbook on "Y" war work. Rev. David Carey Peters, minister of the Christian Church, Honolulu, left the islands about the first of June, 1918, for Y. M. C. A. war service on the mainland, having been granted a six months' leave on full pay as the congregation's contribution to the cause. Mr. Peters worked among the soldiers at Camp Lewis, Washington. Ernest T. Chase, principal of Punahou Academy and clerk of Central Union Church, left Hawaii on June 25, 1918, for a year's army "Y" work in France. The church refused his resignation and granted him a year's leave of absence from the duties of the position. Dr. Robert Day Williams of Mid-Pacific Institute left for "Y" work in July of the same year.

Rev. A. W. Palmer, pastor of Central Union Church, went to the mainland in June, 1918, for three months service with the Y. M. C. A. He helped shape the Bible study in the camps for the following winter, and was for a time in charge of the Army Y. M. C. A. school for secretaries, held at Stanford University. Doctor Palmer was planning to leave for France when the armistice was signed, making his appointment unnecessary. In 1919, responding to a call from the Y. M. C. A., Mr. Palmer spent the months of July, August, and September in a tour of service through eastern Siberia, addressing the American soldiers stationed in that region. Guy H. Tuttle was accepted for work in France in July, 1918. Kamehameha Schools gave a man to the cause, Rev. E. E. Youtz, and in October, 1918, he was on his way to work under the Red Triangle in France. Oren E. Long, in charge of Waiakea Social Settlement, Hawaii, and identified with the work in the First Foreign Church in Hilo, took passage for Siberia in December as a Y. M. C. A. worker in the American army.

Early in September, 1918, plans were made by the National War Work Council which called upon Hawaii to furnish five men a month for service overseas and in the mainland cantonments. This was part of a larger plan to send 5,000 men abroad by the first of the year. The following men were appointed as the war personnel board in charge of recruiting

and selecting men for the territory: A. F. Griffiths, chairman; Lloyd R. Killam, secretary; Frederick Lowrey, Rev. A. W. Palmer, Dr. A. F. Jackson, William F. Thompson, Jay O. Warner, and Rev. R. B. Dodge. Several men, including Judge Antonio Perry and A. H. Tarleton were selected by this board and their names were submitted. The cessation of hostilities changed the requirements so that only men especially trained for Y. M. C. A. work were to be taken. Mr. Tarleton received the following letter, typical of those sent out at the time:

"I regret to be advised to inform you that we have received word from New York that owing to the changed conditions overseas your application has been withdrawn by the War Personnel Board. I cannot send you this word, however, without assuring you of our grateful appreciation of your thought of us and willingness to cooperate with us in the hour of our extreme need."

Raymond D. Leach, a teacher in Honolulu prior to his connection with the Hawaiian Pineapple Company, secured his appointment in February, 1919, through the recommendation of the local personnel board. Sailing from New York to take up educational work with the American army of occupation, he arrived in Brest on March 16 and was assigned to the Le Mans district, an American embarkation center. While there he completed the construction of the Blue Ridge Hut in the Belgian camp division.

#### WAR WORK OF CENTRAL Y. M. C. A.

At the outbreak of the war the Honolulu Y. M. C. A. lost no time in putting its program in shape to meet the new need. The entire staff and membership had a new point of view and purpose, that of "winning the war."

The first move was to shape the educational classes so that they would be of practical use to the men who were to enter service. A First Aid Class organized immediately under Dr. McKellar, an army physician, had a full registration. Officers' reserve corps training classes were opened which

helped train a large number of men for the examinations for commissions. This form of training classes was instituted in Honolulu and was later taken up by mainland associations. Physical training classes put special emphasis on corrective work and military drill. The physical director, himself an old army man, gave part of his time to private instruction in military drill and nomenclature. Radio telegraphy was offered in the educational department and six of the students eventually qualified as aviation, wireless, or radio operators. Mme. Quevillon offered popular courses in French, the fees from these courses being donated to the French War Orphan Fund. Mathematics and drafting also found a place in the program.

The association stood ready to help the local war program in every possible way. War Savings Stamp societies were formed. The Central "Y" had the distinction of organizing the first two such societies in the territory—the Educational Society and the Intermediate Society. Many Thrift and War Savings Stamps were sold at the desk. Liberty Bond drives and Red Cross work were also given much assistance by the employed staff. The secretaries acted as Scout Masters and assisted in the organization and direction of the Boys' Working Reserve. A home gardening movement was inaugurated by the boys' work committee to enlist boys who did not have school gardens. Professor L. A. Henke of the College of Hawaii donated his services and the "Y" furnished the seeds.

An employment bureau filled a very decided need. F. E. Haley gave a large share of his time to this work, advising and handling the employment problems incident to the loss of men by the draft and enlistment in the army and navy. He worked in connection with the local representatives of the United States employment bureau and the naval bureau of labor and was successful in placing a large number of men.

War lectures, socials, motion pictures, and community educational programs, on such subjects as food conservation and thrift, were given from time to time.

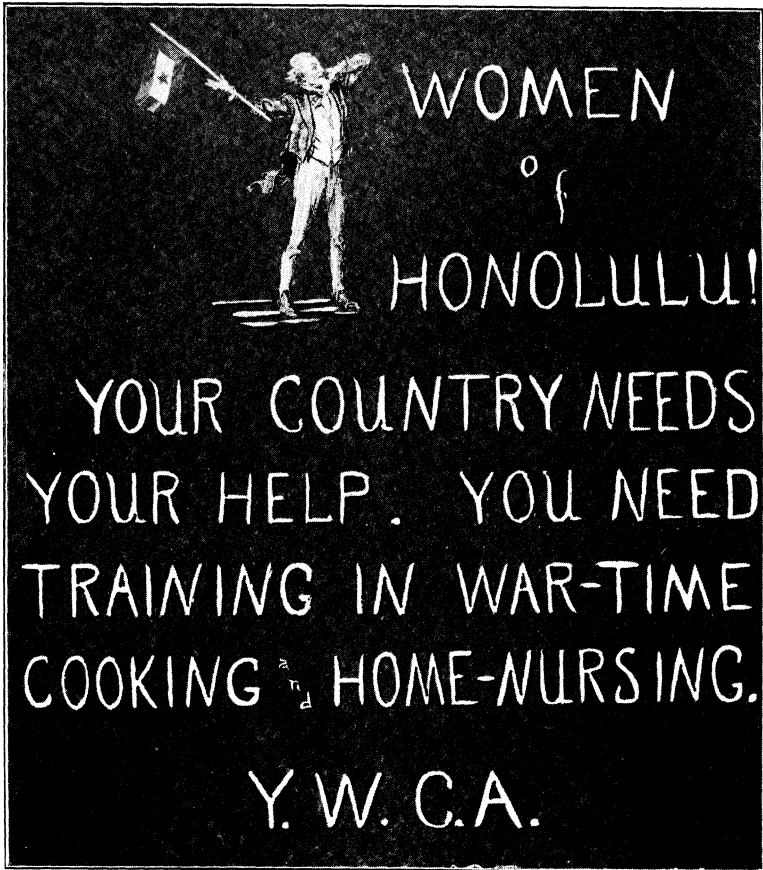
G. E. Jackson, acting executive secretary for the Central Y. M. C. A., closes an article in *The Friend* for September,

1918, on the wartime activities of the Central association with this statement: "The largest contribution, however, which any institution can make is its men. The Central Y. M. C. A. is therefore justly proud of its large service flag with 444 stars—the largest flag in the Territory. These men, all members, have gone with the blessing of the Association and all have been extended the entire privileges of the Association here and elsewhere for the duration of the war without any thought of fees or costs. Equal to this stand the eleven secretaries who have joined the colors. Out of an original staff of fourteen only three remain. Four new men have been called and the new war program is now steadily forging ahead with half of its original staff—but this is possible because of the enlarged volunteer group of men called committees who here and everywhere are gladly doing their part in the Association in its war program."



Y. W. C. A. EXECUTIVES IN WAR TIME

Left to right: Miss Grace Channon, General Secretary; Mrs. W. F. Frear, President; Miss Mayme Nelson, director of Hostess House at Castner



POSTER USED TO ADVERTISE Y.W.C.A. WAR TIME CLASSES



Y. W. C. A. HOSTESS HOUSE AT FORT ARMSTRONG



## CHAPTER XI

### WAR WORK OF THE Y. W. C. A.

**W**HEN the United States entered the war the Y. W. C. A. was one of the first organizations to offer its services.

It recognized what war meant to the girls and women of the community and took steps immediately to be helpful in every way possible. As time advanced the lobby of the association became the meeting place for all sorts of committees and groups who found the convenient location a "time saver." The building became a beehive of activity as never before and the secretaries found innumerable ways to be helpless in the stress and strain of the time.

Taking into consideration the need for special training of girls and women along new lines, the educational classes were shaped to meet the emergency. Red Cross instruction and classes in household efficiency were among the first to start. Anticipating a shortage of chauffeurs in Honolulu because of the operation of the selective draft, the association opened a class at the Old Homestead on October 6 to instruct young women in driving and in the mechanical construction of the automobile, about twenty attending. Only young women who were willing to offer their services to their country were accepted, and a small entrance fee was charged. J. A. M. Johnson was the instructor; Mrs. Walter F. Frear donated the first car necessary for the work; and a Ford chassis was given by the Schuman Carriage Company.

Miss Sterling, of McKinley High School, conducted a business course under the auspices of the association; Mrs. James Russell, a cooking class; Mrs. Frazier and Miss Olsen taught dressmaking; Miss Martha Johnson, of B. F. Ehlers & Company, gave millinery lessons; Mrs. Roger Burnham was instructor in dramatics; and Miss Lillian Welch of Punahou taught English to foreigners. Mme. Quevillon gave lessons in French and Mrs. Iola B. Ingalls in wireless telegraphy, the

proceeds of the last two classes going to war relief work as the instructors contributed their services. A "games class" conducted by Miss Gogin and Miss Edna Geister proved unusually helpful to women planning parties for the entertainment of service men.

The Y. W. C. A. secretaries were called upon continually to select girls who would attend the entertainments and dances given at the various posts and in the community and they often acted as chaperones for such affairs. No part of their work called for more tact and discretion.

In December, 1917, with the sanction of the Chamber of Commerce, the Y. W. C. A. held a "drive" to raise \$45,000. Of this amount \$15,000 was for the \$4,000,000 war time budget of the national board and \$30,000 for the local work. The campaign was carried on under the leadership of Miss Martha Chickering, secretary of the Pacific coast field, and the executive committee composed of Mrs. W. F. Frear, Mrs. A. L. Andrews, Mrs. I. J. Shepherd, Mrs. C. T. Fitts, and Mrs. F. J. Lowrey. One hundred girls canvassed the city, and the drive was also extended to the outer islands. The fund was raised in the four days, December 11-14.

In May, 1919, the International Institute was opened to take up the task of Americanization and to carry on the spirit of friendliness created in the hostess houses during the war. Miss Elsie Wilcox was in charge of the Institute through the early period of its existence.

Several women from the Y. W. C. A. of Honolulu saw service at the front. Miss Luella Clark did canteen work; Miss Helen Alexander was sent to France and then into the interior of Siberia; and Miss Edith Perkins, for 11 years a stenographer for Castle and Cooke, left in May, 1918, for service as a private secretary for C. P. Barnum, head of the third regional section of Y. M. C. A. work overseas. When the armistice was signed, she went to Germany and later was engaged in canteen work at Coblenz.

A short letter received from Miss Alexander early in June, 1919, said that she had had two months' work in charge of a hut

in France where she had been serving refreshments to 1,400 men. "They have left and I have been alone except for eight M. P.s and 60 engineers, but another crowd arrives, probably tomorrow."

Returning from her work with the army of occupation after receiving the hearty appreciation of the officers and men of the A. E. F., Miss Perkins spoke in Honolulu in September, 1919. "It was my privilege," she said, "to go into Germany with the first secretaries sent from Paris. Few people have a conception of what is meant by 'women's work.' Our duties were to serve in the canteens, conduct sightseeing trips, provide partners for dances, see that the canteen furnishings were sufficient, arrange for transportation of workers, and care for an endless amount of detail. Sometimes it was almost impossible to procure the things we were asked to get, but then we were there to accomplish the impossible."

#### WOMEN'S WAR WORK COUNCIL

While the "biggest thing ever conceived for the enlisted men of Hawaii" had been the establishment of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., the "one thing lacking" in the estimation of its director, W. A. Horn, was the cooperation of the women, their avowed friendliness, and the occasional hospitality of their homes. With a view to arousing the women to what they were quick to interpret as their patriotic duty, Mr. Horn called them to a meeting at the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. on the afternoon of September 4, 1917, and thirty women, representing the various churches and clubs of Honolulu, responded. This group passed a resolution calling on the Y. W. C. A. to form a Women's War Work Council.

At a meeting at the Y. W. C. A. on September 13, Mrs. F. J. Lowrey was elected chairman of the new Council, and an executive committee, Mrs. A. E. Murphy, Mrs. Philip Spalding, Mrs. George H. Brown and Mrs. A. F. Griffiths, was appointed.

Present were delegates from the different churches and societies including Mrs. H. B. Restarick, representing the Epis-

copal Church; Mrs. John Lucas, the Catholic Church; Mrs. Edwin Benner from Central Union; Mrs. O. H. Walker from the Methodist Church; Mrs. G. H. Tuttle from the Christian Church; Mrs. Carl Andrews from the College Club; Mrs. H. Hugo from the D. A. R.; Mrs. Arthur Larimer representing the Y. M. C. A.; Mrs. Yamamoto, the Japanese Y. M. C. A.; Mrs. W. L. Emory, the Outdoor Circle; Mrs. A. Lewis, Jr., the Daughters of Hawaii; Miss Hilda von Holt, the Navy League; Mrs. Hoapili, Kaumakapili Church; and Mr. Horn. Delegates from Kawaiahao Church, the Morning Music and Footlights Clubs, the Outrigger Canoe Club Auxiliary and several state clubs which had been formed in the city for the benefit of enlisted men, were appointed later. Each delegate was to arrange for a member from her organization to attend the Games Class which the Y. W. C. A. was offering that fall—a course which proved very helpful to those who assisted in work for the soldiers.

The Council was to act as a clearing house for all the social activities for enlisted men, to encourage efforts already undertaken, and to initiate movements wherever and whenever the need was found. That a great deal of work was already being done was discovered at the first few meetings when the delegates made their reports. Notes from the minutes of September 21, the first meeting after the organization was perfected, give the following items: Mrs. Emory reported that the Iowa Club was to entertain at the home of Doctor and Mrs. Hodgins on September 22. The Christian Church was conducting one Sunday evening meeting a month for the enlisted men at which they performed all the services except that of preaching the sermon. The ladies were giving one social a month. The Epworth League of the Methodist church was conducting fellowship lunches every Sunday evening before the Epworth League hour. One Sunday evening service had been given over to the service men.

At a later meeting (October 5) it was reported that at St. Andrew's Cathedral six entertainments had been given and the Guild was planning to give a supper with music and program to follow. The Christian Church reported many soldiers enter-

tained in the homes. Central Union had voted to give one social a month, the first to be given on October 10. About 250 men were to be entertained at a time. The Catholic Church was to give a swimming party and picnic. The D. A. R. had voted that each member was to entertain four or more men in her home. The Footlights Club was to give a play.

The offer of the Y. W. C. A. to give the pageant "Columbia Calls" at "Arcadia," the home of Mrs. W. F. Frear, in order to obtain money for contingent expenses was accepted and preparations were made for the event from which \$96.50 was realized. A gift of \$100 from Mrs. George P. Castle was used to start the fund.

The first large undertaking considered by the War Work Council was that of opening a canteen at the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. to be held every Wednesday and Saturday, and a special meeting of the Executive Committee was called (October 19) to discuss the matter. At this meeting it was brought out that many persons in Honolulu believed that the men were sufficiently well fed and that, as there was no real need for the canteen, it should not be undertaken in the face of war conditions and the urgent appeal to save food. It was then decided to find out what other cities were doing along similar lines and also to ask the opinion of service men.

During the period of its activities, the Women's War Work Council filled a very great need in the community. It aimed, by co-ordinating and supplementing everything done for the enlisted men, to scatter the social gatherings throughout the various days of the week and the different parts of the city. The entertainments were of widely different character but thoroughly worth while. Several of the churches held "Open House" one evening each week where the men gathered in groups of from fifty to several hundred. The clubs gave a variety of entertainments such as dances, concerts, and garden parties. Plays were presented by the Lanai Club and by the Dramatic Committee of the Council under the direction of Mrs. Burnham. Many homes were thrown open to the men, individually. Special days such

as Christmas and Mother's Day were taken advantage of to dispense cheer to scores of men far from home.

Chaplain Joseph Loughran of the Fourth Cavalry was present at the meeting of January 25 for the purpose of interesting the members of the Council and gaining their aid in the entertainment work in which he was engaged. Chaplain Loughran was known as the "Singing Chaplain" and had recently come to Hawaii from a mainland army post where he had inaugurated the "stick-around-the-post" nights, providing interesting programs for the soldiers. He had started the same movement here, but had encountered some difficulty in finding sufficient talent. With the aid of the Women's War Work Council, through a program committee headed by Mrs. Elizabeth Mackall, the "Haversack Circuit" was organized and extended its activities to the various army posts and to Pearl Harbor throughout the year 1918. Mrs. Riley H. Allen, Mrs. A. G. M. Robertson, Mrs. Walter English, Mrs. Chris O'Day, Miss Bernice Kahanamoku, Miss Walsh, Carl Basler, George Andrus, W. H. Hutton, and others cheerfully gave of their talent in this important enterprise.

The Council did not confine itself strictly to the work for service men. They passed resolutions from time to time, supporting various mass meetings for women and children. They indorsed the work done by the food commission. They interested themselves in every movement for good in the community. A curious note in the minutes of February 8, 1918, tells that a case was brought before them, where a member of one of the Red Cross Units had resented orders given for the making of certain garments. "In the discussion which followed many of the members expressed the feeling that we should use our influence whenever any such example of unwillingness to obey orders should come to our notice and endeavor to show how unpatriotic such criticism is." Also, on February 1, a member told of a visit to the county jail. "They found eighteen women crowded into small, poorly ventilated quarters, with absolutely nothing to occupy themselves." Later minutes show that "a matron had been engaged" and "conditions among the women

seemed a bit more hopeful" and the last report shows the women "happier and *knitting*."

The Council suffered a great loss in January, 1918, by the death of its chairman, Mrs. F. J. Lowrey. Mrs. E. D. Kilbourne succeeded her in the office and later Mrs. A. W. Palmer assumed the position during the absence of Mrs. Kilbourne on the mainland.

### HOSTESS HOUSES

Hostess houses, a characteristic form of Y. W. C. A. service in war time, did not come into existence in Hawaii until the summer of 1918. Up to that time there was little or no need for this service, since the army posts in the territory were garrisoned only by regular troops. With the mobilization of the Hawaiian National Guard, at the beginning of June, 1918, and the drafted men, at the beginning of July, a situation arose which demanded immediate attention. The mobilization camp was at Fort Armstrong along the waterfront in Honolulu. With the approval of General Blocksom, commander of the Hawaiian Department, and Colonel Bennett, commander of the mobilization camp, the Y. W. C. A. building in Honolulu was designated as a hostess house for soldiers, the cafeteria being opened to the former national guardsmen accompanied by women relatives for the first time on June 5. The "Wahine Kapu" sign was to be put up at Fort Armstrong as it was not considered desirable for women relatives and friends of the men to gather there.

This arrangement did not fully meet the need that existed. Mrs. W. F. Frear, president of the Y. W. C. A., gives a pen picture of the situation at the mobilization camp: "A drive with the Quartermaster around Fort Armstrong revealed a picture at once ludicrous and pathetic. Scores of Filipino women, distracted and disconsolate over the departure of their men, crouched with their babies and paper bags of provisions in the tall weeds, peering through the cracks in the fence, awaiting the leisure of their new-made soldiers." It was clear that something must be done for these women, for whom the facilities of the

Y. W. C. A. building in the middle of town were of little use. The army authorities cooperated with the Y. W. C. A.; Colonel R. M. Schofield of the Quartermaster Corps cleared the weeds and rubbish from a shaded lot opposite the entrance to the camp and erected a convenient group of tents to serve as a hostess house. The spreading branches of algaroba trees and a generous awning protected the visitors from the hot sun, and there were water coolers, pictures, papers, gramophones, and games. All women on the street were ordered to the hostess tent where, when the names of their men were given, the latter were looked up by an orderly and brought to the tent when their duties permitted.

The hostess house at Fort Armstrong was opened on June 8, with Miss Narene Elliott, educational secretary of the Y. W. C. A., in charge. She was assisted by Miss Etta B. Agee and Mrs. Ygloria, wife of the Filipino pastor at Ewa, who served as interpreter. Several Honolulu women volunteered to assist during portions of each day. The hostess house was a most useful and a much appreciated institution and continued in operation throughout the period during which the National Guard and drafted men were being mustered into the service of the United States. From July 6 to August 1, 1,347 women and 3,940 men visited the hostess house.

With the movement of the former National Guard regiments and drafted men to Schofield Barracks, the problem which had been apparent at Fort Armstrong was again presented to the army authorities, as many of the wives accompanied the soldiers; and, at the request of the commander of the post, a hostess house was opened at Castner on July 15, 1918. Mrs. Frear gives a description of the first few days:

"The only building with six white veranda posts in all the vast encampment holds the blue triangle as a beacon to the many visitors who by train, motorcar or foot, seek the draftees. It is a modest, green cottage, standing open to all the winds that blow, incidentally blowing clouds of red dust into the bargain, or rather into the house.



"The world so new and all' ran like a refrain through the first week, for not only were the hostess and her volunteer assistant new, the surroundings and the work new, but the shy people to be assisted were new, not to mention the new resident officers and their wives and the unfinished quarters in preparation for them. Newest of all were the draftees plunging into a very barbed wire entanglement of language difficulties and consequent absurd interpretation of their duties; while the all pervading odor of the Hostess House was that of the newest of paint. Disagreeable? By no means. No bursting bud or warble of bird ever seemed a more welcome harbinger of spring, the renewing time, a prophecy that the former things had passed away. These former things, being unrelated to the Homeric ships, may remain uncatalogued, but each achievement of cleanliness and comfort, every accretion of household gods to make the Rachels and their kinsmen at home in the wilderness of barrack existence, is fairly branded on the minds of the hostesses.

"The kindness of the many officers who have expressed approval of the Y. W. C. A. plan of lending a hand to the draft army of which we all expect to be so proud, their hearty cooperation and the simple but sincere appreciation of those who are guests (so far, largely Filipinos with a few Portuguese and Hawaiians) means much in our initial task of entertaining strangers. Doubtless before we are done, we shall entertain angels unawares."

Miss Mayme Nelson, director-hostess, reported on October 31 :

"The building which had been assigned us presented a very dirty and gloomy appearance, but the presence of fifteen women and their soldiers who were here when we arrived, assured us at once that we were badly needed. A few days and the good will and help of our officers converted the house into a livable place. It served as hostess house and living quarters for the secretary and assistant for nine days when living quarters were assigned at Schofield, some two miles away.

"The second night we spent here it fell to our lot to care for a Filipino woman who was too ill to return to Honolulu and knew no one here. Both she and her husband were very grate-

ful. Another night we cared for three Filipino women and repetition of this has been avoided by seeing that all Honolulu people leave immediately after retreat at 5:30.

"We have found various and interesting duties—among them—

"Cared for Hawaiian woman whose husband was critically ill at the Post Hospital.

"Administered simple remedies for five Filipino women who were ill. Sent for doctor in another instance and played nurse for him.

"Handled two first aid cases—cut finger and bruised head.

"Helped to arrange for two weddings—Filipino couples—both of which were expected to take place here, but did not.

"Stopped sales of jewelry—rice cakes—banana cloth. Salesman and salesladies had no permits to sell.

"Had two Hawaiian girls and one auto ordered from the Post—undesirable.

"Two other Hawaiian girls (reported by some of our regular Filipino guests as having 'no kane,' although they were accompanied by two Filipino soldiers) were so closely watched that they soon left and have not returned.

"Located parents of lost Japanese baby who was brought to us.

"Have witnessed signature marks on allowance checks and have accompanied each with a free lecture on the saving idea.

"Our house is a sort of laundry exchange for the women who live at Wahiawa and who do their husbands' clothes, and has twice accommodated trunks which our women brought from Honolulu en route to Wahiawa.

"We take it that we have grown into the good graces of the Filipinos for they seem to evidence it by salutes, gifts of fruit and flowers, and the fact that we have progressed from 'Madame' to 'Mam' and now to 'Mama.'

"From the soldiers—this from a Chinese boy is typical, 'I have to come over once in a while to get an inspiration and then I like to look at your curtains and flowers.'

"From the officers we are pleased to hear such as this, 'You are doing a mighty good work for us.'

"Our callers have been Filipinos, Hawaiians, Portuguese, Porto Ricans, Spanish, Korean, Chinese, Japanese, and whites.

"August 6th was our smallest day—10; October 16 was our largest day—220."

From July 15 to October 31 the total number of visitors not including soldiers was 6,187. During November 3,502 visitors were accommodated; December showed a total of 3,006; and January, 1919, 4,067. A statement of expenses of the hostess house at Castner from July 15 to December 1, 1918, showed a total of \$1,349.84 of which \$285.89 had been spent for equipment, \$211.29 for general expenses, \$164.66, for the travelling expenses of Mrs. McGaughey, social hostess, and \$688 in salaries.

Mrs. J. D. Javier of Pahala, Hawaii, arrived on January 5 to act as interpreter. "January has been a very interesting month," Miss Nelson reported. "Many of our old friends have gone, as most of the Second Regiment has been discharged, but we are making new ones for we now have two Filipino companies from the First with us."

The quarters used for the hostess house at Castner were not very satisfactory. In November there seemed to be some possibility of getting a building formerly occupied by the Y. M. C. A., but the following message from Captain Gluud destroyed this hope:

"The Commanding General asks me to say that he regrets that he will be unable to let you have the building which the Y. M. C. A. has given up as it is to be used for something else. It would not be worth your while to move into it anyway, for it is to be torn down just after the first of the year, and the only thing that I can advise is for you to stay where you are. The General is very sorry that he cannot accommodate you."

That Miss Nelson was determined to make the best of the situation is suggested in a letter to Mrs. Alexander, in which she says:

"Of course, we are very much disappointed but will do the best that we can here, for the present. You might say for us

to our Furnishings Committee, please, that some plants and hanging baskets will do more to improve our appearance than most anything else."

#### HOSTESS HOUSE COMMITTEE

At the request of the local Y. W. C. A., Mrs. Edith Walker Maddux, representing the National War Work Council, visited Honolulu in the fall of 1918 to consider hostess house problems in Hawaii. Having been chairman of the building committee of the hostess house at Camp Fremont and an advisor of the work done by the Y. W. C. A. at Camp Kearney, Mrs. Maddux was in a position to be of great help. She brought with her \$25,000 which had been appropriated for similar work here.

The personnel of the local hostess house committee, it was decided, was to include three members of the Y. W. C. A. board, four persons representing outside interests, Miss Grace Channon, executive secretary of the association, and as an ex-officio member, Miss Mayme Nelson, director of the Castner hostess house. All matters of hostess house policy for Honolulu and its adjacent military posts were to be, for the time being, under the supervision of the local committee.

The committee was financially responsible to the War Work Council of the National Board, through the Pacific Coast Field executive committee, and funds were to come from New York at the request of that committee. A quorum of the local committee was to pass on all matters of finance and the spending of money. "Theoretically your motions are really recommendations to New York, through the San Francisco executive committee, but a long step over this bridge of formalities was taken for you before you were formed," Mrs. Maddux stated to the Hostess House committee of Honolulu, "in that Miss Channon's very wonderful and vivid reports to the War Work Council in San Francisco last summer secured the New York appropriation of \$25,000 here in bank."

Cooperating functions were to include recommendations to military authorities and to the "law enforcement" arm of the

War Department Committee on Training Camp Activities; community work such as educational, employment and housing conditions for transient women, including recommendations to the local Y. W. C. A. or the special new war work committees of that association; recommendations for the Patriotic League; the speeding up of local Y. W. C. A. facilities for keeping girls away from camps which, in Honolulu, was already well in force.

The Hostess House Committee for Honolulu, as finally made up, was described by Mrs. Maddux as "peculiarly able and very representative," its members being: Mrs. A. C. Alexander, chairman; Mrs. F. C. Atherton, treasurer; Mrs. A. F. Griffiths, secretary; Mrs. W. F. Frear, Mrs. C. Montague Cooke, Jr., Mrs. G. R. Carter, Mrs. H. M. von Holt, and Miss Grace Channon.

Mrs. E. M. Townsend, national hostess house committee chairman, wrote to Mrs. Maddux under date of October 11, 1918:

"The budget of \$3,725 only reached us a few days ago . . . but we assumed that \$25,000 would cover any budget which was on the way and would give you something to start on in letting any contracts for necessary buildings. Use the \$25,000 for expenses of all kinds and telegraph when you have let a contract which will necessitate your having extra funds at your disposal.

"The whole budget shall be taken out from the \$25,000 permanently as your letter suggests, but it should not in any way affect the type of building or buildings which you may feel the need of constructing because it is perfectly possible to cable you more long before you will have to use it.

"It is very satisfactory to know that you are in Honolulu, and we shall be much interested to get your reports of what you think necessary. Our only feeling here in regard to doing anything permanent in the way of buildings would be that it would seem unlikely that after the present divisions in training in Honolulu are sent overseas, that they will be followed by any great number of others. It is impossible, of course, to make any predictions as to the length of time our work will be needed,

but the present indications certainly do point to an end in the very near future."

"We were more than grateful for the generosity of your committee in allowing \$25,000 for hostess house work in Honolulu," Mrs. Maddux replied, when she sent in the names of the hostess house committee for Honolulu. "It is probable that no buildings will have to be erected, and no cafeteria would be possible owing to lack of patronage (our Filipino clientele is extraordinary in many ways!) and to an entrenched Post Exchange system which is running lunch counters, Chinese restaurants, and so on . . . It has been a wonderful experience to be able to survey these remarkable bases, with racial problems so unique and yet so fraught with importance, if we solve them, for the whole Oriental situation."

On November 19 Major Edward F. Witsell, acting chief of staff, issued the following permission from headquarters of the Hawaiian Department: "Mrs. Alexander, Chairman of Hostess House Committee, has the approval of the Department Commander to confer with the various Post Commanders in this Department in regard to her work. The Department Commander also authorizes her committee to place chaperones in the various Hostess Houses at these Posts subject to such regulations as the Post Commander may prescribe."

The transfer of part of the Hawaiian troops to Fort Shafter made it desirable that a hostess house be established at that point. Colonel Riley, commanding officer of the post, conferred informally with Mrs. Frear, president of the Y. W. C. A., with regard to possible aid from the association in the handling of women visitors to soldiers in his command. This was just prior to the formation of the hostess house committee. On October 17, 1918, Mrs. Maddux wrote to Colonel Riley, informing him "that a Hostess House committee has been definitely formed to consider all such questions in or about Honolulu." A few days later Captain D. L. Mackaye wrote to Mrs. Alexander, chairman of the committee, as follows:

"Coloney Riley desires me to say to you that a 'Ladies' Rest Room' has been opened on this post to give the women of Hono-

lulu an opportunity to visit their soldier friends and relatives. So far it has been impossible to give the attention which it needs and the commanding officer believes that the Hostess House committee will find it a fruitful field for good work. He will consider it a favor to see any of the ladies at any time who may desire to visit the post in connection with this matter."

Mrs. Alexander, Mrs. Maddux, and Mrs. Frear called upon Colonel Riley on October 28, at which time it was agreed that the committee should make a study of the situation and present a plan when they had learned the average number and status of the women and children visiting the Fort Shafter rest room. There were 15 calls from women on November 1, and on the next day, 17. The committee then decided to accept the invitation of Colonel Riley by providing a hostess at the rest room already established at Fort Shafter.

"It is the plan of the Committee," Mrs. Griffiths wrote on December 21, "to place at the 'Rest Room' next Thursday afternoon, December 26th, 1918, Mrs. J. A. McGaughey, who has had experience at the Castner Hostess House. The Committee are releasing Mrs. McGaughey from Castner to serve at Shafter for a short period of time until a permanent hostess is secured."

The building assigned for the work was of cantonment construction and had been used as a barrack at the time the Second U. S. Infantry was garrisoned at the post. On January 10 the quartermaster, Major Frank J. Dougherty, requested the permission of the commanding general to make such alterations as the committee thought necessary in order to conform to regulations specified by the National War Work Council; and permission was granted with the reservation that a room in the building previously designated should be reserved for demobilization work. The committee also requested the issuance of a post order that all women go to the "rest room," and that the guards be so informed, possible exception being the hospital; that there be a restriction of hours, no women being allowed except between 4 and 9 p. m.; and the making of other arrangements necessary to the comfort of the expected guests.

"The first two weeks," said Mrs. McGaughey's report, "were filled with all of the interesting things that must come with the coming in contact with women, children and men of eight nationalities. Almost daily calls were begun at the hospital. Plans for demobilization were under way early in 1919 and proposed improvements to the hostess house room were unavoidably delayed. How the easy chair, the vase and the plants sent by Mrs. Frear and Mrs. Cooke comforted and cheered us in those days of 'watchful waiting' for the general's decision. Every day brought something of interest. Women craving sympathy will so readily trust their domestic troubles to the ears of one whom they feel is there to 'do things' for them. Not that they so often want advice but they want to just 'talk it over.'

"At the close of the seventh week 463 women, 106 children and 648 soldiers had visited the Fort Shafter hostess house."

The suspension of hostilities and the demobilization of the local troops practically did away with the need for the hostess houses. Under date February 26, 1919, Mrs. Alexander wrote to Général Heard, commander of the Hawaiian Department:

"Inasmuch as the Hostess House was established by the Young Women's Christian Association in accordance with the wish of the head of the Hawaiian Department, and at the invitation of the Post Commander, for especial service to be rendered the families and friends of the Hawaiian Infantry, the committee in charge of the Hostess House would now respectfully ask whether it is the wish of the Post Commander that the Hostess House be kept open until the completion of demobilization, or for a longer or for a shorter period."

General Heard's reply, dated March 4, was as follows:

"I note what you say about the continuance of the Hostess House at Schofield Barracks, and I wish to thank you very sincerely, in behalf not only of myself, but of all the men of that great post, for your kindly interest in the welfare of our soldiers.

"The Hostess House most assuredly was of enormous benefit to the men, especially to the Hawaiians.



"I think as you do that possibly it has served its usefulness; —not that it will not be of service and benefit in the future, but that possibly such benefit would be small in proportion to the cost which your committee would undergo in keeping it up, and I therefore hesitate to express an opinion as to whether it should be kept open longer or not. In fact, I would much rather that you would decide the whole question yourself, counting fully upon my assistance and cooperation in every detail.

"I will be pleased to call upon you personally and go into the matter more fully, verbally, tomorrow, if agreeable to you, and will instruct my aide-de-camp to try and make an appointment with you for a few minutes, either at your home or at the Y. W. C. A. in Honolulu, for this purpose."

The decision arrived at was that the hostess house should be closed, to be opened again at a later time in case developments indicated the need for it. The house was accordingly closed on March 14, 1919, after having been in service for exactly eight months. During that period there had been a total of 30,203 callers.

"At 2:30 p. m.," wrote Miss Nelson on the last day, "we turn over our keys to the supply officer and depart for Honolulu with many regrets at leaving the post but a feeling of deep gratitude that we have been allowed the privilege of eight months of a most interesting experience."

## CHAPTER XII

# WAR CAMP COMMUNITY SERVICE AND KNIGHTS OF COLUMBUS

## WAR CAMP COMMUNITY SERVICE

WILLIAM E. HOPKINS, representing the War and Navy Department Commission on Training Camp Activities, arrived in Honolulu in October, 1918, and after assisting in the speakers' bureau of the United War Work Campaign, made a survey of the communities adjacent to the army posts and naval stations in the territory and investigated the work being accomplished for service men with the object of coordinating the various activities, to prevent overlapping and in every way to see that all work was carried on smoothly and to the advantage not only of the men but of the organizations whose staffs of patriotic and hard-working members were putting in their efforts. In November, Dean Chambers of the inspector-general's office in Washington, representing the same Commission, arrived in the islands and made a most complete survey of the army posts, Schofield Barracks, the naval and aerial stations, and Camp Kilauea on Hawaii.

Early in January, 1919, a local organization for War Camp Community Service, an agency formed by the Commission on Training Camp Activities "to centralize and coordinate all community activities which have to do with the leisure time of the men of the service," was completed in Honolulu. The first meeting of the local organization was addressed by Dean Chambers, who then returned to Washington to report to Secretary of War Baker and Secretary of the Navy Daniels. Mr. Hopkins remained in Hawaii as executive secretary of the work in the territory. The board of directors, executive committee, and chairman of sub-committees of the local War Camp Community Service were as follows:

Board of directors: F. J. Lowrey, chairman; Mrs. I. M. Cox, vice-chairman; A. W. Eames, A. H. Tarleton, Percy M.

Pond, G. S. McKenzie, Chas. R. Hemenway, R. H. Trent, A. M. Nowell, P. G. H. Deverill, Vaughan MacCaughey, H. E. Vernon, Mrs. E. D. Kilbourne, Mrs. Arthur F. Griffiths, Mrs. J. P. Erdman, Mrs. E. R. Cameron, Mrs. A. C. Alexander, Mrs. Wm. L. Whitney, Mrs. A. G. M. Robertson, Miss Claire Kelley, Mrs. W. F. Frear, Miss Beatrice Castle, Mrs. J. M. Dowsett.

Executive committee: F. J. Lowrey, Mrs. I. M. Cox, A. W. Eames, J. H. Ellis, Mrs. A. F. Griffiths, Mrs. E. D. Kilbourne, Wm. E. Hopkins, executive secretary.

Honorary members: Chas. J. McCarthy, governor of Hawaii; Joseph J. Fern, mayor of Honolulu; W. F. Dillingham, president Chamber of Commerce; Brig. Gen. J. W. Heard, commanding officer of the Hawaiian Department; Rear Admiral R. E. Doyle, commanding officer of the naval district.

Chairman of subcommittees: Office, A. W. Eames; accounts, J. H. Ellis; clubs, A. M. Nowell; hospitality, Mrs. W. F. Frear; entertainment, Mrs. E. D. Kilbourne; singing, Mrs. A. G. M. Robertson; recreation, G. S. McKenzie; publicity, Vaughan MacCaughey; demobilization, A. H. Tarleton; seamen's institute, Richard H. Trent; girls work, Mrs. Wm. L. Whitney; soldiers' and sailors' memorial, Chas. R. Hemenway; hostesses, Mrs. J. P. Erdman.

As soon as it was learned that the Hawaiian Chapter, American Red Cross, would close its refugee work for which the University Club of Honolulu had so generously donated its rooms, the board of directors of the War Camp Community Service made application for the use of the property, F. J. Lowrey, chairman, having received a cable from the national budget committee of the service approving the recommendation. Negotiations for the lease of the club building were completed on June 6—good news to the committees planning for the reception and entertainment of Oahu's future garrison. As the club was in the heart of Honolulu, occupying a quarter of a block laid out in a garden, with library and canteen facilities and a large circular court around which was a lanai for dancing, the War Camp Community Service was enabled to stage its pro-

gram of dramatics, entertainment, and community sings in the midst of fitting surroundings.

"The Y. M. C. A. fills a certain want for men and the Y. W. C. A. for women," Mr. Hopkins had stated, "but the W. C. C. S. takes care of the soldier in every way." It was a place for the service men to spend their spare time, and also served to bring them in touch with the community.

It was, however, suggested by the *Advertiser* that, as far as Honolulu was concerned, the money contributed by people for the benefit of men in the service was used most unwisely; that Honolulu already had a soldiers' club—the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A.—and that, while the W. C. C. S. had been of immense value to soldiers of the mainland camps, it had been of little use in the islands, chiefly because it had not been established until the reason for it had disappeared and because the soldiers on Oahu were otherwise provided for. The *Advertiser* also raised the question why money should be spent for a soldiers' club in the city near the local Army and Navy "Y" which was one of the finest in the world.

"The W. C. C. S. is in no sense a rival of the 'Y'," Mr. Hopkins said on taking over the University Club quarters, adding that the service would fully justify the use of the club for the eight months until the lease expired. "It includes all agencies that contribute to the hospitality, entertainment of, and recreation of the men of the service and their families."

Miss Frances Ash, who had assisted in the organization and perfection of the work in San Francisco, arrived to assist Mr. Hopkins, and, before the middle of June, the W. C. C. S. had moved into its new home with a plan to provide some sort of amusement for soldiers and sailors each night of the week.

Circulars were sent out to men of the service telling them what the new organization had to offer. They were invited, with their women friends, to bring supplies to the club kitchen on Sundays and prepare their own meals; they were told that on Tuesday nights there would be dancing on the lanai, and on Wednesday nights, dancing lessons; on Thursday evenings they could bring their clothes and buttons to the club where young

ladies were to do the mending; that on Friday batches of cookies would be baked for Sunday; and on Saturdays the "shaveteria" would be open and electric irons would be provided for those who wished to press their clothes.

The "Ever Welcome Club" mapped out an interesting program, arranging to hold all of its social affairs at the W. C. C. S. building; business meetings, followed by socials, were to be held twice a month and there were to be two monthly dances.

The official opening of the War Camp Community Service Clubhouse was held on the evening of June 28, 1919, F. J. Lowrey, head of the Hawaiian organization, and W. E. Hopkins, director, greeting the 400 guests at the door. In the reception line were Mrs. E. D. Kilbourne, Mrs. A. C. Alexander, Mrs. E. R. Cameron, Mrs. J. P. Erdman, Mrs. W. F. Frear, Miss Wilhelmina Tenney, Miss Alice Macfarlane, Miss Claire Kelley, P. G. H. Deverill, Mrs. W. L. Whitney, Mrs. C. R. Hemenway, Vaughan MacCaughy, G. S. McKenzie, P. M. Pond, A. H. Tarleton, R. H. Trent, and H. E. Vernon.

Mr. Lowrey made the formal presentation of the club rooms to the service men and Commander F. X. Gygax of the submarine division at Pearl Harbor responded in behalf of his officers and men, who were the especial guests of the evening. Frank Q. Cannon and Miss Pearl Josephson repeated the musical sketch "Kamerad" which had been written by Mrs. John M. Young for a Rotary Club banquet, and gave as their encore a burlesque of "Anthony and Cleopatra." Dance music was supplied by the marine band.

"Is the W. C. C. S. worth while?" An editorial in the *Star-Bulletin* of June 30, 1919, asked the question. A statement by the district secretary of the Y. M. C. A. setting forth the relations of the "Y" to the W. C. C. S. and the status of both organizations had suggested the query. Some criticism of the W. C. C. S. had been made, the editorial said, on the ground that it duplicated in part the work of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., criticism which had grown when it became known that it was to make the University Club building a social center for men of all branches of the service. While not approving any duplication

of activities, the *Star-Bulletin* expressed the opinion that the W. C. C. S. was a valuable adjunct both to the community and to the soldier and sailor. "Its importance in promoting the pleasure and entertainment of the service men, as well as enveloping them with an elevating atmosphere by affording them entree into respectable circles and making it possible for the boys to gain the acquaintance of the better class of the city, will be emphasized more and more as our military and naval strength on Oahu is increased."

The *Star-Bulletin* explained also that the program of the Y. M. C. A. and the Army and Navy "Y" was to promote the physical well being of the men at the posts and to afford them opportunities to take advantage of the "Y's" educational facilities and that the Army and Navy "Y" was a recreational center for the service men in town, providing them highly desirable lodging apartments and a place where they might write and enjoy games. The primary purpose of the W. C. C. S., on the other hand, was to serve as a medium for social intercourse between soldiers and residents of the community, to bring the two groups into contact, and to gain for the service man a welcome in the private home.

"Once having begun looking after the soldier's social life it behooves us to continue the work," the *Star-Bulletin* urged. "Consider what a boon it will be when we have 30,000 soldiers here and a largely increased personnel at Pearl Harbor. If we do not throw a protecting mantle around these men they will soon become the prey of forces of evil. If our own people refuse to show an interest in their welfare they will seek relief from the dull monotony of military grind under what circumstances are open to them, and Honolulu knows from experience what a pernicious influence the underworld wields on these men."

At the request of F. J. Lowrey, A. W. Eames, and Secretary W. E. Hopkins, who had explained that the local branch of the W. C. C. S. had received instructions to discontinue its work on October 31, the governor, on September 30, sent a radiogram to H. S. Braucher, secretary of the organization in New York, strongly urging the continuance of the service in Honolulu pend-

ing the return of the American troops then on active service in Siberia. Resolutions concerning the matter adopted by Honolulu Post No. 1, American Legion, were also forwarded to the national organization and it was announced on November 13, 1919, that the W. C. C. S. would continue work until February, 1920.

Neighborly good cheer and home hospitality to the men in uniform characterized the work of the War Camp Community Service during its period of activity in Honolulu, according to a report compiled by its executive secretary at the completion of the 13 months' work. Until June, 1919, Mr. Hopkins stated, time had been devoted to getting organized, to appointing committees, and to securing a board of directors; to the entertainment of military men in the churches and private homes; and finally, to securing the University Club house for the social activities. It was estimated that 66,992 men in uniform had visited the club and that 893 volunteer workers and 98 cooperative agencies had aided in their entertainment, the record being based upon the number registered and not upon the service given. Sixty girls, on an average, had attended the two dances a week and Mrs. A. G. M. Robertson, chairman of the singing committee, was especially mentioned as having done much to provide entertainment. Only volunteer talent was used.

"I have helped in War Camp Community Service for nearly half our army during the war and in no department in the states have I received the cooperation and support given me by the Hawaiian Department in Honolulu," Mr. Hopkins stated in his report.

The cooperation of all Honolulu had enabled the club to make a success of its mission. Assistance had been given by the press, the churches, the schools, fraternal organizations, and private individuals, who supplied what they could in the line of books, magazines, food and automobiles, Christmas gifts and service. The American Library Association and the University Club had furnished the use of libraries. The army, navy and marine corps had loaned flags and other material and the morale branch, through which the W. C. C. S. operated, gave much

assistance, as did the general staff, quartermaster corps, and all branches of army service.

F. J. Lowrey, chairman, J. H. Ellis, treasurer, A. W. Eames, secretary, and A. M. Nowell, club chairman, had borne the burden of business management; and books kept by Miss A. Isaacs showed that the territory had contributed \$29,774 to the W. C. C. S. through the United War Work Campaign, the unused balance of which was turned back to the community to be used in service clubs for the army, navy, and marine corps. Money had been spent judiciously, Mr. Hopkins reported, the men of the service receiving 100 per cent on every dollar; and all service and all activities had been free. The canteen had been run on a strictly cost basis, the use of commissary supplies enabling the organization to sell at army prices. All service had been volunteered except some music for the dances; and excessive salaries had not been paid. The men of the garrison had been given a home where hospitality and good cheer had been the dominant note. The W. C. C. S. had also established a local registration system for service men on duty in the islands.

Transport troops to the number of 27,588 passing through Honolulu to and from the Orient had been offered the hospitality of the club and the majority had availed themselves of the privilege. Lodgings at the armory had been provided for 8,375 boys and 7,065 had been given breakfasts. Miss Clarabel Stephens, information secretary, had organized groups of entertainers who had given programs at the army posts; and also a number of parties and dances. After her return to the mainland Miss Norma Sturla and Miss Agnes Isaacs had carried on that work in addition to their regular duties as secretaries at club headquarters. The W. C. C. S. had also provided a social director for the Seamen's Institute from April to December.

#### ENTERTAINMENTS FOR SOLDIERS

An important feature of Honolulu's post-war hospitality was the entertainment of men in the military and naval service, persons in Red Cross parties and troops of the allied forces who



touched at the port in 1919 en route to Siberia or the mainland United States. Women of the churches, representatives of the Hawaiian Chapter of the American Red Cross, the War Camp Community Service, the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., and the Knights of Columbus made a practice of visiting the transports and liners and providing entertainment and refreshment. The War Camp Community Service was, perhaps, the most frequent organizer of such diversion and usually cooperated with the other agencies. Its volunteer motor corps was of great assistance.

One of the most unique occasions was the entertainment, in May, 1919, of 100 wounded Czech soldiers, the first contingent of thousands who were to be taken from Siberia to America and thence to Czecho-Slovakia and who arrived from Vladivostok via Manila.

"It is my best desire to express, in the name of the Czecho-Slovak invalid soldiers, my sincere thanks to our good American friends of Honolulu, for their appreciated aid to make our short stop in this city as pleasant as possible," said Major Dosek, the commander, just before their departure. "The words could not express our feelings towards the organization of the Red Cross, War Camp Community Service, and Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., for their attention and remarkable hospitality, that we feel, we owe you an everlasting debt of gratitude. We assure you that we shall never cease to remember the pleasurable hours spent in the Paradise of the Pacific."

The W. C. C. S. was host to 300 soldiers, in Honolulu for a night, at the Seamen's Institute early in June; and, on the arrival of the transport *Logan* from Siberia in July, the women of the city were asked to bring prepared food to headquarters at the University Club building. A picnic supper was served, after which the men were entertained with a program of vaudeville and "movies" at the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A.

A hearty welcome was given the boys from the battleships *New York* and *Mississippi* and the destroyers which arrived on August 20; and 5,000 cookies and 80 gallons of fruit punch were served by women of the churches to men of the fleet and trans-

ports at W. C. C. S. headquarters two nights later, after which an hour's program was offered at the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. Fifteen hundred men were given breakfast the next morning and another entertainment was sponsored by the combined lodges of the city.

A thousand men en route from Siberia in September were guests of the city at the Armory and at the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A.; supper was served by the hospitality committee of the W. C. C. S.; and a swim and supper for 450 was served by the members of Hawaiian Chapter at the beach, representatives of the Y. M. C. A. and the Knights of Columbus assisting. Five hundred were given breakfast at the clubhouse the next morning.

The Red Cross, the Y. M. C. A., the W. C. C. S., and the Knights of Columbus were joint hosts to 1,300 American soldiers who arrived from Siberia on the *Logan* on October 10, the W. C. C. S. offering them swimming facilities at the public baths, the Red Cross and the Knights giving them a chowder supper at Memorial Park, and the Army and Navy "Y" assisted by the Y. W. C. A., presented a special entertainment for them in the evening. Those who wished to remain ashore were provided with cots at the Armory by the W. C. C. S. and that organization gave them breakfast the next morning.

Over 200 volunteer hostesses assisted in entertainments and served food to the 2,600 men of the transports *Thomas* and *Sherman*, bound for Siberia, and the *Great Northern*, en route to the mainland, in the latter part of October. During that time over 1,300 were accommodated at the Armory, 4,000 visitors registered at the W. C. C. S. club house, and 1,450 breakfasts and luncheons were served.

The W. C. C. S., planning a Christmas entertainment for the local soldiers, sailors, marines, and members of the aviation and signal corps as well as the men from a transport then in port, called for volunteers again on December 18 and directions were issued for the making and filling of Christmas stockings. With the cooperation of the Knights of Columbus a joyous Christmas dance was given—one of the last entertainments sponsored by

war time organizations for the benefit of men in the military and naval service.

#### KNIGHTS OF COLUMBUS

The extension of the Knights of Columbus war activities to the military bases of Hawaii was due, primarily, to the influence of the Rev. Father Valentin of the Catholic Mission at Honolulu, who, during his service in the army on Oahu, saw a need for the work. A letter written to the supreme council of the order and endorsed by the Right Reverend Libert Hubert Boeynaems, Bishop of Zeugma and Vicar Apostolic for the Territory of Hawaii, Frank D. Creedon, T. J. Fitzpatrick, and Father Valentin brought Albert G. Bagley, director of the war work of the Knights' Western department to Honolulu in the spring of 1919 to make a survey of the needs of soldiers and sailors. Mr. Bagley's plans for a two-story concrete building to be erected on land donated for the purpose within the mission grounds of the Cathedral of our Lady of Peace on Fort Street were announced in the newspapers of May 29.

"It had originally been intended to establish a building at Schofield Barracks, but, owing to a recent change in the policy of the army, no other organizations are to be permitted to put up buildings at the camps beyond what are already in existence. The need for a place of clean amusement for enlisted men, without charge, appealed to those in charge of the project and they finally decided upon the present scheme."

"While the work of the Knights of Columbus was undertaken primarily for the Catholic men in the service," Mr. Bagley stated, "there never has been any limitation upon whom we would entertain. The same rule will hold here, and every man of the service, irrespective of his religious belief, will be welcome at our headquarters when they are finished."

A lease from the Roman Catholic Church to the Knights of Columbus, entered into on November 7, 1919, and to end with the 31st day of October, 1939, provided that the latter organization should pay rent for the property at the rate of one dollar

a year, the rental being fixed at that nominal sum in view of the fact that it was to be used "exclusively for the moral, physical, intellectual and religious improvement of men and women" and that certain restrictions for the benefit of the lessor had been made. The reservations were that the church might have, free of rent and at all times during the existence of the lease, for its own religious and educational purposes, the use of one room on the first floor and one room on the second floor of the building. At the termination of the lease the Knights were to "peaceably deliver up to the lessor or its successors or assigns the said premises, together with all future buildings, erections and/or additions upon or to the same, in good repair and vacant and unincumbered and in good tenantable order and condition and without compensation for any such future buildings, erections and or additions." The lessee reserved the right to cancel the lease on three months' notice, turning over the premises and all future buildings without compensation and in good tenantable condition.

The Knights also agree to erect upon the premises within a certain term of years and at their own expense, a building at least two stories in height, suitable for the usual purposes of a Knights of Columbus building and "intended for service in moral, physical, intellectual and religious improvement of men and women, such building to be so constructed upon such plans and specifications as may be approved by the Bishop for the time being of the Roman Catholic Church in the Territory of Hawaii." The lease was signed for the Knights by James A. Flaherty, supreme knight, and Wm. J. McGinley, supreme secretary; for the church, by Bishop Libert, trustee in Hawaii.

Plans were then drawn by E. P. Newcombe for a building to occupy a space fronting on Fort Street between the Harrison building and a roadway to be left on the mauka side of the Cathedral.

Despite the protests of the Outdoor Circle it was found necessary to cut down the "mother of all the algaroba trees in the territory" in order to make room for the new building. Planted in 1828 by Father Bachelot, the tree had flourished all these years at the edge of the Mission grounds. The stump was removed by

Father Valentin to a site within the Mission enclosure, there to stand as an historical relic.

Louis A. Bagley, son of the director, was appointed general secretary of the work in Honolulu. He arrived in November, 1919, and immediately busied himself, in conjunction with Father Valentin, in completing the organization. The Knights co-operated with the War Camp Community Service and other organizations, and when the W. C. C. S. terminated its activities and vacated the University Club building at the end of January, the Knights made an arrangement whereby they obtained the use of the premises until their own building was ready for occupancy. Under the direction of Secretary Bagley and Mrs. M. J. Goodrich, dances, Sunday afternoon teas, and other entertainment features were provided for all men in service who cared to attend.

The Knights of Columbus building was completed with all the conveniences of a well-appointed club and was formally opened on May 29, 1920. The work was carried on in Honolulu until the cancellation of the lease on March 10 of the following year; the furniture and equipment of the building were made over to the Bishop on August 13, 1921.

The Columbus Welfare Club was opened in June of that year, with 350 members, its object being "to organize and conduct welfare work in all its phases." Louis A. Bagley was made director and executive secretary; and Mrs. K. R. Fullbrook had charge of the women's branch. The officers were Bishop Libert, honorary president; Frank D. Creedon, president; Mrs. Samuel Chillingworth, Jr., vice president; Louis A. Bagley, secretary; and Rev. Father Valentin, treasurer. These officers with Mrs. E. M. Watson, Mrs. A. J. Wirtz, Rev. Father Patrick St. Leger, John A. Hughes, and E. V. Todd, constituted the board of trustees upon which fell the responsibility of carrying out the welfare program which was intended to reach rich and poor alike, irrespective of race, creed, or color.

## CHAPTER XIII

### UNITED WAR WORK CAMPAIGN

(NOVEMBER, 1918)

IN THE FALL OF 1918 a plan was formed at the suggestion of President Wilson to unite in one big United War Work Campaign instead of holding separate drives for the various organizations engaged in work for the soldiers and sailors overseas and at home—the Young Men's and Young Women's Christian Associations, National Catholic War Council, Salvation Army, Jewish Welfare Board, War Camp Community Service, and American Library Association. The total amount to be raised was \$170,500,000; the western district quota was fixed at \$8,525,000; and of this amount Hawaii was expected to raise 2.5 per cent, or \$215,000. The dates set for the campaign were November 11-18, inclusive, soon after the close of the Fourth Liberty Loan campaign. Preliminary plans for the campaign in this territory were made at a series of conferences held in the early part of September, at which George D. McDill, associate campaign director of the western district, met with representatives from the various islands of the group. A territorial committee was formed, as follows:

F. C. Atherton, chairman; Mrs. W. F. Frear, vice-chairman; James Wakefield, vice-chairman (Oahu); J. T. Moir, vice-chairman (Hawaii); Harold Rice, vice-chairman (Maui); Frank Crawford, vice-chairman (Kauai); L. Tenney Peck, treasurer; Lloyd R. Killam, executive secretary; John Waterhouse (for the Y. M. C. A.); Mrs. Arthur Alexander (for the Y. W. C. A.); Rev. Father Stephen (for the National Catholic War Council); Col. Robt. Dubbin (for the Salvation Army); A. Gartenberg (for the Jewish Welfare Board); Mrs. A. F. Griffiths (for the War Camp Community Service); C. H. Atherton (for the American Library Association); Harold Rice, territorial campaign manager.

Sub-committees were appointed with the following officers:

Publicity Committee: Charles R. Frazier, chairman; L. W. de Vis-Norton, executive secretary; Speaker's Committee: Ed Towse, chairman, Charles F. Loomis, executive secretary, Mrs. Doremus Scudder, associate executive secretary; Victory Boys Committee: W. R. Farrington, chairman, D. L. Crawford, executive secretary; Oahu Committee: James Wakefield, chairman, J. A. Rath, campaign director, Miss Grace Channon, secretary; Hawaii Committee: J. T. Moir, chairman, H. V. Patten, campaign director; Maui Committee: Harold Rice, chairman, C. A. McDonald, vice-chairman, R. B. Dodge, executive secretary; Kauai Committee: Frank Crawford, chairman, Jay O. Warner, executive secretary.

Headquarters were opened in the business district of Honolulu, but active publicity was withheld until after the close of the drive for the Fourth Liberty Loan. On the first of November Mr. Frazier of the publicity committee requested that all posters and advertisements pertaining to the Liberty Loan be removed in order that an interval might elapse before the appearance of the war fund poster; and the committee, through him, asked all persons, until the end of the drive, to close their letters with the slogan, "Yours for the United War Work Campaign."

Addresses were made to theater-goers and, on November 6, rallies were held all over the islands. Lessons in salesmanship for prospective solicitors were held at the Library of Hawaii and at the churches; and at a meeting of members and leaders of the women's teams at the Library, 400 women were addressed by persons who explained the work of the various organizations at home and overseas. Reasons why community support for the campaign should be forthcoming were advanced by seven speakers at the Ad Club luncheon on November 6: L. Tenney Peck for the Y. M. C. A., Mrs. Doremus Scudder for the Y. W. C. A., Judge Antonio Perry for the National Catholic War Council, A. Gartenberg for the Jewish Welfare Board, W. E. Hopkins for the War Camp Community Service, A. Lewis, Jr., for the American Library Association, Dr. J. W. Wadman for the Salvation Army; and W. R. Farrington spoke for the Victory Boys and Girls.

"When they see Berlin; when they see Germany on humble knees before the Allies; when they see peace, properly guaranteed, in Europe, then and not till then will our soldier boys be ready to quit," a preliminary advertisement set forth. "Be as willing to 'see it through' as they are. It is your part to keep the boys 'over there' encouraged, contented, and inspired by keeping them close to their home ties, by giving them places where they may forget war, play games, read good books, see good plays; places where they may worship; places where they can have the mothering attention of good women. These are the things the boys value; these are the things that are given to them by the seven splendid organizations engaged in this campaign. Prove yourself worthy by giving nobly to the cause. Until they see Berlin, do not take away your support. . . . Be ready next week with the best donation you can afford and remember the slogan: United We Serve Without Thought of Race or Creed."

A dance was given by the First Hawaiian Infantry at the armory on the night of the ninth, the entire proceeds going to the fund.

Honolulu's business district was gay with flags and her people thronged the streets in thousands to see the United War Work Campaign parade which started at Aala Park and moved along King Street toward the Capitol at 1:30 on the afternoon of November 9. At the head of the procession marched Sheriff Charles Rose and a squad of police. Following came the Hawaiian band; the marshal, Harry Hayward, adjutant-general of the territory, and his aides, Major J. M. Camara and Captain C. H. Cooke, N. G. H.; Governor McCarthy with his staff and aides; the Fifth Hawaiian Infantry, N. G. H.; Prince Kuhio Kalaniana'ole, Mayor Fern and the members of the board of supervisors; members of the campaign committee, and the clergy. The U. S. Coast Artillery band, girl scouts and boy scouts, Victory Boys and Girls composed the next section; the First Hawaiian Infantry band led the Honolulu Military Academy, Kamehameha School cadets and Punahou School students and cadets, the Kamehameha School Alumni Association, students of St.



Louis College, and representatives of the Knights of Columbus, Y. M. C. A., Y. W. C. A., and the Outdoor Circle; and following came the consuls for Great Britain, Portugal, China, and Cuba, each with their Red Cross units. An entire section was devoted to service flags. The Salvation Army Girls' band, members of the Honolulu Ad and Rotary Clubs, units from the War Camp Community Service, the American Library Association and the Jewish Welfare Board, and Mrs. G. F. Allen, driving a tractor, completed the display.

Then, on November 11, to the ear-splitting noise of a town gone mad with joy over the signing of the armistice, the drive opened with every promise that the money which the people of Hawaii were asked to give toward the spiritual and physical comfort of the soldiers in France would be oversubscribed in record time. Professor H. R. Harper, who had recently returned from the western front and who had been sent to Hawaii by National Headquarters to assist in the drive, addressed men workers of the campaign at luncheon at the Commercial Club on November 11. A monster mass meeting for men was held that night at the Armory with the slogan "Double Your Contribution as a Thank Offering" at which the governor presided; and Ad and Rotary Club members attended the theaters and led in the singing of patriotic songs.

The appeal "United War Work Will Go On. Will You Help?" was published the day after. "The United War Work Campaign is just as necessary now as before the kaiser abdicated and the Germans signed the great armistice. Our troops will be 12 to 18 months in Europe yet and the great welfare activities of the seven magnificent organizations united in this campaign must go on unchecked. Furthermore, this is one of the last opportunities we shall have to demonstrate that our pride in and love for the 'boys over there' means something material and practical. Recreational centers must be kept up; welfare agencies must be maintained. Make your offering this week a thank offering for the end of the great war and the victory of our cause!"

After three days of successful campaigning by the men, the women workers began a canvass of the city which had been divided into 45 districts outside of Forts De Russy, Armstrong, and Shafter. Under the auspices of the Y. W. C. A., a mass meeting for women was held at the Bijou Theater on November 13.

Frank Atherton, chairman of the territorial committee, with Urban Williams, executive secretary of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., George Andrus, and Father Stephen, made a tour of the outer islands and returned reporting great enthusiasm for the drive. Professor H. R. Harper, recently returned from the battlefield in Europe, with Mr. and Mrs. George Calfee, song leaders of the Army and Navy "Y," then left for an island tour. After returning from the tour Professor Harper addressed a series of street meetings and gave effective help in other ways. Collections amounted to \$100,000 on November 14; it was announced that an effort would be made to double Hawaii's quota. Mayor Fern addressed a noon-day meeting of the stevedores to explain the objects of the campaign and R. L. Halsey, immigration inspector, spoke in the cafes.

"Pro-Germans Still at Work; Lie About War Work Nailed," was the heading of a notice published in the newspapers of November 14, signed by James A. Rath, campaign director for Oahu. The notice said: "A rumor is going around to the effect that the funds now being collected to help our boys 'over there' are to be diverted to feeding the Germans. Americans, this is another pro-German trick. All money collected goes to the seven organizations which are working for our boys and the boys of our allies." The next day Chairman Wakefield startled the luncheon meeting at the Commercial Club with the announcement that a pro-Hun in Honolulu had been circulating a story along the waterfront that funds being raised in the campaign were to be given to President Wilson to feed the Germans. Vigorous steps were taken to refute this canard.

One of the features at the Commercial Club luncheon on November 16 was the auctioning of "Katy," a pig donated to the cause by Fred Kovner Christian, a Russian. Frank Atherton

was the lucky purchaser with a bid of \$55; he gave the pig back to the committee and she was sold a second time to Jack Milton for \$35.

By November 16, the territory was "over the top." College of Hawaii students, under the leadership of Sergeant Edwin Bryan, Jr., Sergeant Norman King, and Private Fred Denison secured donations from students and members of the faculty amounting to \$200; and employees of the cable station on Midway Island sent in \$29. On November 19, in accordance with a cable received by Mr. Atherton, it was announced that the campaign would be extended to Wednesday, the twentieth.

At the close of the campaign, receipts from all sources, as approved by the auditor, totalled \$334,192.85 not including cash subscriptions of \$793 from the United States Naval Station at Pearl Harbor which were remitted direct to the treasurer at New York. The contributions were received from the following sources:

Territorial subscriptions, sugar plantations and pineapple companies.....		\$104,176.71
Oahu .....	142,346.78	
Maui .....	38,583.15	
Kauai .....	20,378.97	
Hawaii .....	28,707.24	
Total .....		\$334,192.85

Hawaii's response to the United War Work campaign was given much publicity on the mainland. "All America is deeply impressed by the overflowing tide of generosity of Hawaii," John R. Mott, director-general, cabled to Mr. Atherton after receiving a message from the latter stating that the islands had subscribed 50 per cent more than their quota. A. R. Philbrick, deputy comptroller of New York City, wrote to Mr. Atherton in March, 1919:

"Your letter of January 29, accompanied by the report of your auditor, Mr. Chas. Edwin Warn, San Francisco, is received and acknowledged with pleasure. It must have been very

gratifying to be able to present such a clean-cut, comprehensive report of your financial transactions in the splendid campaign conducted last November. This acknowledgement has been delayed several days since receiving the report in order to get time to read it carefully, but this I have just now accomplished and it is certainly an interesting document. One of the outstanding facts is that your cash collections were almost 97½ per cent of the total subscribed; and that your expenses of \$8,666.79 were only 2.6 per cent of the entire amount raised. Concerning this fact, you certainly should feel satisfied with the result of your advertising costs and it is a great pity that the publicity matter did not reach you from the coast in season to be of some use."

#### VICTORY BOYS AND VICTORY GIRLS

At the time of the opening of the United War Work Campaign, W. R. Farrington held a direct appointment from Washington as territorial head of the Boys' Working Reserve and was also chairman of the territorial committee on the Victory Boys movement. The latter work had not been organized, and seeing the value and importance of this addition to the working forces, Mr. Farrington prepared to lend the aid of his organization to the cause. Representative boys from every school in Honolulu were called to the Library of Hawaii on the evening of November 6 for the purpose of planning for the enlistment of an army of Victory Boys to aid in the drive. Mr. Farrington presided and W. W. Thayer, chairman of the movement on Oahu, and James Wakefield, chairman of the Oahu executive committee for the United War Work Campaign, made the principal addresses.

The Victory Boys' movement was nation wide, the chairman explained, its object being to enlist the active support of every boy who was old enough to do something to help win the war. It was open to boys of every nationality and every creed and belonged to the United War Work Campaign as a whole instead of to any one of the organizations for whose benefit the drive was held. "The association has its own emblem distinct

from those of the seven war welfare societies and will have its own banner to hang in the windows of houses of members," Mr. Farrington said. "Every boy willing to work a little and to make a small personal sacrifice for the fulfillment of his pledge is invited to record himself as a Victory Boy and will be helping to win the war as much as the adult who gives to the campaign funds. The money the boys earn will be apportioned among the seven organizations in the same manner as other donations."

Two thousand boys pledged themselves to join the movement at a mass meeting at the Bijou Theater on the afternoon of November 13 when Chairman Farrington was assisted by Governor McCarthy, "Pop" Hutton, James Wakefield, C. F. Loomis, and Professor H. R. Harper, who explained an exhibit of war trophies.

Industrial School boys voted to give \$3 each, every boy donating 50 cents from his meager earnings and pledging himself to earn an additional \$2.50. Manager James Gibb of Aiea Plantation offered work on four consecutive Saturdays to assist boys and girls to complete their funds. Lawrence Santos of Kaahumanu was the first grammar school boy in Honolulu to fulfill his pledge, giving \$5 which he earned by working in his neighbors' yards.

Following an address by D. L. Crawford on November 14 three-fourths of the student body of Mills School signed pledges to "earn and give"; four hundred St. Louis College students had already enrolled; 200 girls at McKinley High School signed, 350 joined at the Normal School, and 75 from Kawaiahao Seminary. Every boy in the Waialeale industrial school enrolled in the movement. Not content with scoring their 100 per cent by picking beans and doing housework to earn money for the fund the Seminary girls also gave a Thanksgiving play and Hawaiian musicale at Atherton Hall, all proceeds of which were donated. Many Kamehameha School girls enlisted and the movement was in full swing at Punahou and the College of Hawaii. Even tiny children of Kalihi denied themselves moving pictures and walked the long distance to town to save their nickels for the cause.

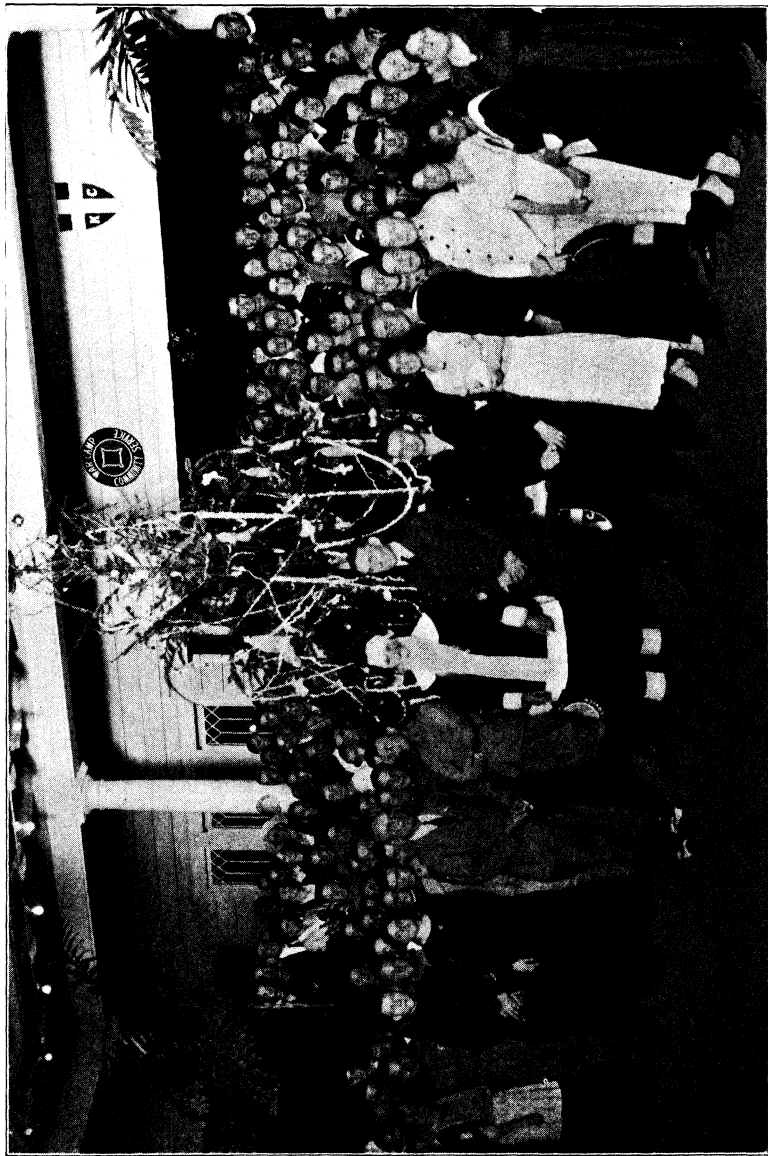
A report by D. L. Crawford, executive secretary of the Victory Boys Committee, published in February, 1919, and covering the period to the end of January, gives the following summary:

"The boys and girls of this territory did a large service in the war by their pledges and payments of money in the United War Work campaign. They pledged themselves to earn and give over \$7,500 toward the welfare work in the army and navy. Something over half of this large amount has already been paid in and there is still a month for the rest to come in. It is no easy matter for the boys and girls to pay over their hard earned quarters and dimes now that the stimulus of war and the heroic sufferings on the field of battle are no more. We cannot give them too much praise for their sacrificial generosity.

"Oahu children pledged \$5,163.92 and have paid in \$2,014.88. Kauai boys and girls pledged \$808 and have paid over \$579.40. Hawaii's record is not complete in the central office but to date shows \$1,609.10 pledged and \$935.77 paid in. Complete records would show the latter figure to be larger. Maui was so deeply engrossed in a W. S. S. campaign at that time that the schools of that county did not take up the United War Work campaign. However, one girl, Yoshiko Yuki of Haiku, pledged and paid \$1. She has the distinction of being the only Victory Girl on Maui.

"Altogether it has been a wonderful exhibition of generosity, very often sacrificial, and a record of which any state of the Union might well be proud.

"It is much to be regretted that the national committee failed to send out buttons which it promised for the boys and girls who should pledge in this campaign. In spite of this failure, however, the youngsters are going right ahead and fulfilling their contract. Especial praise is due to the many teachers and principals and others who have assisted in making this work a success among the many schools of the territory."



CHRISTMAS PARTY AND DANCE GIVEN BY WAR CAMP COMMUNITY SERVICE AND  
KNIGHTS OF COLUMBUS, DECEMBER 27, 1919

In center (left to right): W. E. Hopkins, Executive Secretary of War Camp Community Service; a soldier  
boy; Santa Claus; Louis A. Bagley, General Secretary of Knights of Columbus



L. TENNEY PECK  
Chairman Liberty Loan Executive  
Committee



R. W. SHINGLE  
Director of War Savings, Territory  
of Hawaii



GUY H. BUTTOLPH  
Liberty Loan Campaign Manager



MRS. H. E. HENDRICK  
Assistant Director of War Savings



## CHAPTER XIV

### WAR LOANS AND WAR SAVINGS STAMPS

THE history of the financial campaigns during 1917 and 1918 show a progressive heightening of interest and an increasing perfection of organization and of methods of publicity. The first Liberty Loan was floated without any special organization and with relatively little publicity, but for all the later loans and for the Thrift Stamp and War Savings Stamp campaign elaborate organizations were created and a great quantity and variety of advertising was used. The people were called on to subscribe not only because it was a patriotic duty but because the government was offering them a sound investment and encouraging useful habits of thrift. The response was one in which Hawaii may well take pride. In the five loan campaigns and the War Savings Stamp campaign the people of the territory subscribed more than \$30,000,000, there being a large over-subscription in each case.

#### FIRST LIBERTY LOAN

The first Liberty Loan was floated during May and June, 1917. About two weeks after the United States formally entered the war, the banks and trust companies of Honolulu published a joint advertisement calling attention to the fact that the government was expected shortly to offer a large issue of bonds for public subscription, and stating that they would be glad to assist their clients and friends by receiving subscriptions to such a loan when it was issued. On May 3 the banks received a message from Secretary of the Treasury McAdoo announcing the first Liberty Loan and saying, "You can render invaluable service to your country by receiving subscriptions and cooperating with federal reserve bank, your district." After a brief consultation, the local bankers replied: "Your cable received. All Hawaii banks and financial houses will cooperate. . . . Assure you patriotic support." The banks and trust companies began at

once to receive subscriptions. Arrangements were made to report by cable subscriptions received too late to be mailed to San Francisco before June 15, when the campaign closed. In a statement by James K. Lynch, chairman of the Liberty Loan General Executive Board and Governor of the Federal Reserve Bank of San Francisco, he says of the first Liberty Loan campaign in Hawaii:

"Records of the Liberty Loan general executive board, appointed by the Secretary of the Treasury for general charge of operations in the twelfth federal reserve district, under which the territory [of Hawaii] has operated for war loan purposes, show that the first loan campaign in the islands, commencing May [4] and ending June 15, 1917, was voluntarily directed from Honolulu by practically the same gentlemen who comprised the 'securities committee' appointed by the federal reserve bank of San Francisco. This committee consisted of A. W. T. Bottomley, vice president of Bishop & Company, chairman; C. H. Cooke, president of the Bank of Hawaii; and L. Tenney Peck, president of the First National Bank; with R. F. Stever, manager of the bond department of the Bishop Trust Company, as secretary. Of their own volition these public-spirited citizens of Honolulu undertook the responsibility and conduct of the first campaign in Hawaii."

About the only special canvass undertaken for the first Liberty Loan was that made by the insurance men on June 7, the day set aside by Secretary McAdoo for a nation-wide effort on the part of insurance men. This brought in subscriptions to the amount of about \$200,000. No quota was officially assigned to Hawaii for the first loan, but unofficially the territory's quota is said to have been \$2,000,000. There is a wide discrepancy in reports of the amount subscribed. Mr. Lynch places it at \$2,268,500; the governor's report for 1918 gives the total as \$2,350,000; a statement by L. T. Peck says the amount was \$3,050,400; while the newspapers, just after the close of the campaign, stated that \$4,857,850 had been subscribed, this including about one and a quarter million dollars of Hawaiian

money on the mainland. Throughout the nation, the first loan was heavily over-subscribed (as were all the others) but the government only accepted subscriptions to the amount of \$2,000,000,000, as originally called for. The amount finally allotted to Hawaii was \$1,590,700.

## SECOND LIBERTY LOAN

In August it was announced that a second Liberty Loan would soon be called for, and Governor Pinkham was requested by the Secretary of the Treasury to co-operate in securing a large popular subscription by appointing a committee to assume charge of the campaign. The governor at first asked the chairman of the central registration board for the selective draft to take this work in hand, but the duties of that officer were so heavy that the arrangement was not practical. The bankers were then consulted and on September 26 a territorial Liberty Loan executive committee was appointed consisting of L. Tenney Peck, chairman; Robert F. Stever, general executive secretary; Clarence H. Cooke, treasurer; E. I. Spalding; and J. L. Cockburn. With minor changes and some additions, this committee handled all subsequent loan campaigns. Mr. Peck served as chairman throughout and much of the success attained was due to the ability, hard work, and patriotic enthusiasm which he brought to the task.

As the campaign was expected to open about the first of October, the executive committee lost no time in formulating plans. At a preliminary meeting, Chairman Peck sounded the keynote of the enterprise: "We must make the Liberty Loan campaign the business of the whole territory and of every family in the territory for the next thirty days." A large advisory board or central auxiliary committee was formed, representing all interests in the territory, with the duty of preaching the gospel of buying Liberty Bonds. Subordinate to the executive committee, five compact sub-committees were appointed on sales, pledges, publicity, speakers, and island cooperation. A force of trained salesmen, all volunteers, was appointed to receive sub-

scriptions and initial payments. The campaign among the Chinese was managed by Charles A. Wong of the Chinese American Bank with the cooperation of the Chinese consul; among the Japanese by S. Awoki of the Honolulu branch of the Yokohama Specie Bank with the cooperation of the Japanese consul.

Careful attention was given to the publicity features of the campaign. In addition to the literature sent here from the San Francisco headquarters, the local committee had thousands of leaflets and subscription order blanks printed in English, Japanese, and Chinese and distributed to all parts of the territory. Advertisements were run in the newspapers. Hundreds of posters of various kinds, some of them produced locally, were put up in stores and other places where they would catch the eye of the public. Speakers in various languages addressed clubs and special meetings in the city and on plantations and elsewhere throughout the islands. Wednesday, October 24, was proclaimed a holiday and on that day the attention of all was centered upon the Liberty Loan. The Boy Scouts had a share in the campaign. On Saturday, October 13, and succeeding days they went over the whole city of Honolulu, distributing folders and application blanks. At the close of the campaign it was announced that the 55 Scouts who took part in this work obtained 419 subscriptions for a total of \$50,550.

One of the aims of the executive committee was to secure a wide distribution of the bonds, to make a record in the number of subscriptions rather than in the amount of the over-subscription. To make it possible for people of small means to invest, a deferred payment plan was arranged by which large firms financed the purchase of bonds by their employees in installments. A similar plan, by which Deputy Auditor G. W. R. King acted as trustee, made it possible for employees of the territory and school teachers to buy bonds. Plantation laborers were encouraged to put their bonus money into Liberty Bonds. The territory's quota for this loan was fixed at \$3,325,490. That amount was passed on October 19; the committee then set its goal at \$5,000,000. The campaign closed October 27, and as soon as the official figures were compiled, Chairman Peck was

able to cable to the Secretary of the Treasury: "Your Liberty Loan committee advises subscriptions reported to Federal Reserve Bank in San Francisco of \$5,214,150. Certain Hawaiian concerns have also subscribed direct through San Francisco agents a sum of \$1,557,500. Regular army through its channels has raised \$1,269,150. Grand total for Hawaii is \$8,060,800." The total number of civilian subscribers was 9,281; of army subscribers, 9,870; ten local people subscribed direct through San Francisco; making a grand total of 19,161 subscribers. Forty-three firms and corporations exclusive of sugar plantations took bonds to the value of \$245,100 for employees on the easy payment plan, the largest amount for one firm being \$23,700, taken by employees of H. Hackfeld & Company. Mr. Peck summed up the campaign in the words:

"It was a composite campaign. Everybody took part, and everyone's efforts counted in the success of the whole. Hardly any firm, bank, or individual can be singled out for special praise, for everyone did his level best, and the results were due to the efforts of each and everyone. The army, perhaps, is more deserving of special mention than any other body. They have done wonders and have shown the marvelous advantage of organization and competition in a campaign of this sort."

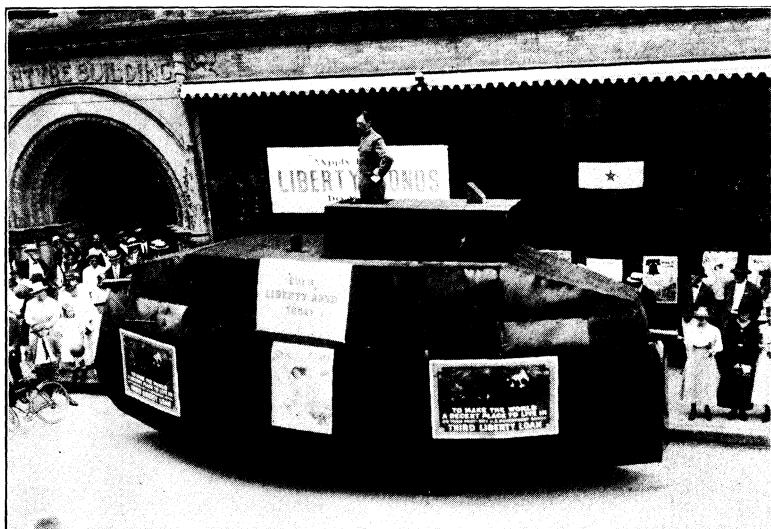
### THIRD LIBERTY LOAN

For the Third Liberty Loan (April, 1918), Hawaii's quota was \$3,610,317. There were some changes in the executive committee: A. Lewis, Jr., was added to the committee; Mr. Stever withdrew and Guy H. Buttolph became executive secretary and campaign manager for the territory. K. Yamamoto had charge of the work among the Japanese. Sub-committees were appointed on the outside islands. The same careful attention was given to publicity as during the preceding campaign. A striking feature was the large number of full page advertisements in the newspapers, donated by business houses, including the newspapers themselves. The use of bill-boards on a large scale by the campaign committee called forth some criticism—

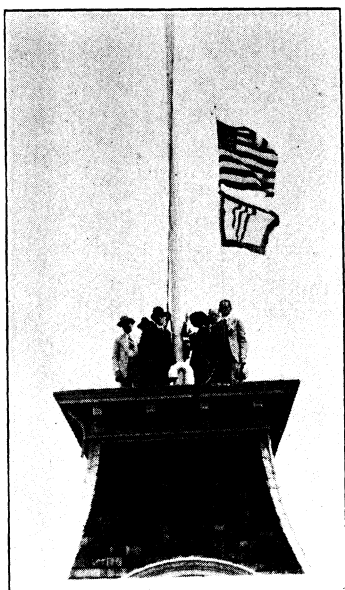
certain civic organizations had been fighting for years to abolish bill-boards—but was defended on the ground of the national emergency. The *Star-Bulletin* editorially urged its readers to stick to the line and not “go off on a billboard tangent.”

The campaign was formally opened on Saturday, April 6, the first anniversary of the entry of the United States into the World War, but much preliminary work was done during the preceding week, including the sending out of 40,000 letters with pledge and application forms to residents of the several islands. On Saturday a great patriotic demonstration was held in Bishop Park to commemorate the anniversary and inaugurate the loan campaign. A platform was placed in the middle of the square for the committee, speakers, and distinguished guests, with a place below for the Hawaiian Band; in front was a long table where the people were to sign application blanks. The park was thronged with people. Shortly before 10 o'clock there rumbled into place a huge model of an armored caterpillar land tank, with real guns sticking through its port holes; this was the contribution of the Hawaiian Ordnance Depot and had been built under the direction of Lieutenant Colonel Charles G. Mettler; it was a feature of all later “drives” in Honolulu. Troops of Boy Scouts came down the street; then the Ad Club in a body; Mayor J. J. Fern marched up proudly, carrying Old Glory and followed by a group of Boy Scouts bearing aloft the flags of the allies. At one minute before 10 a siren sounded a long blast; throughout the city all work ceased for one minute; as the sound of the whistle died away, the Hawaiian Band struck up the “Star Spangled Banner,” while Mayor Fern unfurled the flag and all stood silent. The music ceased, and a salute of 21 guns fired by a battery of the Hawaiian National Guard boomed forth from the Capitol grounds.

The national salute closed the observance of the war anniversary; but the Liberty Loan rally followed immediately. The program included an address by Governor Pinkham, a stirring oration by Lorrin Andrews, and musical numbers: the “Star Spangled Banner,” sung by Private Philip Hall of the Officers’ Training Camp at Schofield Barracks; the “Marseillaise,” sung



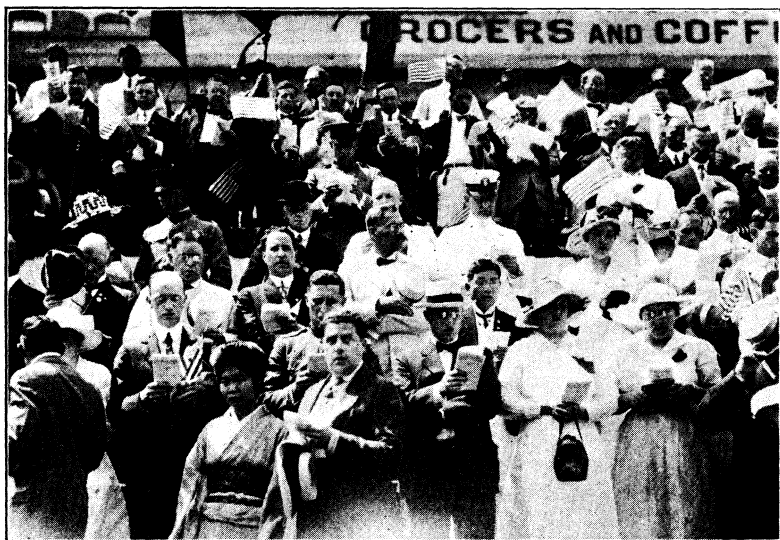
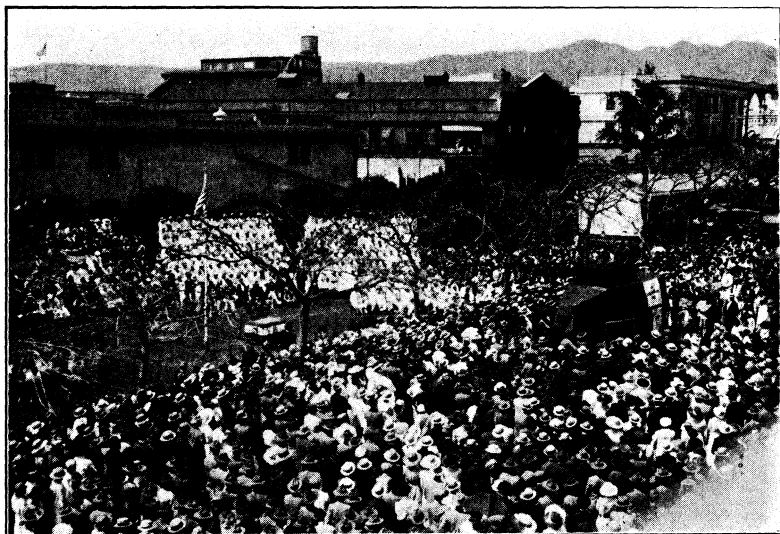
"TANK" USED IN THIRD LIBERTY LOAN DRIVE  
Lieut. Col. C. G. Mettler addressing noon rally on Fort Street, Honolulu



RAISING THIRD LIBERTY  
LOAN HONOR FLAG OVER  
THE CAPITOL



CHAPLAIN LOUGHRAN LEAD-  
ING "MOB SINGING" AT  
LIBERTY LOAN RALLY



CELEBRATING HAWAII'S VICTORY IN THIRD LIBERTY LOAN CAMPAIGN—"LIBERTY DAY," FRIDAY, APRIL 26, 1918

Above: Part of the crowd in Bishop Park  
Below: The grandstand joins in the "mob singing"



by Signor Joaquin Wanrell; and "God Save the King," sung by George A. Brown. At the close of the program the crowd pressed about the table, each one eager for the honor of being the first to sign up for a bond. When the day was over, the subscriptions amounted to a million and a half dollars, but this included preliminary subscriptions taken during the preceding week.

During the following days the subscriptions continued to come in. The same general method of operation was used as in the preceding campaign, but on Monday (April 8) a meeting was held at which plans were laid for an intensive "drive" with the object of making a direct and personal appeal to every home in Honolulu. The city was divided into districts with a captain and team for each district. Throughout the residence sections the canvass was made by women volunteers, under the direction of a Women's Committee of which Mrs. H. P. Agee (Fannie Heaslip Lea) was chairman. Supplementing this canvass, a noon rally was held each day at the corner of Fort and King streets, with music and a four-minute speaker to stir up interest and enthusiasm. The women's teams began their drive on Monday the 15th and worked with great zeal and effectiveness. The Boy Scouts also had a drive and during the campaign obtained 940 subscriptions for a total of \$96,000.

By Saturday, April 20, the territory's quota was passed and on that day the Honor Flag was raised over the Capitol. But the campaign went on for another week and was finally brought to a close with another great rally in Bishop Park on Friday the 26th. Features of this demonstration were the speeches by Campaign Manager Guy H. Buttolph and others, delivered from the turret of the Liberty Loan tank, and the "mob singing" led by Chaplain Joseph Loughran of the Fourth Cavalry.

The total amount of the territory's subscriptions to the third Liberty Loan was \$4,819,850, or 133.5 per cent of the quota. The number of subscribers was 17,796. Every island in the group went "over the top." Kauai made a particularly fine showing, subscribing nearly three times the amount of her quota. At the end, in looking back over the campaign and summing up its

results and outstanding features, the executive committee laid special stress upon the fine work done by the women, who, according to Mr. Peck and Mr. Buttolph, furnished an inspiring example of practical and successful patriotic endeavor.

#### FOURTH LIBERTY LOAN

In the fall of 1918, the Treasury Department issued a call for the greatest of all the war loans, \$6,000,000,000. Of this huge amount Hawaii's quota was fixed at \$6,765,050. For the Fourth Liberty Loan campaign, the territorial executive committee remained as it was during the third campaign, with the addition of members for the outside islands: H. A. Truslow for Hawaii, W. O. Aiken for Maui, and Frank Crawford for Kauai. S. Awoki headed the Japanese committee. The campaign in the territory opened on September 20, a week earlier than on the mainland, and continued for a month. For three weeks before the opening day, the four-minute speakers prepared the way by timely talks in the theaters and elsewhere. On the 18th the noon day rallies at the corner of Fort and King streets were inaugurated with a talk by Chairman Peck. As an opening feature, the executive committee developed the idea of making the first two days of the drive "Honor Roll" days. An appeal was made through the newspapers and by the four-minute speakers for people to go to the banks on those days and make their subscriptions voluntarily; those who did so had their names published in the newspapers on an "Honor Roll."

"Through the permission of the commanding general, three airplanes from Ford Island made an aerial attack on the city [of Honolulu] at 9 o'clock in the morning of the twentieth. At a quarter before 9, the fire department drove through the town with the sirens blowing, as was done in Paris for a warning that an air attack was coming. At 9 o'clock all the whistles of the city and in the harbor were blowing for the barrage. As soon as the airplanes came over the city, two 3-inch guns and one smaller one commenced firing from the center of the city.

Paper bombs were sent up from one of the tallest buildings. These bombs burst up in the air and from them came flags, parachutes, and streamers. Two of the airplanes were provided with several thousand 'Swat the Hun' issues of the Honolulu *Star-Bulletin* calling all persons to rush to bomb proof headquarters, these being the banks and trust companies, and subscribe for the Liberty Loan. Major Hugh Knerr, in command of the third plane, thrilled thousands of onlookers with daring nose dives and tail spins. It was a beautiful day and the stunts proved a wonderful success."

During the two Honor Days, Friday and Saturday, there was no solicitation for subscriptions, but in all parts of the territory people went by hundreds to the banks and entered their names on the Honor Roll, which for the next few days filled many columns in the newspapers. The total subscribed on those days was well over a million and a half dollars. On the following Monday groups of workers began an energetic canvass. In Honolulu, 32 men's teams attacked the business and down town section of the city, while 20 women's teams covered the residence districts; these teams included more than 300 patriotic volunteers working under the direction of Campaign Manager Guy Buttolph and the executive sales committee, of which Mrs. H. P. Agee was chairman. The Boy Scouts continued the good work which they had begun in earlier drives. The Ad Club and the Hawaiian Vigilance Corps of the American Defense Society made a vigorous attack on loan "slackers" and succeeded in smoking out some of them. A special appeal was made to plantation laborers, Japanese and Filipino, who were soon to receive their bonus money, to invest part of it in Liberty Bonds, but they were not urged to purchase beyond their means. The appeal found a most gratifying response.

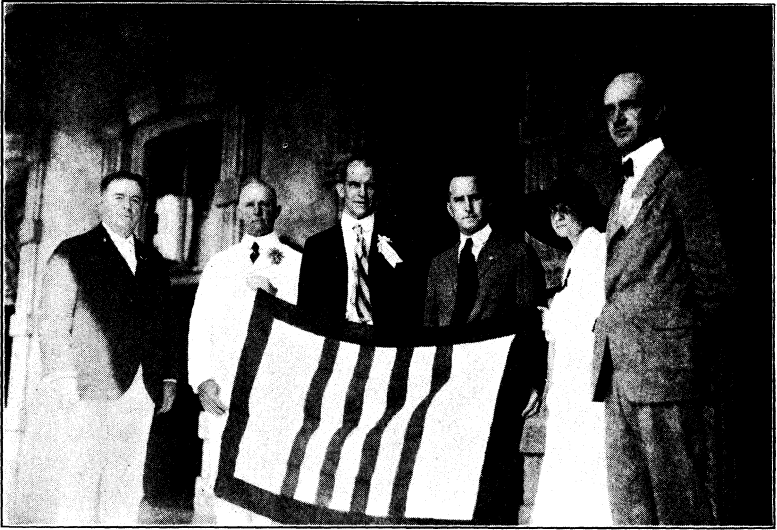
Day by day the subscriptions came in at a fair rate, but the task confronting the workers was a difficult one. During the summer just past, the financial interests of the territory had been called on to carry through the reorganization of H. Hackfeld & Company into the American Factors (described in a later chapter). "We trust the government will realize," Chairman

Peck stated, "that the refinancing of that concern, involving upwards of seven millions, was done here at the suggestion—amounting practically to a request—of the alien property custodian in Washington; and was, consequently, part of Hawaii's bit toward victory." The alien property custodian had in his control very large assets belonging to former stockholders of H. Hackfeld & Company residing in Germany, derived from the sale of the stock. In view of the circumstances of that reorganization it was suggested to the custodian that he authorize the application of a portion of these funds to Hawaii's loan quota. The custodian's answer, received October 9, authorized his local representative to invest \$1,500,000 in the manner suggested. This amount was increased by a later subscription of \$200,000, but \$500,000 of the first subscription was subsequently allocated to San Francisco.

The Hackfeld subscription brought the territory's total well above its quota, and the Fourth Liberty Loan Honor Flag was raised over the Capitol. The Hackfeld subscription was credited pro-rata to the various islands and put Oahu and Hawaii "over the top," Maui and Kauai being already over. The campaign continued for ten days longer. After it had closed, Campaign Manager Buttolph gave out the final figures showing a total subscription of \$8,062,650. This amount, however, included the \$500,000 allocated to San Francisco and a little over a half million subscribed by the army and navy in Hawaii; but with those items deducted the territory was still "over the top" by more than a quarter of a million dollars. The number of subscribers, with 6,000 included from the army and navy, was a few more than 25,000.

#### VICTORY LIBERTY LOAN

Within a few weeks after the close of the Fourth Liberty Loan campaign the signing of the military armistice put an end to hostilities on the battle fields of Europe, but direct war expenses continued for many months longer and it was necessary for the national government for the fifth time to float a large

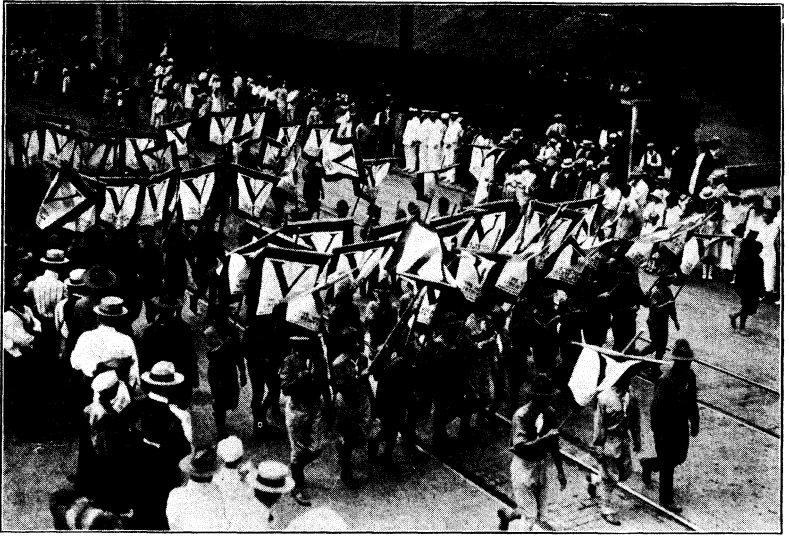


HAWAII'S FOURTH LIBERTY LOAN HONOR FLAG AND  
GROUP OF CAMPAIGN LEADERS

Left to right: L. T. Peck, Governor McCarthy, G. H. Buttolph, D. E.  
Mooney, Mrs. H. P. Agee, Malcolm Macintyre



FRENCH "75" BROUGHT TO HAWAII FOR VICTORY  
LIBERTY LOAN CAMPAIGN



BOY SCOUTS IN PARADE OPENING VICTORY LIBERTY LOAN CAMPAIGN, SATURDAY, APRIL 19, 1919



GROUP OF YOUNG WOMEN WHO SOLD BONDS AT MOILIILI BASEBALL PARK ON OPENING DAY OF VICTORY LIBERTY LOAN CAMPAIGN

Left to right: Mrs. Kenneth Cousens, Mrs. Emil Berndt, Mrs. George Humphrey, the Misses Jessie Baldwin, Helen Church, Ruth Farrington, and Hildred Church

issue of war bonds. It was called the Victory Liberty Loan, but it might with almost equal propriety have been called a thanksgiving loan. Hawaii's quota was \$4,788,000. The only change in personnel of the territorial executive committee was caused by the retirement of Mr. Buttolph and the appointment of Daniel E. Mooney to succeed him as campaign manager. The fact that, in the thought of many people, the "war was over" and further war effort unnecessary, made the flotation of this loan a hard pull. The committee foresaw this condition and laid its plans accordingly. The work was more thoroughly organized than ever before, the teams larger and more perfectly drilled. Advertising and publicity "stunts" were arranged with a view to keeping up enthusiasm and driving home the patriotic duty of finishing the job so well begun.

The campaign was to open on April 21, but in Hawaii the date was advanced to Saturday, April 19, in order to make the opening of the loan drive coincide with the beginning of the baseball season. It was noted that this was also the anniversary of the battle of Lexington. On that day a great parade marched from Aala Park along King Street to the baseball park in Moiliili, headed by Captain P. M. Smoot as grand marshal. First came the band of the 17th Cavalry, just arrived for station in the islands; following that, a group of girls from Kaiulani school, outlining the letter "V" by the colors of their draperies; Boy Scouts, each carrying a "V" flag; army, navy, and civilian officials in automobiles; detachments of soldiers, sailors, and marines; cadets of the Kamehameha Boys School, preceded by the Coast Artillery band; a whippet battle tank from the Argonne, sent to Hawaii to take part in this loan campaign; a "nest" of Browning machine guns; a battle-scarred French "75" field piece; an army airplane; and, marching at the end, the baseball teams of the Oahu-Service League. At the ball park there was a short program, with addresses by Governor McCarthy, Stephen T. Mather, director of national parks, and Richard L. Halsey, who stirred the crowd with an eloquent plea. A group of young ladies solicited subscriptions to the Victory Loan and signed up

a substantial amount. The governor opened the baseball season by pitching the first ball, which was marked with the letter "V."

The real work of the campaign began on the following Monday when the active canvass for subscriptions started in all parts of the territory. The four-minute speakers made their appeals to theater goers and the noon meetings in Honolulu kept alive the spirit of war days. Various "stunts" stirred up interest and enthusiasm. In Honolulu, a strikingly beautiful series of living poster tableaux was shown in the theaters. On Saturday, April 26, a realistic sham battle was fought on the vacant lot now occupied by the Federal Building. The whippet tank took part in this battle, giving a practical demonstration of how it traveled over a trench scarred field. The tank also made a tour with its crew to all the outer islands. The crew consisted of Sergeant H. B. Paul, a veteran with two wound stripes on his sleeve, and Private W. G. Gill, born at Laupahoehoe, Hawaii, who was in training for tank service when the war ended.

By the end of April the quota was half subscribed with ten days left of the campaign. A last strong pull brought the territory "over the top" on the afternoon of May 9. The total subscription finally reported was \$5,005,650, an over-subscription of \$217,650. On the afternoon of May 10, the victory was celebrated in the Capitol grounds. A steel box containing an Honor Roll with the names of all subscribing to the Victory Loan was presented by Chairman L. Tenney Peck to Governor McCarthy, who in turn presented it to Colonel C. P. Iaukea, secretary of the territory, for deposit in the archives as a perpetual memorial. Boy Scouts and Normal School girls escorted the box to the Archives Building. Airplanes circled over the city and dropped Victory Loan flags as Hawaii's final war loan campaign was officially brought to a close.

#### THRIFT STAMPS AND WAR SAVINGS STAMPS

By far the greatest part of Hawaii's financial contribution to the winning of the war was made through the medium of subscriptions to Liberty and Victory Bonds; but the financial cam-



paign which made the widest appeal and got down deepest into the hearts of the people was undoubtedly the one for the sale of what were sometimes called "baby bonds"—Thrift Stamps and War Savings Stamps. Through the sale of these stamps the government aimed to accomplish several objects: To raise a substantial portion—\$2,000,000,000—of the "sinews of war"; to furnish a form of government security which could be bought by persons of very little means and by children; to create and encourage habits of thrift and economy—habits which were not as common as they should be, especially in war time, among our people. From the beginning of 1918 the sale of thrift and war stamps went on continuously; and there were "drives" and periods of intensive selling timed to sandwich in between the Liberty Loan and Red Cross campaigns. The periods of greatest activity were in May, July and December, 1918.

The sale of war savings certificates was begun throughout the country at the beginning of December, 1917, a month after the close of the second Liberty Loan campaign. On the 19th of that month Robert W. Shingle was appointed director of war savings for the territory of Hawaii. As he was on the mainland at the time he deputized A. N. Campbell to direct the work temporarily. At about the same time the banks and trust companies of Honolulu received small consignments of stamps from the Federal Reserve Bank in San Francisco and began selling them, but not much was done until after the first of January, when the Honolulu postoffice received a supply of stamps. A general committee was then appointed, representing all parts of the territory and all races; on January 17 a further step was taken by the formation of a number of committees. P. F. Lee was appointed general secretary and chairman of the distribution committee. Plans were laid to interest the Chinese and Japanese; C. K. Ai was given charge of the work among the former and K. Yamamoto among the latter. Posters and circulars were printed in all the principal languages spoken in the territory. In February and again in March drives were carried on among the Japanese. The plantation agencies were enlisted in the enterprise. The schools were appealed to, and arrangements made for

the sale of thrift stamps in all the public and private schools in the territory. Early in February active work was started by the women's committee, of which Mrs. Harmon E. Hendrick was chairman. The object of this committee was chiefly to extend the war stamp campaign among the women and children. Mrs. Hendrick was a most effective leader and in August her work was recognized in her appointment as assistant director of war savings for the territory.

One of the most striking features of the war stamp enterprise was the interest taken by the school children. Many different methods were devised to stimulate their zeal. Their patriotism was appealed to, and the competitive idea was called into play. The nature and the value of thrift were carefully explained and illustrated. The response was immediate and widespread. Throughout the year nearly every issue of every newspaper had items telling of the progress of the thrift and war stamp campaign in the schools. At the end of March the following appeared in the Honolulu *Advertiser*:

“In our pleasant homes we sit,  
Thinking, soldiers dear, of you  
In the damp and chilly trenches far away  
And we sew and mend and knit  
And do all that we can do  
For to ease your pain and sorrow day by day.

“Stamps, stamps, stamps, the boys are selling  
Cheer up, patriots, when they come,  
Put your funds behind the Flag  
And help freedom come again  
To the free lands and our own beloved homes.”

“At Waiohinu, to the tune of ‘Tramp, Tramp, Tramp, the Boys Are Marching,’ the children of the public school are singing the above, in school and away from it, advertising Thrift Stamps far and wide. In Kona, Japanese children are working by lantern light in the coffee groves, gathering the berries in



## A Message to the children of Honolulu

On Saturday, May nineteenth, 1918, a great Army will march through the streets of Honolulu. It will be called The Army of Thrift, and you—big boys and little boys, big girls and little girls—from the president high school Senior to the tiniest kindergarten will be the Thrift Soldier. You may be just as proud of that title as if a nearest cousin gave upon your shoulder—or a little red cross upon your breast.

Because—if you march in that Parade, it means that you own at least one Thrift Stamp; and if you own a Thrift Stamp, it means that you want to help Win the War—that you belong to the big, invincible Army of Thrift, which is standing like a human wall behind that other Army, the Army of our fathers and brothers, and all the men we are so proud of "Over There".

It doesn't take much to buy a Thrift Stamp—save up the nickels and see! When you have bought one Thrift Stamp, it doesn't take long to fill up your card and get a War Savings Stamp—and with every Stamp you lay, you are helping the Flag to go forward. Don't forget that!

You are helping your country keep her history clear—and you are saying to those other children of France and Belgium—those poor, unhappy, tortured little children—"We are coming; don't give up! Your suffering shall not have been in vain".

Across two Oceans and one Continent your voices will reach them—never fear!

If you do not own even one small Thrift Stamp, get one before Saturday morning, so that when the drums begin to beat, and the flags are lifted up to fly, you can fall into line—one more Thrift Soldier for America, and march down the street behind them.

Don't—if you love your beautiful, big Star Spangled Banner, stand on the sidewalk and watch it go by.

Get into line! your country needs you!

*Fannie Hecap Lea*  
MRS. H. P. AGEE, Chairman, Publicity

### Note to Teachers and Parents

Please send this message to the children of Thrift in the school and let them read the story.

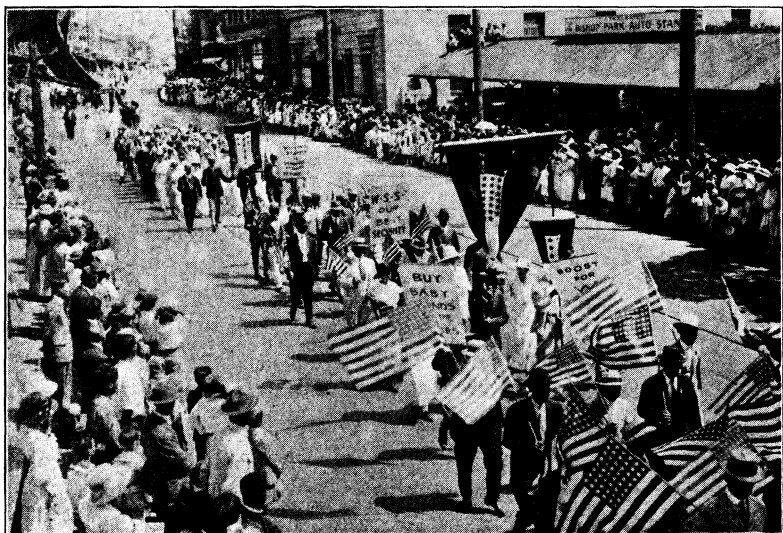
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA  
National War Savings Committee  
APPOINTED BY JOHN W. B. WARD  
Secretary of the Treasury

This advertisement donated by Pacific Commercial Advertiser

FULL PAGE ADVERTISEMENT USED IN THRIFT AND  
WAR SAVINGS STAMP CAMPAIGN



HONOLULU'S THRIFT ARMY IN CAPITOL GROUNDS FOLLOWING PARADE OF SATURDAY, MAY 18, 1918



PART OF BUSINESS HOUSES SECTION OF W. S. S. PARADE OF JULY 27, 1918

order to make extra money with which to purchase Thrift Stamps. In Kohala, children of all nationalities are gathering castor beans for sale, in order to earn money for Thrift Stamps. In Paia, Maui, a four and a half year old Japanese girl sold her pet rooster for a dollar, putting the money into four Thrift Stamps. In a number of places throughout the Territory, children are canvassing for subscriptions to the *Advertiser* and other papers in order to earn Thrift Stamps. The children of Hawaii are heart and soul in the work of doing their bit to help their government win the war, and with a great majority of the children, rich and poor, it has become a point of honor to earn the money themselves."

In March the \$500 club was organized, composed of persons who signed a pledge to buy \$50 worth of war savings stamps each month for ten months. By the first of April the club had a membership of 175. The total sales in the territory up to that time amounted to about a quarter of a million dollars. During April and the early part of May the Third Liberty Loan and Red Cross campaigns had the center of the stage, but as soon as they were over, an intensive drive for the sale of thrift and war savings stamps was gotten under way.

A war savings stamp "Dugout" was built at the corner of Fort and Hotel streets in Honolulu to serve as headquarters for the drive, which was to open on Saturday, May 18, with a parade. A series of striking full page advertisements was run in the newspapers. On Friday a war savings luncheon was held in the Blue Room of the Alexander Young hotel, with speeches by Director Shingle, Mrs. W. F. Frear and Captain A. J. Peguenot of the Canadian army, and mob singing led by George Andrus. A war savings stamp song, written by Mrs. A. Lewis, sung to the tune "Joan of Arc," which was used during the drive, was given its debut on this occasion:

"Buy a stamp, buy a stamp,  
It's a dandy investment for you.  
It's like putting germs in Germany  
That will wipe out all their perfidy.

Buy a stamp, buy a stamp,  
It will help our government too—  
And 'twill help those men in dear old France.  
'Carry on' till this war is through."

On Saturday Honolulu's army of thrift marched through the city from Aala Park to the Capitol. It was an army of children—thousands of them, of all ages, all races, from all sorts of homes, rich and poor, from public schools and private schools, each carrying a flag and each with the proud consciousness that he or she had bought at least one thrift stamp to help the boys "over there." Well up toward the front walked Daisy the elephant with placards on her sides: "No money left in my trunk—it's all put into War Savings Stamps." The Boy Scouts and Girl Scouts were there—one troop carrying the flags of the eleven Allies. Floats contrasted the peace and happiness of Hawaii with the misery of the war wrecked villages of France and Flanders. Scattered along the line of march, between the groups from different schools, were several bands—the Hawaiian Band leading, the 25th Infantry Band, the Salvation Army Girls' Band, and the singing band from St. Louis College. The marchers massed in front of the Capitol, where Delegate Kalaniana'ole read messages from National Director Frank A. Vanderlip and Secretary McAdoo; and Captain Peguenot and Secretary W. J. Sherman of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A. made short addresses.

On Monday forty teams of women began the canvass of the entire city to get people to sign the pledge to buy a definite amount of stamps each week. Business houses were urged to get all their employees signed up, so they would be "100 per cent thrifty." On Tuesday women made speeches in all the restaurants while a bevy of Thrift Stamp Girls with blue caps and bodices and red, white, and blue sashes went among the tables selling stamps. In the evening the drive was extended to the theaters; boys and girls from the higher school of the city sang the thrift song and sold stamps. Noon rallies were held daily at the Dugout. The campaign was not confined to the city of

Honolulu, but was extended to the plantations and country districts and to all the islands. Japanese workers made several tours with substantial results. By the middle of June the sales had gone up to about half a million, but this was still far too low, considering that Hawaii's quota for the year was \$2,000,000.

About this time two things happened which gave an incentive for re-doubled effort. On the recommendation of Assistant Secretary of the Interior E. C. Bradley, who was in the territory with Secretary Franklin K. Lane, Hawaii was made a separate district, instead of being attached to Northern California; and National Director F. A. Vanderlip, in a wireless message to Mr. Shingle, called on the territory to speed up the sale of war savings stamps.

The first important step in the new drive was the organization of the "Limit Club," composed of those who signed a pledge to buy \$1,000 worth of war savings stamps, the maximum amount allowed to one person. This was a joint Ad Club and Rotary Club enterprise managed by a committee made up of the following members: From the Ad Club, P. M. Pond, chairman, J. K. Butler, C. C. Graves; from the Rotary Club, Professor A. L. Andrews, F. J. Lindeman, A. W. Eames. Chairmen for the outer islands were: Hawaii, G. H. Vicars; Maui, R. A. Wadsworth; Kauai, Frank Crawford. The committee appointed 35 teams to canvass the industrial and commercial concerns, and sent out letters to those who were known to be able to qualify for membership. By the end of July the club had 350 members, and before the end of the year the membership had grown to more than 500.

July 27 was named War Savings Day by proclamation of Governor McCarthy; and plans were laid for a concentrated drive at the end of the month. A war savings stamp show window contest was inaugurated with a prize of \$25 in stamps to the firm making the best display. About 30 firms entered this contest, which was won by Wall & Dougherty. A series of night meetings in Bishop Park was arranged, one for the Japanese, one for the Chinese, one for the Hawaiians, and one general meeting. As a contribution to the campaign Ed Towse of the

Mercantile Printing Company published 10,000 copies of a pamphlet entitled "Cashing In, in 1923." The Ordnance Depot of the Hawaiian Department, Lieutenant Colonel Charles G. Mettler, commanding, built in Bishop Park a model of a battleship to serve as headquarters for the campaign. The "launching" of the U. S. W. S. S. *Hawaii* (Wednesday, July 24) was the signal for the opening of a four-day drive. The ship was christened by the governor's daughter, Miss Margaret McCarthy, with the words: "I christen thee *Hawaii*, pledged to the campaign for Thrift and War Savings Stamps for Uncle Sam." Following this ceremony, Lorrin Andrews delivered an eloquent address, and there was a short talk by Lieutenant Colonel Mettler and music by the Hawaiian Band. The conclusion of the program was punctuated by a "stunt" arranged by a group of Ad Clubbers. An effigy of the Kaiser was hung to a tree in the park and blown to pieces, having been filled with fire crackers.

This short drive was prolific of stunts. One of them was called "Nailing the Kaiser." A wooden effigy of the Kaiser was set up in front of the Lewers & Cooke building and anyone who bought a thrift stamp was privileged to drive in a nail. Purchase of a war savings stamp entitled the buyer to clip the Kaiser's moustache. The first nail was driven in by Mayor Fern; in the course of a week the Kaiser was nailed 2,872 times, once with a nail two feet long which cost the driver 25 thrift stamps. The amount realized was \$978. In the end the effigy was dragged through the streets to Bishop Park and burned (though with some difficulty, as might be imagined). A dormant city traffic ordinance which forbade crossing street intersections diagonally was suddenly revived and the policemen, with the aid of the Thrift Stamp Girls, caught a good many offenders, all of whom were let off with the purchase of a thrift stamp. On one morning all the main arteries of traffic into the city were patrolled by policemen and Thrift Stamp Girls and some 1,500 motorists were called upon to pay their "gas tax," consisting of the purchase of a thrift stamp for each gallon of gasoline in their tanks. This stunt was arranged by the Honolulu Automobile Club and netted several hundred dollars.



Own Shares in the Country that Protects You



이것이 바로 우리  
나라의 안전을  
보장하는  
수단이다.  
전쟁이  
발발하면  
우리의  
재산은  
완전히  
몰수될  
것이다.  
그러므로  
전쟁을  
예방하기  
위하여  
전쟁  
수익  
증권에  
투자  
하라.

I mau kea iloko o ka  
Aina nana e hoo-  
pakele ia oe.

Ekuai i na Poo  
Kaua o ke Au-  
puni o Ameri-  
ka Huipuia.

Hoi hou mai kau dala,  
me ka ukupanee mai  
ke Keena Puuku mai  
o Amerika Huipuia.

Tumulong kayo sa Bayang Nagtatangol sa inyo.  
Bumile ng Sellong Pagtitipid ng Gobierno ng Estados Unidos  
Ang Cuarta ninyo ay babalik, na may tubo, galing sa Tesorero.

War Savings Parade, July 27  
Hawaii Draft Army

諸氏を保護する國家の一部  
分を所有せよ  
戰時貯蓄印紙を買へ  
米國大藏省は之れに利子を  
附して返還す

Possue Accoes no  
paiz que vos protege.

Comprea  
stampilhas  
(War Saving Stamps)  
do Governo  
dos Estados  
Unidos

O vosso dinheiro re-  
mettido, com interesse  
do Thesouro dos Es-  
tados Unidos.

國家保護人民  
速購戰時節儉士担  
你之原款及利息將由美國國庫取還

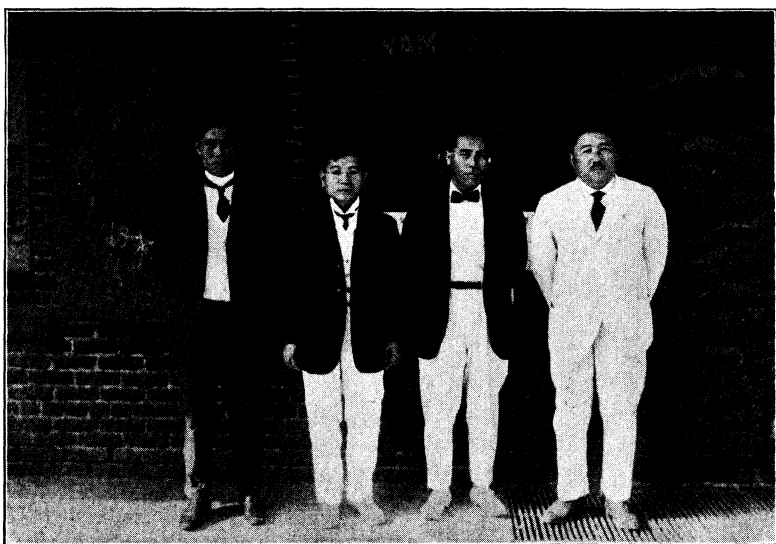
POSTER USED IN WAR SAVINGS STAMP CAMPAIGN

Languages used: English, Korean, Hawaiian, Chinese, Portuguese, Japanese, and Filipino



LEADERS OF WAR SAVINGS STAMP CAMPAIGN AT HEAD-  
QUARTERS IN U.S.W.S.S. "HAWAII" IN BISHOP PARK

Left to right: Mrs. H. E. Hendrick, P. F. Lee, Miss Nora Sturgeon,  
Dr. A. L. Andrews, Miss Silburn Purvis, P. M. Pond, Miss Letitia  
Morgan, C. C. Graves, Miss Ruth Anderson, F. J. Lindeman, and  
J. K. Butler.



JAPANESE WAR SAVINGS STAMP COMMITTEE

Left to right: R. Murata, K. Yamamoto, M. Matsuzawa, T. Onodera

In the meantime the campaign was being vigorously prosecuted along the usual lines in all parts of the territory. On Saturday, July 27, the special four-day drive was closed in Honolulu with another great parade in which there were two main sections. One of these was made up of a provisional regiment of soldiers containing Hawaii's drafted men and former National Guardsmen, who had just been called to service. The other main section contained the officers and employees of Honolulu's "thrifty" business houses, each group carrying a service flag. There were other sections—a group of Boy Scouts with the flags of the Allies marching ahead of automobiles in which rode the consuls of the nations at war with Germany; a little group of veterans of the Great War, some of whom had been incapacitated for active service by wounds or gas; the district and local draft boards; and Red Cross workers. By the end of July the total maturity value of thrift and war savings stamps sold in the territory since the first of January was approximately a million dollars; the sales during July amounted to nearly \$400,000.

With the opening of the schools in the fall, plans were put in motion for renewing the campaign among the school children. This work was in direct charge of Mrs. Hendrick, assistant territorial director, who was ably seconded by Superintendent H. W. Kinney and President A. F. Griffiths of Oahu College (Punahou). A thrift army was organized in the schools, with officers appointed on the basis of the amount of stamps sold: captain, \$25; major, \$50; colonel, \$100; general, \$500. It was not long before most of the schools had full complements of officers; in some schools officers were nearly as plentiful as privates. The plans also called for junior four-minute speakers; the speeches were written in the English courses and the best ones selected for delivery in the schools, Sunday Schools, theaters, and on other public programs in the several districts.

During the fall of 1918 the interest of the people was largely fixed upon the fourth Liberty Loan campaign; the sale of war savings stamps could not be kept up to the pace set in July, but steady progress was made. At the end of November, however,

the territory lacked over \$500,000 of its quota for the year. The armistice had been signed, but the obligations incurred in winning the victory had to be met, the boys had to be brought back from France, and a large army had to be maintained until the peace treaty was concluded; the Secretary of the Treasury urgently requested that the full quota be made up. The territory had just subscribed a huge sum for the fourth Liberty Loan, but the leaders looked this war stamp deficit in the face and resolved that Hawaii should go over the top in this campaign also and have a perfect record. An executive committee was appointed with Dan Mooney as chairman, and an advisory committee on ways and means, consisting of a half dozen of Hawaii's solid men. Members of the Limit Club were urged to take out memberships for their wives and children. The women, Boy Scouts, and school children redoubled their efforts, and for thirty days the attention of the whole population was centered on this one object. The result was victory; on the last day of the year the territory went over the top. And it was a victory which gave Hawaii a distinction enjoyed by only one of the mainland states, as pointed out in the following letter from the Secretary of the Treasury:

"Treasury Department, Washington, July 15, 1919.

"Dear Mr. Shingle:

"At the request of Mr. D. H. MacAdam, who took up the matter in person with the war savings division of this department, the sale of war savings stamps in Hawaii for 1918 has been segregated in our official records from those in Northern California.

"I have great pleasure in advising you that the record now shows sale of W. S. S. for 1918 in Hawaii of \$1,720,809.96 cash. The maturity value amounts to approximately \$2,054,000. By more than \$50,000, therefore, Hawaii exceeded its quota for 1918 of \$2,000,000 maturity value fixed by the Federal Reserve Bank of San Francisco. Of the states of the union, only Nebraska exceeded its quota in 1918.

"You and Postmaster MacAdam, who I understand co-

operated with you throughout your territorial campaign, are to be heartily congratulated upon this remarkable showing. The Territory of Hawaii has every reason to be proud of the fact that besides heavily oversubscribing its share of all Liberty bond issues, it divides with Nebraska the distinction of having gone over the top in its purchase of War Savings Stamps.

“Very truly yours,

“Carter Glass.

“Hon. Robert W. Shingle,  
Director, War Savings for Hawaii, 1918.  
Henry Waterhouse Trust Company,  
Honolulu, T. H.”

The sale of Thrift and War Savings Stamps did not cease at the end of 1918. A new series was issued for 1919 and the people were asked to keep on buying. In January Mr. Shingle resigned as director for the territory of Hawaii and A. H. Tarleton was appointed to succeed him. Under his leadership an excellent organization was built up on a peace time basis, which kept Hawaii well in the lead among the states in the Twelfth Federal Reserve District. Early in September, 1919, the local organization was demobilized under instructions from Washington, due to the necessity for retrenchment in the Treasury Department. The sale of stamps was not stopped, however.

## CHAPTER XV

### FOOD PRODUCTION AND CONSERVATION

#### I. The Territorial Food Commission

##### THE CALL TO SERVICE

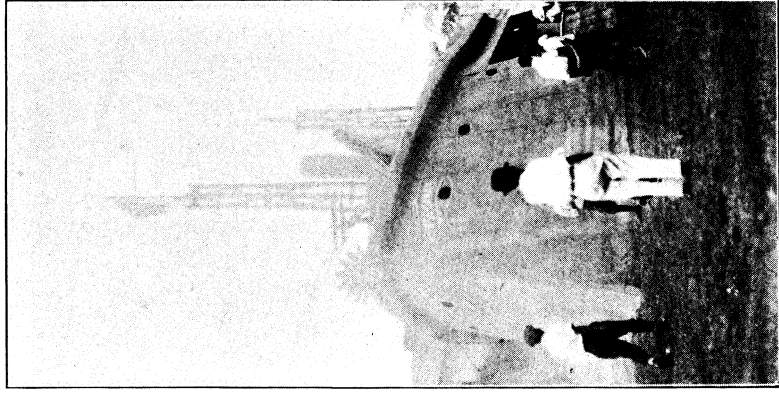
“**F**OOD WILL WIN THE WAR!” This much-used slogan indicated the way in which the civilian population could most effectively make its weight felt in the great battle for democracy. It was the campaign for food saving and food production and the fight against the rising cost of food that brought the war closest home to the great mass of the people of Hawaii. What this mid-ocean territory was expected to do in the time of crisis was pointed out in the following cablegram sent by Secretary of the Interior Franklin K. Lane to Governor Lucius E. Pinkham under date April 25, 1917:

“Please urge upon your people fullest possible use of all land this year. Make yourselves as nearly self-supporting as possible in foodstuffs and increase your surplus available for continental consumption.”

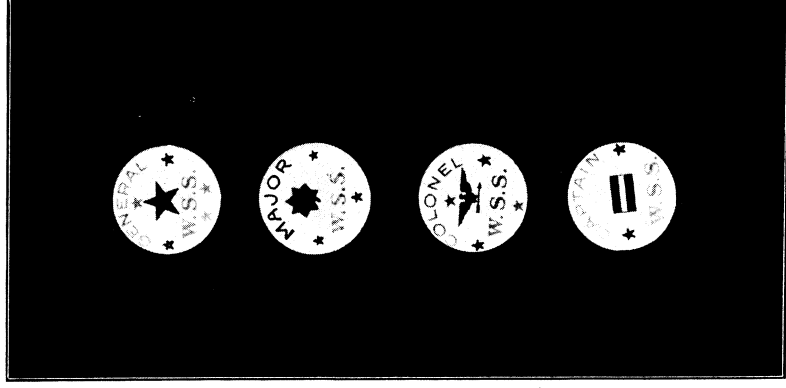
The United States declared war April 6, 1917. During the preceding twelve months (ending March 31), Hawaii imported more than \$10,000,000 worth of foodstuffs, the bulk of it consisting of staple articles such as flour, rice, meat, butter, eggs, vegetables. This figure shows the size of the job that Secretary Lane asked the territory to undertake in making its people self-supporting in foodstuffs. On the other hand, Hawaii exported foodstuffs to the value of more than \$74,000,000, but nearly the whole of this was in the two articles, sugar and pineapples, sugar alone amounting to about \$63,000,000. Sugar is an article of prime importance in time of war and it was in the production of sugar that Hawaii could make its greatest contribution to the world's dinner table. The federal government, therefore, called on the people of Hawaii to feed themselves and to send an increased supply of sugar to the



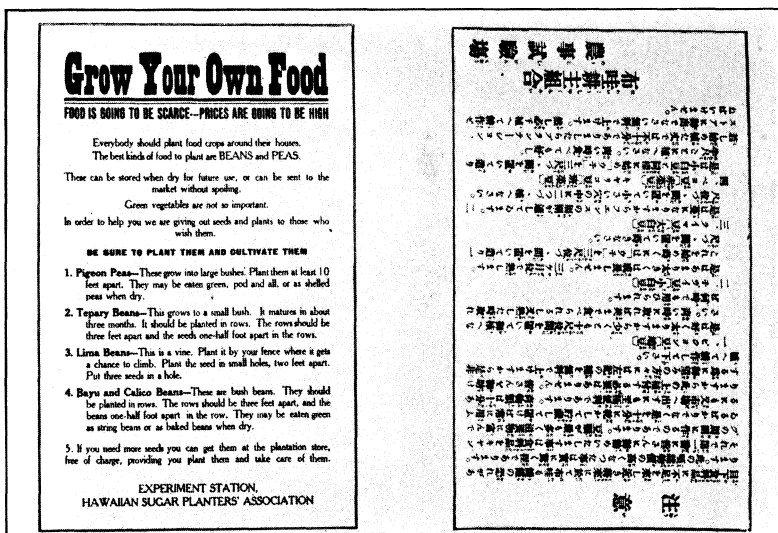
MAYOR J. J. FERN "NAILS THE  
KAISER"



U. S. W. S. S. "HAWAII"



INSIGNIA FOR OFFICERS OF  
SCHOOL, THRIFT ARMY



POSTER USED BY H. S. P. A. IN FOOD CAMPAIGN



EXHIBIT OF BANANA DISHES AT Y. W. C. A.

Left to right: Mrs. Dowling, Mrs. Alexander, Mrs. Westervelt, Mrs. Thompson, Mrs. Howland, Mrs. Russell, Mrs. Westgate, Mrs. Gartenberg, Mrs. Dean



mainland. This meant (1) increasing to the utmost the production of livestock and staple food crops adapted to Hawaii's soil and climate; (2) using home-grown instead of imported foods; (3) reducing consumption to the minimum and eliminating waste.

That Hawaii might some day be compelled to feed herself—the desirability of doing so in any case—had long been recognized and serious thought had been given to the solution of the problem. The war gave added emphasis to the question. Two ways were considered for meeting the situation.

(1) To provide for the contingency of an extended blockade, Governor Pinkham in 1916 investigated the possibility of storing up in warehouses a surplus stock of staple foods sufficient to maintain the population of the islands for a period of six months. This was considered feasible but the cost was extremely high, and no active steps were taken to carry out the plan. At the beginning of February, 1917, when it seemed inevitable that the United States would be drawn into the war, Governor Pinkham called a food supply conference. The meeting was held in the governor's office and was attended by the commanding officers and other representatives of the army and navy in Hawaii and by representatives of the wholesale houses of Honolulu. This conference brought out the fact that the army and navy had surplus supplies sufficient to carry them through a six months' blockade; but the civilian population was in a most precarious situation. Stocks on hand would be barely enough to last for three or four months, even with the most rigid rationing system in force. The army and navy officers pressed upon the wholesale dealers the urgent need of carrying greater stocks of staple foods. The importance of a food survey was brought out and the merchants offered to furnish the army data necessary for such a survey. It was agreed that the survey could best be undertaken by the army men and it was not considered advisable to make public generally the results of the survey.

(2) A more fundamental solution of the problem lay in

the diversification of Hawaii's agriculture and the actual production of enough staple food to make the islands independent of the mainland and foreign countries. Efforts in this direction extended over a long period of time. As one of the Honolulu newspapers declared, "One of the urgent needs of Hawaii is to get the people to produce more and import less things to eat. For years this axiom has been preached by the newspapers and efforts to put it in practice have been made by the legislature and the executive, through the medium of home-steads and the territorial market and the experiment stations. Some headway has been made, but the degree of accomplishment has been discouraging."

The trend of Hawaii's agricultural history had centered attention upon the intensive cultivation of sugar cane and pineapples and this made it difficult to focus interest on other products or to obtain adequate support for their development. The president of the Territorial Board of Agriculture and Forestry and the president of the College of Hawaii in a joint letter to Governor Pinkham in 1915 pointed out the fundamental difficulties which agricultural development in Hawaii has to contend with. "(1) From an agricultural point of view Hawaii is not a tropical country, and the strictly tropical crops do not find optimum climatic conditions. (2) Hawaii has not a temperate climate and the staple products of the temperate zone cannot be relied on. (3) Our distance from mainland markets imposes a serious handicap, and both inter-island and inter-community transportation is difficult and expensive because Hawaii is a group of comparatively small, mountainous islands with very few harbors. (4) Insect pests, accidentally introduced, thrive because of our balmy climate and the absence of their natural enemies (parasites, birds, frosts, etc.) . . . . (5) Practically all tropical industries demand a plentiful supply of cheap labor. Labor in Hawaii is neither cheap nor plentiful."

In spite of the difficulties there were some encouraging features in the situation. Here and there it was demonstrated that

a homesteader who was made of the right stuff could win through to success. In January, 1917, the Honolulu *Star-Bulletin* began an interesting experiment in the form of a school and home garden contest in cooperation with the school department, offering a series of prizes for the best gardens on each of the islands. At the close of the contest, three months later, the *Star-Bulletin* said, with pardonable enthusiasm, "This garden contest has been a remarkable eye-opener, not only to the teachers and pupils, but even to the agricultural experts here, an eye-opener in proving how quickly boys and girls can be trained to raise edible and marketable produce. As a result of this contest, not less than 5,000 boys and girls in Hawaii are becoming producers—are becoming practical gardeners. Twice that number are interested in the gardening." The Honolulu *Advertiser* generously acknowledged the good results of this contest, stating that "the management of the *Star-Bulletin* has, apparently, hit upon a scheme which has accomplished much and promises more. . . . The best part of the project is that it demonstrates to those who need the knowledge, that vegetables can be produced in all parts of the Territory, if proper care and attention is given them. . . . The *Advertiser* congratulates the *Star-Bulletin* upon the success of its public spirited efforts which are doubly beneficial at this crisis when food production may become one of the vital issues of the day."

This much had been accomplished when, on April 6, the United States declared war on Germany. Governor Pinkham immediately issued a proclamation in which, after reciting the fact of the declaration of war, the food shortage threatening the whole world, the short harvest in the United States, and Hawaii's failure to produce her own food supplies, he concluded: "Now, therefore, I, Lucius E. Pinkham, Governor of Hawaii, in so far as the authority in me lies, do warn, urge, and direct the owners, officers, and managers of agricultural organizations of whatever nature, the owners of ranches, and the people having control of land for agriculture that their enterprise and immediate assistance is necessary in the production of the food supplies requisite

to render the entire population of these far isolated islands and our defenders independent of outside assistance for reasonable subsistence."

This appeal of the governor, coming at the same time as an announcement of a probable heavy shortage in the mainland wheat crop, awakened the whole territory to the seriousness of the situation. The newspapers, those printed in foreign languages as well as those in the English language, urged economy in the consumption of food and industry in production. A typical editorial put the matter in this way: "So there are two ways for Hawaii to help right now in a national emergency, one phase of which is the growing cost of living. The first is by elimination of waste, by strict economy, by careful household planning to make food go far. The second is by agriculture. And this requires concerted action through the territory. It is a big enough subject to need the immediate attention of the Planters' Association. A dozen agencies may work together—the United States Agricultural Experiment Station, the Planters' experiment station, the board of agriculture and forestry, the schools—public and private—the Chamber of Commerce and all the commercial and civic organizations." Ministers of the gospel presented the subject to their congregations. Rev. D. C. Peters of the Christian Church preached a strong sermon on the subject, "Potato Patch Patriotism," in which he pointed out the necessity for food economy and production. The Pan-Pacific Club promoted a luncheon meeting at the Lanai Theatre, Laniakea, on May 8, at which representatives of the various races pledged their best efforts to the movement to make Hawaii self-supporting. The Buddhist Bishop Imamura made an appeal to the Japanese, pointing out how much they could do in the present emergency and urging them to prevent waste and to raise food.

#### SCHOOL AND HOME GARDENS

A wave of enthusiasm for school and home gardens swept over the islands. The *Star-Bulletin* placed at the disposal of the territorial government the organization built up in its school gar-

den contest, which had just closed. The *Star-Bulletin* also promoted a special potato growing contest among the schools of Oahu and a Kentucky Wonder Bean growing contest for school children on the outside islands. The Superintendent of Schools sent a circular letter to all supervising principals, asking them by all means to keep up every school garden and to keep the school children interested in agriculture. The school department bought up large quantities of seeds for the use of the school gardens. The summer session of the Normal School offered a practical course in agriculture for teachers who wished to prepare for the work of supervising school gardens. The enrollment in this course was about one hundred and fifty. J. M. Westgate, director of the United States Experiment Station stimulated interest by giving talks at the Y. M. C. A., to the Boy Scouts, and elsewhere, by preparing a planting chart for the information of those who wished to grow food crops, and by encouraging the laborers at the Station to make gardens on small plots of spare land. Mr. Westgate and his staff gave a series of practical demonstrations and instruction in gardening to a picked class of about thirty Boy Scouts, who in turn became instructors for their troops. The Y. M. C. A. encouraged the members of its boys department to join the garden movement, supplying them with free seeds and with expert advice given by Professor L. A. Henke of the College of Hawaii. The commissioner of public lands promoted the garden movement by allowing the use of vacant public lands by those who wished to raise food crops. The prisoners in the county jail were put to work raising gardens for their own use. Kitchen gardens were planted in large numbers, so large in fact that a seed shortage soon developed.

During the fall of 1917 and throughout 1918 the school and home garden movement was carried on with unabated interest. On each island school contests were conducted by local interests. On the island of Maui the Maui Fair and Racing Association carried on a contest for children during the fall of 1917, the first prizes (five in number) being a trip to Honolulu. On the island of Hawaii the Hilo Board of Trade assumed the leader-

ship. The *Star-Bulletin* contest in the spring of 1918 was on a scale even larger than the 1917 contest. The school department gave encouragement to the movement. An official of the department estimated that there were 10,000 school gardens in Hawaii during the school year 1917-1918. The garden movement was by no means confined to the children. Contests for adults were launched with excellent results.

Nor was the movement confined to the civilian population. Toward the end of April General F. S. Strong, commander of the Hawaiian Department, received an order from the secretary of war directing "that you have every available piece of ground on the military reservations under your command cultivated and that the army make special efforts to do its share in increasing and conserving the food supply." In response to this order more than a thousand acres of land at Schofield Barracks and a small area at Fort Shafter were placed under cultivation. Blocks of land were assigned to the various organizations and soldiers were detailed in charge of competent gardeners to carry on the work. The German prisoners from the gunboat *Geier* were also employed in this work. After consultation with local experts it was decided to make the principal crop of sweet potatoes, but part of the land was planted with beans, carrots, and other garden truck. During the month of May, five companies at Schofield raised nearly five tons of vegetables; and in the aggregate the army gardens produced an immense quantity of food.

#### THE H. S. P. A. AND THE FOOD CAMPAIGN

At the time Governor Pinkham issued his food proclamation, he sent a copy of it to the president of the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association with a letter in which he said, "Your managers can do more to straighten this food problem than professional men. Should the plantations undertake this matter, it seems to me it will work out to their and the territory's advantage in peace and war." The president of the association took the matter up with the board of trustees who directed the experiment station committee to prepare a comprehensive report on the

subject. The report of the committee, written after a careful investigation and after consultation with local agricultural experts, was presented and adopted by the trustees on April 25. It proposed (1) that each plantation set aside for experimental trials with miscellaneous food crops an area equal to one acre for each thousand tons of sugar produced in 1916, this work to be done in cooperation with the experiment station; (2) that attention be given to the question of marketing surplus food products, utilizing if possible the Territorial Marketing Division; (3) that the work be carried on in such a way as to interfere as little as possible with the sugar output; (4) that cane by-products, such as canetops and molasses, be fully employed as stockfeed in order to increase the production of beef and milk; (5) that all idle rice and taro land be planted with the least possible delay; (6) that gardens be planted around plantation labor camps, along ditch banks and roadways, on fallow land, and between cane rows; (7) that the more important food crops to be raised should be pigeon peas, sweet potatoes, bananas, peanuts, corn, Irish potatoes, green vegetables; (8) that sea fishing be encouraged, and pigs, sheep, and goats raised where practicable.

Copies of this report were sent to all plantation managers. Many of the latter had already begun work along these lines before the report was presented. The plantation agencies in Honolulu added the weight of their influence. In June, 1917, the Experiment Station issued a special "Food Number" of the *Hawaiian Planters' Record*, filled with articles of practical value. Stress was laid on the importance of raising staple food crops which are best adapted to local conditions, such as sweet potatoes, pigeon peas and cow peas, beans, and peanuts. The Experiment Station bought seed in quantity and sent it out to the plantations for distribution to the laborers. "This seed was put up in small packages labelled with the name accompanied by planting directions in three languages. Posters were also distributed describing in a few words the food situation, urging the laborers to plant their gardens to some staple crops, and announcing that seed would be distributed free of charge on condition that they be planted and cared for."

In the spring of 1918, John Watt, as a special agent of the food administration, made an investigation of food production and conservation on the sugar plantations. His reports written in March and April contain the following statements:

"All plantation managers are alive to the serious food situation, which we are facing on the Islands, and are working in harmony with the Food Administration, both Federal and Territorial. . . . At most of the plantations I found that they are producing sufficient vegetables and such like crops to supply all their needs. In some parts corn is being planted in large areas, and will do much to reduce the importation of white flour as well as to largely replace much of the imported stock feed. . . . In general the plantations have not gone into the business of growing diversified crops, but have given land to the laborers to cultivate. The small land holders are being encouraged in every way possible to grow food crops, which would make the different communities in the country districts fairly independent. . . .

"In regard to what each individual plantation company is doing, it is very noticeable that outside of growing ordinary vegetable crops, little has been done. There are two or three exceptions, but if our mainland supplies were cut off, we would find ourselves in a serious plight. The Islands can be made independent as far as food is concerned. We have the land, we know the crops that can be grown here. We have the rainfall or irrigation water and we have the brains. Get all working in unison, and the results will be evident. The energies of the plantation men are naturally very much absorbed in growing sugar, but we are face to face with a situation which is new to the world at large, and we have all to 'dig or shoot'."

#### TERRITORIAL FOOD COMMISSION

During the month of April, 1917, when the people were first beginning to be deeply stirred by the necessity of food conservation and production, it became clear to many persons that some systematic organization was needed to take the leadership in order that the willing efforts of the people might be wisely



directed. A special meeting of the Chamber of Commerce of Honolulu held on April 9 adopted a resolution urging the legislature then in session to provide for the establishment of demonstration farms on the several islands and for expert demonstrators to travel about and give advice and instruction to those who wished to raise food crops, and to make adequate provision for the Territorial Marketing Division. A few days later the *Star-Bulletin* was dinner host to the Oahu judges in its school garden contest and to representatives of the army, the United States Experiment Station, department of public instruction, Sugar Planters' Association, and Chamber of Commerce. In the discussion that ensued it was the consensus of opinion that a central organization and traveling agricultural experts were urgently needed. The same ideas were expressed in newspaper editorials.

In response to this general feeling, the Chamber of Commerce committee on agriculture called a food conference to be held on April 26 so that leaders in industry and agriculture might discuss the whole situation with civil and military officials and representatives of civic organizations. The meeting was largely attended and was presided over by James D. Dole, chairman of the committee on agriculture. The importance of the subject under discussion was emphasized by Governor Pinkham, who read the cablegram which he had received from Secretary of the Interior Lane the night before wherein Mr. Lane urged the people of Hawaii to make themselves as nearly self-supporting as possible in foodstuffs and to increase their surplus available for continental consumption. The situation was thoroughly gone over and concrete action taken by the formation of a central or executive committee to take charge of a general plan of coordination for the production, distribution, and conservation of food, the committee to cooperate with public and private agencies directed by experts. The committee was made up of the following members: James D. Dole, chairman of the Chamber of Commerce committee on agriculture; J. M. Westgate, director of the United States Agricultural Experiment Station; H. P. Agee, director of the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Experi-

ment Station; C. S. Judd, executive officer of the territorial Board of Commissioners of Agriculture and Forestry; and Major C. S. Lincoln of the U. S. army. Before it had had time to get into action this committee was superseded by an official body, the Territorial Food Commission.

The receipt of Secretary Lane's cablegram of April 25, in conjunction with the general discussion of the food situation in Hawaii, led directly to the enactment of a law, approved May 2, 1917, "creating a commission to increase, conserve, regulate and control the food supplies of the territory of Hawaii" and appropriating \$25,000 for its use in carrying out the purpose of the act. The commission thus created was allowed full discretion with regard to the manner in which it should organize and carry out its duties. The general powers of the commission were enumerated in section 5 of the act, as follows: "To assist financially or otherwise producers of food; to cultivate or otherwise utilize any land, whether public or private, placed under its control or made available for its use; to require land formerly used for the cultivation of rice or taro and being used for other purposes to be again utilized for rice or taro, if in the opinion of the commission such action is necessary to produce and maintain a sufficient supply of such foods for local needs; to further and increase the production of food by all appropriate means; . . . to arrange for, promote and assist in the distribution and sale of food within the Territory; to control the distribution of food throughout the Territory and to insure as nearly as may be an equitable distribution and an economic use thereof; to control and enforce the conservation of food and to prevent waste thereof with full power to declare and define what shall constitute waste . . . ; to prevent the slaughtering of live stock when in the opinion of the commission the public interest so requires; to provide maintenance for live stock when an owner is unable to make sufficient provision therefor; to control and direct the use to which food may be put within the Territory and to forbid the use of rice, grain or other food for the manufacture of intoxicating liquor." Section 8 provided that "Whenever in the opinion of the commission the circumstances justify

and the public interest requires such action, it shall investigate, and, in so far as it is not prevented by the constitution or laws of the United States, may by regulation fix or control the price or prices at which any food or foods shall be sold within the Territory so that the same shall be reasonable, and to prevent unreasonable discrimination between localities or between users or consumers under substantially similar conditions."

The Commission was to consist of not to exceed nine members. Governor Pinkham, in the first instance, appointed only six, so that he might, as he himself stated, "have an opportunity to control the Commission by subsequent appointments." The members first appointed were: James D. Dole, chairman, Charles G. Bockus, Frank E. Blake, Richard Ivers, Arthur K. Ozawa, and John Waterhouse. The Commander of the Hawaiian Department was invited to have a representative at all meetings, and General Strong appointed Major C. S. Lincoln for that purpose. Upon Major Lincoln's transfer to the mainland, Colonel R. M. Schofield took his place. He in turn was succeeded by Colonel G. S. Bingham. There were several changes in the personnel of the Commission due to deaths, resignations, and new appointments. These changes are indicated in the following complete list of members:

James D. Dole, appointed May 4, 1917,  
John Waterhouse, appointed May 4, 1917,  
Frank E. Blake, appointed May 4, 1917,  
Richard Ivers, appointed May 4, 1917; died March 13, 1918,  
Charles G. Bockus, appointed May 4, 1917,  
Arthur K. Ozawa, appointed May 4, 1917; died June 22, 1917,  
Arthur W. Neeley, appointed June 27, 1917; resigned May 29, 1918,  
Wm. H. Hoogs, Sr., appointed March 21, 1918; died November 12, 1918,  
Rev. Akaiko Akana, appointed July 12, 1918,  
James W. Russell, appointed July 18, 1918; resigned August 22, 1918,

Charles A. Rice, appointed July 18, 1918; resigned October 10, 1918,

Dr. W. D. Baldwin, appointed July 18, 1918; resigned November 10, 1918,

Major I. M. Stainback, appointed November 14, 1918.

The Food Commission proceeded immediately to perfect its organization by appointing Dr. Arthur L. Dean, president of the College of Hawaii, as Executive Officer and A. L. Castle and C. R. Hemenway as consulting attorneys. Representatives were also appointed on the outside islands to cooperate in carrying out the policies adopted. To carry on the details and to make investigations sub-committees were appointed on transportation, marketing, fish, live stock, agriculture, and publicity; and from time to time other sub-committees were named as circumstances seemed to warrant. These sub-committees were made up in part of members of the Commission and in part of other citizens qualified and interested. The work of making a survey of available food supplies was taken in hand. Steps were taken to secure the cooperation of all the newspapers in the territory, and a statement was issued appealing to the people to back up the work of the commission. It was pointed out that the objects of the Commission—which should also be the purpose of all loyal citizens—were essentially two: (1) to increase local production of foodstuffs and see that it was done along sensible lines; and (2) to conserve the available food supply by strict economy, prevention of waste, and use of island-grown products.

#### COUNTY AGENTS

The principal means adopted by the Commission for increasing the production of foodstuff was the establishment of the County Agent system. This was done in cooperation with the Territorial Marketing Division of the Board of Agriculture and Forestry, which paid part of the salary of the agents, and the extension division of the United States Agricultural Experiment Station. After the federal food administration was established, the County Agents received federal appointments also. Five

agents were named: John M. Watt for Oahu, F. G. Krauss for Maui, W. W. G. Moir for East Hawaii, John Midkiff for West Hawaii, and A. H. Case for Kauai. The County Agents were trained agriculturists and their services and advice were available without cost to every grower, no matter what the crop nor how small his farm or garden.

Each agent was equipped with a Ford car, a spraying outfit, seeds, planting charts, and circulars, and they traveled about continuously over their districts, giving instruction and advice to homesteaders, plantation laborers, and others about how to raise food crops and how to market any surplus they might have. They also laid out experimental plots in various parts of the territory, where they demonstrated correct methods of cultivation, the right kinds of crops to raise, and how to overcome pests and blights. They found much willingness everywhere, but also some indifference and much ignorance. A correspondent writing in June, 1918, about the work of the County Agents remarked, "The county agent rarely has much trouble convincing people that they should do something when their crops are dying. But he does have trouble in getting them to do the right thing. Most of our Orientals believe that their crops need 'medicine,' but they do not know what medicine. For instance, if they have seen that Bordeaux Mixture has done their potatoes much good, by preventing and killing blight, they insist upon using Bordeaux Mixture for all plant diseases. They might just as well use corn plasters for headache as to use Bordeaux Mixture for plant aphids."

A report of the work of the County Agents from October 5, 1917, to April 13, 1918, gives the following statistics: Miles ridden, 23,865; miles walked, 1,002; seeds sold, 2,319 packets; seeds given away, 2,485 packets; pamphlets distributed, 7,971; calls made, 5,650; number of persons instructed regarding planting, Japanese, 1,042; Chinese, 285; Hawaiians, 451; Caucasians, 1,483; demonstrations, 236; number instructed regarding spraying, Japanese, 587; Chinese, 169; Hawaiians, 251; Caucasians, 639; demonstrations, 181; number instructed regarding harvesting, Japanese, 406; Chinese, 161; Hawaiians, 199; Caucasians,

543; demonstrations, 80; number instructed regarding marketing, Japanese, 941; Chinese, 485; Hawaiians, 346; Caucasians, 778; demonstrations, 131.

The work of the County Agents was of immense value. In the report of the Food Commission presented to the legislature in May, 1918, the opinion is expressed that the establishment of this system had "done more in one year to make this territory self-supporting than all the efforts and agitation of the preceding twenty-five years." The same report says:

"By their advice in regard to planting, cultivating, spraying, harvesting and marketing, thousands of dollars have been saved to the growers of the Territory. In the knowledge, now general, of how to save the white potato crops by spraying, the County Agents have more than justified their existence. We cannot in this statement attempt to detail the excellent work done by these men, but . . . we would as an example refer to the lower Pauoa Valley, almost entirely waste a year ago, but brought into the cultivation of taro, largely through the efforts of the Oahu County Agent who brought the owner of the land and the growers together. We would refer to the weekly community free market inaugurated by the West Hawaii Agent, and while for obvious reasons, it is impossible to determine the exact increase in the production of foods for home consumption, many of which are used by the very people who grow them, it is safe to say that such production is several times larger than a year ago, in most foods except rice, and due in part to the efforts of the County Agents, but also largely to the stimulus of high prices (and on Kauai, in part to the wise guarantee of price made by the Kauai Chamber of Commerce) much abandoned rice land is now being cropped. The increase in the production of dry land taro, beans of various kinds, white and sweet potatoes and various other vegetable crops is most marked. . . . The home gardens planted in connection with the County Agents and Food Commission work and general activities have been about 2,000 on Maui, 1,500 on Kauai, 1,000 on East Hawaii, 600 on West Hawaii, and 500 on Oahu."

In line with and supplementing the work of the County Agents, the Food Commission prepared a series of brief circulars dealing with the cultivation and harvesting of the more important food crops and printed these in several languages for general distribution. In July, 1917, the Commission imported two tons of beans of several varieties especially for seed and sold them at cost through the County Agents to intending growers. The growing of beans, a dependable staple crop, was greatly increased during the war years; in the fall season of 1917 Maui alone harvested nearly a million pounds. The Commission also bought a hundred bags of choice seed potatoes, selling them at cost to the farmers in the districts of Kula and Makawao, Maui, where formerly potatoes were grown in large quantities; but owing to a blight the experiment was not a success. Through newspaper publicity, public meetings, and otherwise great interest was stimulated in the production of foods and feedstuffs on the large ranches. In 1918 the area planted to corn amounted to nearly 9,000 acres.

#### WOMEN'S COMMITTEE

Enlisting the services of the women of Hawaii was the principal means adopted by the Territorial Food Commission for carrying out the part of its program which called for the conservation of food. In the early part of May, 1917, C. G. Bockus, as a sub-committee of one, obtained the names of one member of each woman's organization to assist in working out a plan of cooperation. A little later a large number of representative women met with the Food Commission and passed resolutions urging the formation of a League for Women's Service and calling for a mass meeting of women of all races in Honolulu to further the plan. The mass meeting was held at the Bijou Theater the afternoon of May 31, being attended by about four hundred women. Addresses were made by J. D. Dole, chairman, and Dr. A. L. Dean, executive officer of the Food Commission, Governor Pinkham, Major C. S. Lincoln, and Mrs. A. C. Alexander. Amid much enthusiasm it was decided that each organiza-

tion should submit the names of four or five women, from whom the Food Commission should select a small committee to have general charge of the women's work.

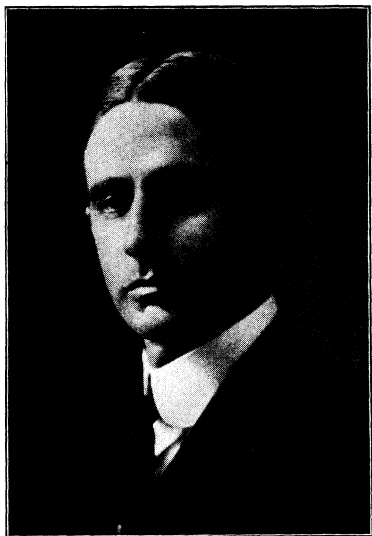
Nothing more was done for a while, but on July 13 Chairman Dole appointed what was officially called the Women's Committee of the Territorial Food Commission. The members were Mrs. A. C. Alexander, chairman, Mrs. A. L. Andrews, secretary (for six months in 1918 Mrs. Andrews also served as acting chairman, during the absence of Mrs. Alexander on the mainland), Mrs. F. W. Macfarlane, Mrs. Alonzo Gartley, and Mrs. C. M. Cooke, Jr. The committee went to work without further delay, adopting as the basis of its program Mr. Hoover's principles of conservation:

"Save the Wheat—Save the Meat—Save the Milk—Save the Fats—Save the Sugar—Use the Perishable Foods—Use Local Supplies—Buy Less; Serve Smaller Portions—Preach the 'Gospel of the Clean Plate'—Don't Eat a Fourth Meal—Don't Limit the Plain Food of Growing Children—Watch Out for the Wastes in the Community."

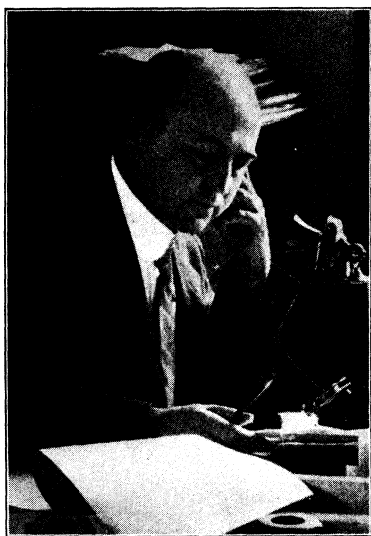
To enlist the aid of others and to widen the circle of personal influence, an auxiliary committee was appointed consisting of leading women in different parts of Honolulu and the country districts. Committees were also formed on the outside islands with the following chairmen: Maui, Mrs. A. C. Bowdish; Kauai, Miss Elsie Wilcox; Hawaii, Mrs. B. D. Bond, Molokai, Mrs. G. P. Cooke (succeeded by Mrs. Lucille M. Dunbar).

In a community such as the Hawaiian Islands, with a heterogeneous population more than half of whom are Oriental, the task set for this committee was no easy one. But the difficulty of the task seemed to be only a challenge to these women, who went at the job with enthusiasm and thoroughness. Until the appointment of a federal food administrator for Hawaii, near the end of 1917, they bore the brunt of the conservation battle, and from that time on they kept up the work they had begun, serving as a most important aid to the federal administrator. The report of the Territorial Food Commission to the legislature in May, 1918, says in reference to the Women's Committee:





JAMES D. DOLE  
Chairman Territorial Food  
Commission



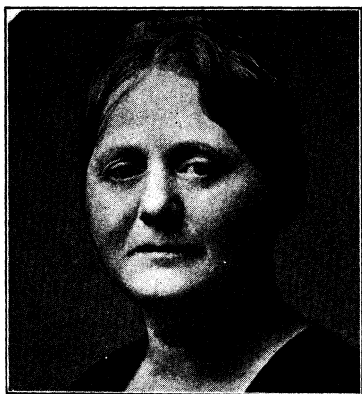
J. F. CHILD  
U. S. Food Administrator for  
Hawaii



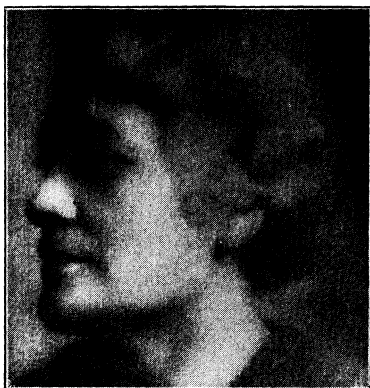
DR. A. L. DEAN  
First Executive Officer of Terri-  
torial Food Commission



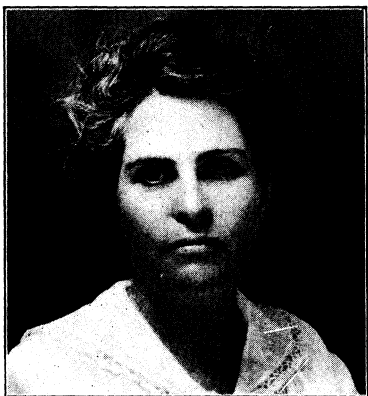
MRS. A. C. ALEXANDER  
Chairman Women's Committee of  
Territorial Food Commission



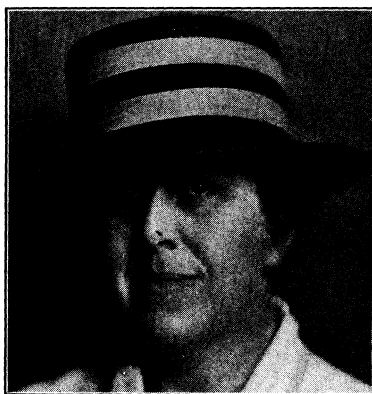
Mrs. A. L. Andrews



Mrs. F. W. Macfarlane



Mrs. Alonzo Gartley



Mrs. C. M. Cooke, Jr.

MEMBERS OF WOMEN'S COMMITTEE OF TERRITORIAL  
FOOD COMMISSION



WINDOW CARD FOR MEMBER OF UNITED STATES  
FOOD ADMINISTRATION

"We cannot too highly praise the hard, conscientious, and patriotic work of these women and those associated with them. They have actually changed the habits of thousands of our people, instilled economy in the use of food and the need for saving. They have taught us that to waste food, especially food that can be shipped to our Allies, or that can take the place of other food that can be shipped, is not only criminal, but is disloyal."

The work of the committee was largely educational. To aid in preaching the gospel of conservation, they enlisted the co-operation of the press, the schools, the churches. Members of the committee wrote editorials and articles for the newspapers, prepared recipes which were printed in the papers and in booklets for distribution, made talks before clubs, schools, and in theaters, wrote letters which were sent broadcast over the territory. The following extracts from the minutes of the meetings of the committee give some idea of the means used to put across the message of saving.

*Meeting of September 23, 1917.* "... Mrs. Alexander reported arrangements with Dr. Williams for a Food Conservation service at Central Union; that the service had been held and well reported in the morning paper. Mrs. Alexander had called at the Japanese Consulate and talked with the Secretary. She believes another visit to the Consul should be made requesting him to speak to his people with the voice of authority on the subject of food conservation. She also stated that an attempt should be made to interest the jails in this important question. Since the last meeting she had had several conferences with Mr. Child and had assisted in the distribution of posters. The secretary reported the "Do You Want To Win The War? Save Wheat" posters distributed; 500 were printed—70 went to the Rapid Transit Company for the street cars; about 100 had been taken about town by the Boy Scouts; that she and Mrs. Gartley had placed them in the churches, clubs, etc., and that Mrs. Alexander had taken some out Nuuanu Street. The rest (about 250) were sent to the County Agents for distribution on the other

Islands. Mrs. Gartley reported progress on the Kitchen Card. She read a letter from Mr. Griffiths assuring us of his willingness to cooperate on Food Conservation. Mrs. Macfarlane reported a satisfactory conference with Father Valentin in regard to the schools under his control; also a satisfactory report from the Kamehameha Schools. Mrs. Gartley reported work among the Portuguese people on the use of graham flour; also an interview with Father Stephen. . . .”

*Meeting of October 8, 1917.* “. . . Mrs. Cooke reported that since the last meeting, she, with Mrs. Alexander, had talked to about a thousand school children at the Normal School and Central Grammar on the subject of Food Saving. She reported with pleasure that the ladies of St. Andrews and the little church at Kaimuki had voted not to hold the Thanksgiving Food Sale which has been an annual custom for a long period. At this time Mrs. Gartley moved that the secretary be instructed to send a letter of approval for Canon Ault to present to the two societies. . . . Mrs. Cooke had, since the last meeting, visited the Insane Asylum and secured a promise from officials that from henceforth they would use 50 per cent graham bread and more if they could educate the inmates. Seven articles had appeared in the daily papers and a letter to the school children to be published in the Educational Review as the result of Mrs. Cooke’s pen. She also gave an interesting report of the Food Conservation Sermon delivered by Bishop Restarick the day before, subject, “Give us this day our daily bread,” while he worked out the theme, “Save the waste and win the war.” The closing thought being, the realization of conservation means a refined humanity. . . . Mrs. Gartley’s report showed a great deal of personal work with the merchants of the Portuguese district. She had made many calls and had interviewed the shop keepers, asking them to urge the use of graham flour at every possible opportunity. . . . The secretary reported also interviews with Mr. Frazier and the managers of the theaters regarding Food Slides in the movies. She was instructed to continue this work at a cost of from \$1.25 to \$1.50 per slide. These slides can be

used on the other islands as well as in Honolulu. The secretary presented a letter for the approval of the committee which had been prepared for the purpose of extending the use of graham flour. The statement was made that Mr. McKenzie of Love's Bakery had agreed to issue 5,000 copies of such a letter to his customers, at his own expense. The letter met the general approval of the committee and the matter was left for the secretary to arrange with Mr. McKenzie. . . ."

*Meeting of October 15, 1917.* ". . . Mrs. Gartley reported the completion and part distribution of the Kitchen Card. A most hearty vote of thanks was extended Mrs. Gartley for her splendid work on the cards. We all feel sure they will prove well worth the time and labor expended. . . . Another letter sent out during the week by the Chairman was to Mr. Jarrett, regarding the use of graham bread at the prison. At this time a report was given that Mr. Jarrett had already made plans with Love's Bakery for graham bread two days per week, on Sunday and Wednesday. The order for the prison is 85 loaves per day. Mr. McKenzie stated that 85 loaves two days per week means a saving of 65 pounds of white flour per week. . . . The secretary reported also interviews with Mr. McKenzie which had been very satisfactory. Mr. McKenzie was to have 5,000 copies of the letter prepared and signed by the Committee, printed and sent to his customers. In connection he was to carry on a four hundred dollar advertising campaign. . . ."

*Meeting of October 29, 1917.* ". . . The question was raised regarding the use by the Japanese paper-hangers, of flour in paste. Mrs. Cooke agreed to consult the editors of the Japanese papers to see if through their press something could not be done to bring about a change. . . . Mention should be made of the splendid example set by Mrs. Cooke, at her afternoon reception on October 24th. *Nothing to eat but a delicious cold drink. Iced coffee and island fruit punch. . . .*"

A most important feature of the work of the Women's Committee consisted of instruction and actual demonstration of methods of food economy. Brief circulars prepared by the Com-

mittee telling how and what to save were mailed out by the Hawaiian Electric Company and the Honolulu Gas Company with their monthly bills for July, 1917. These circulars included the suggestion for one meatless day and one wheatless meal each week. Housewives were urged to make their own bread. When, at the beginning of August, the chairman of the committee visited several hardware stores to find out whether they could supply bread boards in any quantity, W. W. Dimond & Company informed her that 350 bread boards had been purchased by the women of Kauai in recent weeks largely as a result of food economy work conducted on the Garden Island by Mrs. W. H. Rice. The "Kitchen Card" mentioned above was printed in English and Japanese in parallel columns, with instructions as to the carrying out of the conservation measures advocated by the committee and with selected recipes for war breads and other foods. Ten thousand of these cards were distributed in homes throughout the territory.

Actual demonstrations of economy cooking were given during August under the auspices of the Women's Committee by Mrs. James Russell, director of the Y. W. C. A. cafeteria. Mrs. Russell, a trained and skilled cook and dietitian, had already begun to preach and to practice food economy methods in the cafeteria and in the Y. W. C. A. cooking classes. Largely through her influence, the Y. W. C. A. cafeteria was the first public eating place in Hawaii to have a "wheatless day." This step was taken by a vote of the patrons of the cafeteria on August 2, 1917, (135 to 2) and the first wheatless day was the following Thursday, August 9. The demonstrations of economy cooking were given by Mrs. Russell two days each week during the month of August, the series being divided into three groups, one devoted to methods of saving wheat flour, one to the saving of leftovers, and one to the utilization of island grown products. As a summing up of the series a food exhibit was held at the cafeteria on the afternoon and evening of September 5. The demonstrations and exhibits were largely attended and created great interest. In November, Mrs. Russell visited Kauai as a guest of the Moki-

hana Club and gave a series of demonstrations to the women of that island.

During the fall of 1917 the Women's Committee gave much of its attention to the saving of wheat. People were urged to allow no bread whatever to go into the garbage can. Mrs. C. M. Cooke, Jr., wrote an appeal to the school children, printed in the *Hawaii Educational Review*, in which she asked them to "help save wheat. Eat graham bread or any war bread and above all, do not throw away one piece. Every piece you throw away means one less piece to go to the poor starving children in Europe, and each piece of pure white bread you eat takes just that much flour away from our soldiers and those of our Allies. Do your part, Boys and Girls! Do it now!" A campaign was carried on to popularize the use of graham bread. In this campaign, G. S. McKenzie, manager of Love's Biscuit & Bread Company, co-operated most effectively by sending out to his patrons copies of a letter prepared by the Women's Committee and by running a series of graham bread advertisements. The Alexander Young Bakery likewise made a special effort, employees delivering bread being instructed to push the sale of graham bread as much as possible.

During September, 1917, the local lodge of Elks supplemented the work of the Women's Committee by carrying on an active campaign among its members. A committee on food conservation was appointed, headed by John A. Hughes, and this committee prepared a pledge in the following words which was signed by more than a hundred members: "I hereby pledge that for the duration of the war the following rules will be observed in my household: (a) That one meal each day shall be served without wheat food; (b) That one meal each day shall be served without meats; (c) That no butter shall be used for cooking purposes when a satisfactory substitute is available; (d) That bread shall be sliced during each meal only as required for immediate consumption; (e) That at three meals each week at least one dish shall be served prepared from food unconsumed at previous meals." Through an advertisement in the news-

papers the Elks invited the public to join with them in the campaign for food saving.

REORGANIZATION OF TERRITORIAL FOOD COMMISSION—  
COORDINATION WITH UNITED STATES FOOD ADMINISTRATION

After carrying through the task of organizing the details of the Food Commission work and getting the County Agent system into successful operation, Dr. Dean in August resigned from the position of Executive Officer in order to resume his duties at the College of Hawaii. A. L. Castle was appointed to succeed him, but he served rather in an advisory capacity, being assisted by a paid Assistant Executive Officer, J. F. Child. This arrangement continued until December, 1917, when Mr. Castle resigned in order to give all his time to Red Cross work. In the meantime the United States Food Administration had come into existence with Herbert Hoover as its head, and Mr. Hoover had, upon the suggestion of Governor Pinkham, appointed Mr. Child as Federal Food Administrator for Hawaii. Upon the resignation of Mr. Castle, therefore, the Territorial Food Commission appointed Mr. Child as Executive Officer, thus concentrating in his hands all administrative details of food control in the territory. From the beginning the local Commission kept Mr. Hoover informed of local conditions and acted in conformity to the policies of the United States Food Administration. After the appointment of Mr. Child as Federal Food Administrator for Hawaii the work of the Federal Food Administration and the Territorial Food Commission was so closely integrated that it is best to consider them as one; but it is fair to say that during 1917 the local body was the more important force, whereas in 1918 food control was chiefly carried on under the regulations of the federal organization. The territorial body devoted itself largely to the problem of production; the federal administration (in Hawaii) was more actively concerned with the problem of conservation.

ATTACKS ON THE TERRITORIAL FOOD COMMISSION

The creation of the Territorial Food Commission, one of the first if not the very first such body to be formed anywhere in



the United States, was hailed with satisfaction by practically everyone in the community and the governor was congratulated upon the fine judgment and lack of partisanship shown by him in the selection of the commisisoners. Yet it was to be expected that an official body clothed with such extensive powers touching so intimately the everyday life of the whole population in a critical and difficult war period would find it impossible to carry on without encountering considerable criticism. And so it turned out. The Commission was scarcely organized before newspaper criticism began to be directed against it because its meetings were not open to the public and because its executive officer seemed to shun the limelight of publicity. Governor Pinkham became greatly incensed with the Commission because of what he termed its interference in military affairs (in the matter of the mobilization of the National Guard, which has been discussed in chapter II). The governor found many things to criticize in the work of the Commission and toward the end of his term, in one of his letters, expressed the opinion that the Food Commission had been of little value. Some of his later appointments to the Commission were made with the idea of bringing about a change in its policy and methods, and it must be said that he was successful at least in stirring things up. Some of the charges most frequently made against the Commission were that it did nothing but pay salaries, that it had shifted the principal part of its work onto the shoulders of the women, that it had failed to handle or at least had failed to find a solution for the fish problem, and that it failed to make use of the price-fixing power granted to it by law. The critics went so far as to suggest that the Commission should be abolished altogether. At this point the newspapers came to the defense of the Commission. The *Advertiser* and the *Star-Bulletin* agreed that while the Food Commission had not accomplished everything that was expected of it, still it had done much good—enough to justify its continuance—and that the proposal for its abolition was ill-advised and uncalled for. The commissioners declared their willingness to submit their work to any reasonable investigation and stated that they would place their resignation in the hands of Mr. McCarthy

(recently nominated to succeed Governor Pinkham) as soon as he was inaugurated.

The attack on the Food Commission culminated in the special session of the legislature in May, 1918. On the opening day of the session (May 14) Representative Lorrin Andrews introduced a concurrent resolution declaring that the work of the Commission had been "a failure and disappointment through the inefficiency and negligence of the members," and requesting "the resignation of said commissioners and the appointment of capable and honest men who will properly build up the food industries of the Territory." Governor Pinkham in a special message pointed out what seemed to him some mistakes and shortcomings of the Commission, though he did concede that, "in a gentlemanly way, the Commission has done many good things." Representative Andrews' resolution was finally adopted in the House by a 20 to 8 vote on May 22. On the same day the Senate took about five minutes to dispose of the resolution, killing it by a unanimous vote.

As soon as Governor McCarthy was in office, he began an examination of the whole food situation and the work of the Food Commission. At the conclusion of his investigation he asked the commissioners to remain in office and continue the work they had begun. In a newspaper interview the governor said: "After studying the situation thoroughly, I am fully satisfied that they have done very good work. I have found that the Commission has caused food to be planted on areas that heretofore were idle; that it has brought about great conservation in the use of food, and that the members have worked largely along lines sought to be followed by Federal Food Administrator Herbert Hoover. I would like to have it made plain that I was prejudiced against the Food Commission as a result of reading headlines in the newspapers. I did not read the articles as I desired to arrange the whole matter clearly in my own mind. I have gone thoroughly into the situation and have reached the conclusion that the Commission has done as good work as it would be possible for any other body of men with their own work to attend to."

## FOOD LEGISLATION IN THE SPECIAL SESSION OF 1918

The food question was very much to the front in the special session of the legislature in May, 1918, and two important acts were passed which were intended to relieve the situation. One of these, entitled "An Act to Provide for an Adequate Food Supply for the Inhabitants of the Territory of Hawaii," was passed largely because of a threatened shortage of rice and taro, which were essential foods for a large part of the population. It placed at the disposal of the governor a revolving fund of \$200,000, to be known as the "War Food Supply Fund," for the purpose of securing the "importation into, or the production and/or sale or other distribution within the Territory of any food products or supplies which may in his opinion be necessary to supplement the present or future local supply." Under this law the governor or any Commission or other agency of the Territory designated by him might "make and enter into such contracts for the production of taro, rice and any other food products as he or they may deem necessary to secure a sufficient supply of such food products for local consumption," and in order to stimulate production he might guarantee a minimum price. As matters turned out, it was not necessary to make any expenditures under authority of this act.

The 1917 legislature had provided for a Territorial Marketing Division under the control of the Board of Commissioners of Agriculture and Forestry. For various reasons the Marketing Division had not functioned in a very satisfactory manner. The special session of 1918 therefore amended the law with a view to making the Territorial Market a more effective aid both to the producer and to the general public. The market was placed under control of a Territorial Market Commission of five members.

## CHAPTER XVI

### FOOD PRODUCTION AND CONSERVATION

#### II. The United States Food Administration

THE United States Food Administration was created for the purpose of coping with the problem of food production, distribution, and conservation. The work of this great organization was carried on under the authority of the Food Control Act of August 10, 1917, though the organization had really begun several months earlier under the guidance of Herbert C. Hoover. Mr. Hoover's aim was to secure the willing cooperation of the people rather than enforced obedience. One of the first steps in the campaign was the enlisting of a great army of housewives pledged to cooperate with the Federal Food Administrator in the work of food conservation. Those who signed the pledge became members of the United States Food Administration and promised to carry out the directions and advice of the food administrator. Another important measure was the placing of importers, manufacturers, and distributors of essential food commodities under licenses, without which they could not continue in business. Regulations were made to prevent profiteering and to keep foodstuffs moving directly and expeditiously to the consumer. The work of the Food Administration was decentralized as much as possible, being carried on through local organizations and through Food Administrators in each state and territory. In Hawaii use was made of the Territorial Food Commission and its committees. As previously stated, J. F. Child was appointed United States Food Administrator for Hawaii, this appointment being made in October, 1917. In December Mr. Child visited Washington to attend a conference of Food Administrators from the several states with Mr. Hoover.

## FOOD ADMINISTRATION MEMBERSHIP CAMPAIGN

The pledge card campaign to enroll the housewives as members of the United States Food Administration was carried on in two stages. Early in July one of Mr. Hoover's assistants wrote to Dr. A. L. Dean, executive officer of the Territorial Food Commission, as follows:

"Mr. Hoover has . . . particularly asked me to correspond with you in regard to the enlistment and cooperation of the women in food conservation. We are very anxious to have a large enrollment of the women of the islands and I am sending you a copy of the pledge we are sending out. If your Food Commission can distribute these pledges and they can be sent in to Washington, we should be very glad to supply the house tag, indicating membership in the Food Administration and also the instructions. . . . We would like to have these instructions get the widest publicity possible and have them in every home. . . . It is most important to bring about this enlistment, if we are to control the activities of our citizens. We want to begin with the women and subsequently take up the work with the men and the school children."

In reply to this letter, under date July 18, Dr. Dean, after telling of the formation of the Women's Committee, wrote: "After consulting with the chairman of our ladies' committee it has appeared to us advisable to cooperate with you in the national movement and to have enrolled as members of the United States Food Administration as many women as possible in Hawaii. For several reasons we suggest a slight modification of your plan for local application; Hawaii is a long way from Washington and we cannot count on getting a letter there and back in less than a month; further than that, our population is made up of a mixture of very diverse races, and many of the women have but slight acquaintance with English. We do not wish to confine this movement to the English speaking races. Our plan would be to reprint your post card in several languages and to have them returned in the first instance to this commis-

sion where they would be catalogued and then sent on in batches to your office."

Before this letter was received in Washington, pledge cards had already been forwarded to Hawaii to be distributed through the postoffices and by mail carriers. This was done during the week of August 11-18. The signed cards were returned to Washington without going through the office of the Territorial Food Commission. Although the plan suggested by the local organization was not carried out, a special effort was made to get the Japanese women to sign the pledge cards; the Hongwanji Mission cooperated and the Young Women's Buddhist Association voluntarily undertook to aid in enrolling the Japanese women. It is not known how many women signed the pledge card at this time, but Mr. Hoover subsequently stated that several thousand signed cards were sent on to Washington. In December an organized "drive" was carried on by the Women's Committee to bring in all who had not joined at the time of the August enrollment. Honolulu was divided into districts and a thorough canvass made. A preparatory publicity campaign was carried on for some time in advance of the actual canvass. The food pledge drive was held somewhat later on the outside islands, on Kauai in January, and on Maui in February. The Women's Committee supplemented the housewives' pledge signing by a campaign to enroll the school children in the conservation movement. A simple pledge card was prepared, in the following form: "I am glad to do my part as far as I can to help my country. I will try not to waste bread or other kind of food." Forty thousand of these cards were printed and sent out with an appeal to the teachers to cooperate. In this and other ways the Women's Committee sought to interest the children in the cause of food saving.

#### THE LICENSE SYSTEM

The license feature of the Food Administration's system was put into operation by a series of proclamations issued by the President under authority of the Food Control Act. The sugar corporations were the first in Hawaii to be brought within this

system of control, by a proclamation requiring importers and manufacturers of sugar to take out licenses on October 1, 1917. One month later, cold storage warehouses and importers, manufacturers, and distributors of some twenty staple food commodities were placed under license. Bakers who used as much as ten barrels of flour or meal were required to take out licenses on December 10; effective February 4, 1918, this was extended to include bakers using as much as three barrels monthly. Fishermen and small canners were put under license on February 15, 1918. In all of these cases a short extension of time was allowed to those required to take out licenses in Hawaii, on account of the distance from Washington. The effect of this series of proclamation was to place under license all wholesale houses, all the important retail merchants, and practically all the bakers in Hawaii; the licensing of bakers included hotels and restaurants which made their own bread. They were in this way subject to control by the federal government, but the control was not vexatious and was cheerfully submitted to in most cases.

The Food Administration did not fix prices. In some cases it specified the price it would pay for certain commodities, as in the case of wheat. The fair price for wheat decided upon by the President's Committee was carried through by a voluntary agreement with the millers. In the case of sugar a voluntary arrangement was made with the refiners whereby a price at sea-board was agreed upon. Retail prices were controlled to a certain extent through the licensing system by the regulations against profiteering and hoarding. This, of course, did not prevent a general rise in the scale of prices due to increased costs of production. Publicity was another means used to control prices. In the middle of December, 1917, Food Administrator Child began the publication of the wholesale and retail prices actually charged for staple food articles. "Fair Price" committees were appointed for Honolulu and the outside islands by Mr. Child, and in August, 1918, he began publishing in the daily newspapers a "Fair Price List," giving the cost to the retailer of the main articles handled and the prices which the consumer ought to pay,

the latter being based on a fair margin of profit. Beginning November 1, 1918, grocers were required to display a sign not less than 3 by 5 feet in size, giving a list of the prices of staple foods.

Until the spring of 1918 the Territorial Food Commission made no use of the price fixing power conferred on it by law. There was some doubt as to the constitutionality of that section of the act, and on the first occasion on which the Commission attempted to exercise the power it was taken into the courts and held to be unconstitutional. The Commission, however, through investigation and otherwise, prevented a raise of one cent a quart in the price of milk. Local producers of beef also kept their prices down in response to the suggestion of the Commission. This meant a saving of many thousands of dollars to the people of the territory.

#### "HOOVERIZING"

In the campaign for food conservation particular stress was laid on the necessity for saving wheat, meat, and sugar. The ways of "Hooverizing" which produced the greatest results and which, incidentally, stand out most strongly in our remembrance of war days, were the wheatless and meatless meals and days and the use of substitutes for white wheat flour in bread and bakery products. In Hawaii, as we have seen, the Women's Committee of the Territorial Food Commission took the lead in urging the people to "Hooverize" and in showing them how to do it, although it is true that many families had begun to practice conservation before the Women's Committee was organized.

The earliest official suggestion for wheatless and meatless meals seems to have been contained in circulars prepared by the Territorial Food Commission in July, 1917, to be sent out with monthly bills by the Honolulu Gas Company and the Hawaiian Electric Company. This asked the people to observe one meatless day and one wheatless meal each week. So far as available records show, the first public eating place in the territory to have a wheatless day was the Y. W. C. A. cafeteria. In this regard the Y. W. C. A. was a real leader. Its first wheatless



day was Thursday, August 9, 1917. Beginning in December, after Wednesdays had been officially designated as wheatless days, the Y. W. C. A. not only observed Wednesdays, but added Mondays and had two wheatless days every week. In February, 1918, it abandoned wheat flour altogether, and from then until the fall of 1918 bought no wheat flour whatever. In September, 1917, the Elks Club included in its conservation pledge one wheatless and one meatless meal each day.

Toward the end of October, the Territorial Food Commission decided to request the observance of Wednesday as a general wheatless day, beginning November 14, 1917. The Commission suggested that on Wednesday the public should eat corn meal bread, graham, whole wheat, and rye breads instead of white. One object of this request was to increase the consumption of corn meal, which was being manufactured on Maui and was just then coming on the market in considerable quantity. It was part of the general plan to promote the use of local products in order to cut down the importation of wheat into the islands. The Territorial Hotel Company, operating the Alexander Young, Seaside, and Moana Hotels, announced that it would observe wheatless Wednesday and also meatless Friday. The University Club adopted Monday as meatless day in addition to wheatless Wednesday. The other social clubs also joined the movement. Hotels, restaurants, and clubs were asked to sign the pledge and become members of the United States Food Administration, and the people were urged to patronize only those places which displayed the membership card.

During the winter of 1917-1918 the food situation in the Allied countries became so acute that Mr. Hoover found it necessary to call on the American people to make a great reduction in the use of wheat, beef, pork, and sugar. At the beginning of January the Food Administration asked the public to maintain rigidly a minimum of one wheatless day (Wednesday) and one wheatless meal each day, one meatless day (Tuesday) and one meatless meal each day, one porkless day (Saturday), and to reduce the consumption of sugar to not more than three pounds per person per month. On January 28 an additional

wheatless day (Monday) was added to this schedule, and on the same day regulations went into effect governing the sale of flour and the making of bread. Under these regulations wholesalers were allowed to buy in any month not more than 70 per cent of the amount of wheat flour bought in the corresponding month of 1917, and in selling to the retailers they must sell with all orders for wheat flour an equal amount by weight of substitutes, such as corn meal, corn starch, corn flour, hominy, corn grits, barley flour, rice, rice flour, soya bean flour, etc. The retailers in turn must sell to the general public on the same 50-50 basis. Bakers were required, in making bread and rolls, to mix with the wheat flour at least 5 per cent of some substitute and to increase the amount of this substitution as rapidly as possible until by February 24 it should amount to 20 per cent. By a later regulation the amount of substitution was to be increased to 25 per cent not later than April 14. The name "Victory Bread" was given to this kind of bread, and the regulations allowed it to be eaten on wheatless days.

Within a short time a still more drastic saving was called for. Householders were asked to limit the use of wheat products to not more than one and one-half pounds per person per week. Public eating places were required, in addition to observing wheatless meals and days, to reduce the amount of bread or other wheat product served to one person at one meal to a total of not more than two ounces of wheat flour, not to serve any wheat products unless specially ordered and not to buy more than six pounds of wheat products for each ninety meals served. Bakers and grocers were asked to deliver a three-quarter pound loaf of bread instead of a pound loaf. Finally an appeal was made to public eating places to sign a pledge not to use any wheat products at all until after the next harvest. In May it was discovered that the islands of Maui and Kauai had a very large stock of flour on hand. An embargo was therefore placed on the shipment of flour to those islands for a period of sixty days.

The response to these appeals and the observance of regulations was, on the whole, very satisfactory. Investigation from

time to time showed that nearly all stores, bakeries, and eating places were living up to the requirements of the Food Administration. Occasional violations were discovered and these were dealt with by the administrator as the circumstances seemed to warrant; some stores, bakeries, and restaurants were closed for short periods; some had their supplies of licensed products shut off; some were merely warned; in some cases fines were imposed, the money being turned over to the Red Cross. One such fine amounted to \$1,000. During the summer of 1918, Food Administrator Child visited the outside islands and found conditions there to be as well under control as in Honolulu. For the guidance of housewives in following the 1918 conservation program a "home card" was published by the United States Food Administration. In Hawaii this was adapted to local conditions by the Women's Committee of the Territorial Food Commission and 10,000 copies were printed in English, Japanese, Chinese, and Portuguese. In Honolulu these were delivered from house to house by Boy Scouts assisting the members of the Committee. The sales of wheat substitutes and the decrease in wheat flour sales indicated that the housewives were loyally doing their bit. During the spring there was for a time some danger of a shortage in substitutes.

In Hawaii a local flavor was introduced into "war bread" by the use of island products as substitutes for wheat flour. Of these special variations the one which created the greatest interest was banana bread, but a number of other local products were experimented with and some of them extensively used. This was good conservation practice and directly in line with the efforts of the Territorial Food Commission to extend the use of home-grown foodstuffs. From the very beginning the Commission had preached this doctrine. During the winter of 1917-1918 the Commission and Federal Food Administrator Child urged the people to use island grown corn meal in the making of bread and even went so far as to suggest to Mr. Hoover that an embargo be placed on 25 or 30 per cent of the wheat flour shipments to Hawaii in order to make sure that the large island grown corn crop would be taken care of by the local demand.

During the fall of 1917 a series of experiments was carried on at the United States Agricultural Experiment Station by M. O. Johnson on the preparation of flour from edible canna, Irish and sweet potatoes, bananas, taro, and cassava. Flour was made from all of these products by a process of drying and grinding. Experiments in the use of these flours in bread making showed that they could all be used as substitutes for wheat flour up to a total of about one-third. The cassava flour was the best, costing much less to manufacture than the others and making a better quality of bread. In actual practice sweet potatoes and bananas were extensively used in the making of bread during the spring of 1918; not, however, in the form of flour but of pulp. In December, 1917, Mrs. J. M. Westgate experimented with local substitutes for white flour and succeeded in making very palatable bread with sweet potato or banana pulp substituted for one-third or one-fourth by weight of the regular quantity of flour. Her method of preparing the pulp was to bake the bananas and boil the sweet potatoes and then run them through a potato ricer. This kind of "war bread" was heartily endorsed by the Women's Committee of the Territorial Food Commission. At the beginning of February, 1918, it was reported that the Oahu Bakery Company was using a thousand pounds of sweet potatoes each week in the manufacture of bread. Bananas were even more widely used. Banana bread was only one feature of the "banana campaign" of January and February, 1918. That campaign was itself one of the spectacular episodes in the conservation movement in Hawaii and deserves more than a passing mention.

#### THE BANANA CAMPAIGN

At the time the United States entered the war Hawaii was producing annually about 350,000 bunches of bananas. Of this amount less than a third were consumed locally, the balance being shipped to San Francisco. During the summer and fall of 1917 the congestion in freight shipments by sea cut heavily into the banana shipments, resulting in the loss of much fruit through spoiling. There was an unusually heavy crop and this added to the waste. Large quantities of bananas were not even picked

from the trees. In December, 1917, about 600 bunches left Honolulu as against a normal December shipment of 30,000 bunches. The situation was presented to the Territorial Food Commission and an appeal made to the federal government to suspend or amend the coastwise shipping law so as to allow bananas to be shipped to the coast in foreign bottoms. This permission was finally obtained, but it did not relieve the situation to any great extent. The commandeering of all the larger Matson ships by the government at the end of 1917 added to the difficulty, since practically all the banana shipments had been made in those boats.

As early as July, 1917, it was suggested that the people of Hawaii ought to eat more bananas as a patriotic duty from the conservation standpoint. It was this consideration which led to the experiments in the making of banana bread. Nothing very effective was accomplished, however, in preventing the waste of bananas until about the middle of January, when the subject was presented to the recently organized Hawaiian Vigilance Corps of the American Defense Society. That organization took hold of the matter with characteristic vigor. A committee was appointed, consisting of L. M. Judd, chairman, J. K. Butler, C. C. Graves, F. B. Cosgrove, and A. J. Campbell, and having the formidable title of "Banana Consuming Propaganda Committee." The committee justified its name, for the members not only consumed bananas themselves, but they put out a quantity of propaganda which induced multitudes of other people to go and do likewise. The committee talked with the leading bakers on the subject of banana bread, and they arranged an effective scheme for selling bananas to the people of Honolulu through the Territorial market. Saturday, January 19, was named as "order day," when people were asked to send in their orders for bunches of bananas to be delivered the following Monday. A slogan was coined, "Buy Bananas by the Bunch and Beat the Boches Back to Berlin." Boy Scouts called at homes throughout the city taking orders, and the committee offered a prize of \$25 to the troop turning in the largest number of orders.

Banana bread made at the Young Bakery was served at the Ad Club and Rotary Club luncheons on the 16th and 17th and was reported to have "made a hit" with the members. The newspapers gave effective publicity to the campaign. "Banana Day" (Monday, the 21st) was a great success. On that day the Young Bakery and Love's Bakery sold nearly 4,000 loaves of banana bread. The chairman of the Banana Committee reported that a thousand bunches of bananas had been sold; the Boy Scouts alone sold about 500 bunches. The campaign was kept up through the week. On Wednesday the Ad Club had a banana parade and a banana luncheon, at which speeches were made by Governor Pinkham, former Governor G. R. Carter, L. M. Judd, and others. Saturday was women's banana day; committees collected and tested recipes and finally put on an exhibition showing a multitude of attractive ways of serving and using bananas.

As a local writer remarked some weeks later, the people of Hawaii were all waked up to the banana idea. A fairly steady demand was created for bananas and banana bread, which went far to prevent the appalling waste that had been going on. Some trouble was experienced later and publicity was required from time to time, but the complaint was more frequently of a failure of the supply in the market than of an over-supply; the banana industry was not well organized. As a conservation measure the banana campaign was a distinct success.

Another local product rather extensively used during the conservation campaign was goat meat. This was suggested at a meeting of the Territorial Food Commission in November, 1917, but little attention was paid to the suggestion at that time. During the early months of 1918, when there was an acute local shortage of meat, the Hawaiian Vigilance Corps asked why the goats of Hawaii and Kahoolawe should not do their bit by substituting for lamb, mutton, and beef. Before long goat meat found its way into the meat markets of Honolulu and elsewhere in the territory and was sold in considerable quantity. It even achieved the distinction of being served at a luncheon meeting of the Honolulu Rotary Club.

## THE TERRITORIAL FAIR AND THE FOOD CAMPAIGN

Hawaii had her first Territorial Fair in the summer of 1918. The bearing which it was intended to have on the existing food situation was pointed out in a letter from George H. Angus, chairman of the Fair Commission, to the Chamber of Commerce of Honolulu, in which he said: "Hawaii's first annual Territorial Fair will be held in Honolulu June 10 to 15 and will consist largely of livestock, agricultural, and horticultural exhibits. This will be the first opportunity Hawaii has had to place before the public its great possibilities as an agricultural commonwealth. We believe this display will tend to prove the fact that these islands can be made self-supporting. This fair is the direct outgrowth of the three county agricultural fairs which have been fostered to a considerable extent by the Department of Agriculture through its Experiment Station in Honolulu. The present national emergency seems to be a most opportune time to focus universal attention on the problem of the production of home grown food supplies, a feature in which Hawaii has always been weak, but which condition we are striving to overcome." The Fair had the endorsement of the Territorial Food Commission, which instructed the County Agents to cooperate with the people of each island in order to make it a success.

In addition to the agricultural and livestock exhibits, which illustrated graphically what was being done and what could be done along those lines, one building (or rather, one tent) was devoted to a food conservation section in charge of a committee headed by Dr. A. L. Dean. Besides exhibits of a general character, the food conservation tent contained a table devoted to American dishes, and others showing Japanese foods, Chinese foods, and Hawaiian food products. On all of these tables the emphasis was placed on the idea of conservation. Each day some special exhibit or demonstration was given, showing how to prepare and serve breads of various kinds, cakes and pastry, meat substitutes, fish, Hawaiian fruits, vegetables, and seaweeds, and a complete menu for four persons for a day. This feature was in charge of Mrs. James Russell. The class in dietetics in

the College of Hawaii gave an instructive display of food values and comparative daily rations. Supplementing the exhibits of foods, the Women's Committee of the Territorial Food Commission distributed many pamphlets and cook books, some of which had been prepared especially for use in Hawaii.

#### FOOD REGULATION COMES TO AN END

By the end of July, 1918, the wheat situation had improved to such an extent that Mr. Hoover was able to release hotels and restaurants from their pledges not to use wheat products until after the next harvest. In September new bread regulations were announced, which considerably relaxed the old restrictions. The rule in regard to substitutes was modified and it was provided that bread should be made with 80 per cent wheat flour and 20 per cent substitutes; wheatless days and wheatless meals were no longer required, but public eating places were still to serve bread only when specially requested and in the same small portions as before. Arrangements were made with the millers to supply a "Victory Mixed Flour" consisting of 80 per cent wheat flour and 20 per cent of some substitute. This was soon placed on the market and proved a great convenience to bakers and housewives.

This relaxation of the restrictions on wheat flour did not mean that the necessity for saving was at an end. During the fall Mr. Hoover, in conference with the food administrators of the Allies, worked out a new food conservation program. Beginning October 21 the regulations for public eating places required that not more than two ounces of bread (made on the 80-20 basis) might be served and that only after the first course. Only one teaspoon of sugar was permitted and one kind of meat. Sugar bowls were not to be placed on the table. The use of butter was limited to half an ounce for each individual meal. In connection with these rules for public eating houses rules were given out for the housewives with the request that they carry them out, though no orders were issued. Housekeepers were urged to use fresh meat only once a day, to save wheat, to use



only two pounds of sugar per person per month. They were urged to save tea, coffee, cocoa, ice, and animal feed. Food Administrator Child held meetings with the keepers of public eating places and the managers of the bakeries to discuss the new regulation. They all pledged obedience and committees were appointed, one from each of the two groups, to assist in the enforcement of the rules.

This system of regulation remained in effect until some weeks after the signing of the armistice, being finally rescinded December 23, 1918. In Hawaii it was necessary to keep the 80-20 bread rule in effect longer than on the mainland because the dealers had on hand a large stock of substitutes which had to be disposed of. Several thousand bags of these substitutes were shipped back to the mainland early in January, 1919, to be sent to Europe.

The office of the Federal Food Administration in Hawaii was closed at the end of January, any business after that date being attended to by Mr. Child personally. The work of the Territorial Food Commission came to an end December 31, 1918. The County Agent system was taken over by the College of Hawaii the first of January, to be administered by it until the legislature should make some other disposition.

#### WHAT HAWAII SAVED

After this review of the food conservation movement in Hawaii it is natural to inquire what the results of the effort amounted to in dollars and cents. Federal Food Administrator Child issued two statements with statistics which give a fair idea of what was accomplished. The first statement showed the quantity of food saved (reduction in amount of food imported) by the people of Hawaii during the eleven months ending May 31, 1918, as compared with the eleven months ending May 31, 1917. The value of this saving, on the basis of 1917 prices, was \$1,849,609.20; on the basis of 1918 prices it amounted to \$2,460,183.95. Mr. Child's second statement, issued at the end of 1918, says:

"The record of imports of foodstuffs imported to Hawaii for nine months ending September 30, 1918, on items which we have asked the people to save, shows a decrease of 30,696 tons.

"The increase of imports on items which we have asked the people to use, such as perishable products and substitutes, show an increase of 2,198 tons, leaving a net decrease of importations of 28,498 tons for nine months ending September 30, 1918, as compared with same period of 1917.

"The value of these food products if purchased on the 1918 basis would have been \$4,140,323. If purchased on the 1917 basis would have been \$2,186,295. . . .

"The people of Hawaii reduced their importations of wheat flour for these nine months 46,278 barrels, or 51 per cent of what they imported and used during the same period of 1917.

"Other food products show equally as great a saving and the people of Hawaii are to be congratulated on the showing which they have made. The food administration takes this occasion to express their appreciation of the part of all the people of Hawaii who have taken part in this work. . . .

"The food administration believes that the people of Hawaii can be depended upon to continue their voluntary saving of all foods wherever necessary, in order that there may be sufficient food to help feed the starving millions of the world."

#### SPECIAL FOOD PROBLEMS

In the preceding pages a general account has been given of the food situation in war time. The problem of keeping up the sugar output will be treated in the next chapter. There were certain other commodities, fish, rice, and poi—staple foods for a large part of the population of Hawaii—of such special importance that it seems advisable to give, apart from the general story, a brief sketch of the efforts made to maintain a sufficient supply of them at a reasonable price.

#### THE FISH QUESTION

At first thought it might be supposed—by one not living in Hawaii—that this island group, situated nearly in the middle of

the world's largest ocean and with many miles of surrounding reefs, ought to have at all times an abundant supply of sea food at low prices. Such, however, is not the case. A volume would be required to describe in detail the intricacies of the fish problem and to relate the story of the various attempts made to find a solution for it. In this place nothing can be given except an elementary and much simplified account of the situation during the war years.

Hawaii's fish supply is derived from three sources: (1) deep sea fisheries; (2) shore fisheries; and (3) fish ponds. The fish ponds, largely owned by big corporations and rented to Chinese, furnish the choice pond mullet and a small quantity of other fish. The shore fisheries are controlled in the main by the owners or lessees of the old fishing rights coming down from ancient times. The bulk of the fish supply in the local markets comes from the deep sea fisheries and is brought in by Japanese fishermen who use power sampans equipped with ice wells and who stay out for periods varying from one day to several weeks. The sampans are owned in part by "huis" of individuals and in part by incorporated companies. They are all supplied with ice, gasoline, and other supplies by the incorporated companies; during the war years there were three of these companies, besides one or two companies engaged in canning aku (Hawaiian tuna). These companies were the wholesale dealers; they received the fish from the fishermen and auctioned it off to the stallmen, or retailers (principally Chinese). There were three fish markets, each one being controlled and supplied by one of the three fish companies; in addition there were a few small independent dealers and a number of street vendors, but the bulk of the retail business was done at the fish-markets. The bait used by the deep-sea fishers was the aku, a near shore fish; and there were a few boats—less than a dozen—engaged in catching aku for bait. The aku fishers in turn used for bait a small fish called the nehu which they had to carry with them alive in tanks. The nehu fishing grounds were practically all

covered by the old fishing rights. The bait supply, both aku and nehu, caused a great amount of difficulty.

Before the war fish was comparatively cheap—it was, in fact, looked upon as the poor man's meat—but it went up in price along with nearly everything else. Just after the United States entered the war the fish question was investigated by a special committee of the territorial grand jury and by a legislative committee. Neither of these committees could find any evidence of any illegal or improper attempt to raise the price of fish and both recommended that the question be referred to the newly created Territorial Food Commission. The Food Commission, after its organization, appointed a fish committee, which investigated the question off and on during the summer and fall of 1917. A great amount of evidence was collected and many suggestions offered. The Commission concluded that two steps necessary for a final solution of the problem were the abolition of the old fishing rights and the establishment of a fish hatchery. In the meantime the price of fish kept on rising and the newspapers gave the subject an immense amount of publicity. Charges were made that the fish companies improperly manipulated the supply in order to inflate prices. So great was the outcry that one of the companies published a half-page advertisement explaining "The Why of Fish Prices," the "why" being, in brief, the expense of carrying on the business. Mr. Child, Federal Food Administrator, about the first of December worked out a plan to have the fishermen, the fish companies, and the retailers agree on a set of prices based on the cost of production plus a fair profit and to divide the consumer's dollar among them on the basis of 72 per cent to the fishermen, 8 per cent to the fish companies, and 20 per cent to the retailers. Ultimately, but not until after Mr. Child's return from a trip to Washington, this plan was accepted by all interested parties and was substantially put into operation about the end of February. One plan frequently proposed, but never carried out, was for a public municipal or territorial fish-market.

The inauguration of meatless meals and days and Mr. Hoover's appeal to the people to eat fish in place of meat made

the local situation much worse by greatly increasing the demand for fish. Adverse weather conditions also interfered with the fishing from time to time. In the middle of January Dr. A. L. Dean stated, in a letter to Chairman Dole of the Territorial Food Commission, "The fish situation is becoming steadily worse. On Saturday I found fish like ulua retailing at 30 to 40 cents per pound with the usual supply on the tables. Six months ago the same fish were obtainable at half the price."

At about this time Mayor J. J. Fern began to take a lively interest in the fish situation, saying that, for the poor people, the prevailing prices were prohibitive. As a result of his activity and the work of K. Hamamura, a special representative of the United States Food Administration, an agreement was made according to which the price of aku was to be not over 15 cents a pound to the consumer and all other fish were to be sold at not over 25 cents a pound; but after the first few days little attention seems to have been paid to this agreement. The Hawaiian Vigilance Corps appointed a fish committee of which Eben P. Low was the most active member. From this time on Mr. Low was a constant factor in the situation and cooperated most effectivly with the Food Administrator, being appointed as Mr. Child's deputy.

The President's proclamation requiring fishermen to take out licenses on February 15, 1918, gave Food Administrator Child a weapon with which to work. He immediately laid down a set of regulations for sellers of fish: (1) all fish must be sold by the pound instead of by count as had been the regular practice up to this time; (2) the prices for different fish offered for sale by the retailers must be displayed in full view of the customers; (3) retailers must not make more than the normal pre-war profit. The auction system was done away with and the prices fixed by agreement—practically, they were fixed by the food administration.

The latter scheme created such an uproar in the fish-markets and so much dissatisfaction all along the line that Mr. Child, after a few days trial and after conferences with the fishermen, the fish companies, and the stallmen, restored the auction system,

but in a modified form. A scale of prices was established as a maximum for the different kinds of fish and the auction price was not allowed to go above this maximum; the retailer's profit was added to the auction price. At the end of February maximum prices were fixed for the months of March and April. At the end of April new and somewhat lower prices were fixed for the period May 1-October 1. An agreement was also arrived at regarding the basis on which the consumer's dollar should be divided between the fishermen, the wholesalers, and the retailers. This whole arrangement was announced as a "final settlement" of the fish situation; but that did not mean that the "fish pilikia" was at an end.

The settlement which was made did not reduce to any very marked extent the price to the ultimate consumer, but it was a considerable improvement over conditions that had been prevailing in recent months. After this time there was no essential change made in the system, but the enforcement of the regulations and agreements led to some exciting scenes in the fish-market. Toward the end of April, Eben Low, representing the Food Administration and the Vigilance Corps, discovered evidence that fish were being held out for a higher price—not being put up at auction as soon as brought in by the fishermen. He therefore went to the fish market and took personal charge of the auctioneering; by his vigorous action he brought down the prices on many kinds of fish. The *Advertiser* announced with much satisfaction that "'Rawhide Ben' is getting results at the fish market." Toward the end of July an incipient strike of fishermen threatened trouble for a time, but Mr. Child firmly refused to make any concession and it became clear that the general public was in no mood to be played with; hence, the strike was called off. The pond mullet question ran along as a sort of side issue to the main fish question, pond mullet not being included in the general settlement described above. The pond mullet men came in for a full share of criticism and were freely accused of "flim-flamming" the public; the reasons they gave for not bringing mullet into the market were characterized as mere "camouflage."

Some plans were tried for bringing about a reduction in operating costs. One of these was the organization of a group of Japanese fishermen as the Kakaako Fishermen's Association for the purpose of retailing their own catch. They had to take out a license and also had to buy their own fish at auction. Although they sold at considerably reduced prices, the venture was not a success. Another plan was to amalgamate the three fish companies and the Hawaiian Tuna Packing Company, with the latter company as a holding corporation. At the last moment one of the companies held back; the other three brought a suit to compel specific performance of contract, but Judge Ashford, before whom the suit was brought, thought the whole scheme looked "fishy" and sustained a demurrer to the complaint. The suit was dropped.

During the fall of 1918 improved fishing conditions and other causes brought about a greatly increased supply of fish in the markets. Prices came down slightly, and the fish question ceased to agitate the public as it had in preceding months. In concluding this review of the fish question, it is necessary to remind the reader that the problem was made more difficult in Hawaii by the fact that the per capita consumption of fish was very much larger here than on the mainland. The men in charge of the fish division of the federal food administration in Washington, who were in position to form a judgment by comparison of conditions in various parts of the country, were well satisfied with the way in which the fish question was handled in Hawaii.

### RICE

Rice is the principal food for more than half the population of Hawaii and importations of rice are far larger than the importations of any other food commodity. At the time of the war the people of Hawaii were consuming annually about 60,000,000 pounds of rice. Of this quantity only about one-fifth was raised in the territory; nearly all the rest was imported from Japan. This enormous importation of a staple article of food, almost a necessity for more than half the population of the

islands, was recognized as one of the most critical features of Hawaii's food problem; the cutting off of the foreign supply would create a serious situation. To increase the local production was difficult owing to the scarcity of suitable labor, but a little progress was made along that line during 1917 and 1918.

There was a sharp increase in the price of rice during the early months of 1917, but the rice question did not become acute until the spring of 1918. About the end of February the Japanese government placed an embargo on the exportation of rice except to Hawaii and mainland America; and required that before shipments could be made to those places, each order must be accompanied by a certificate from the Japanese consul and the consul before giving such a certificate must satisfy himself that the importation was necessary. No particular difficulty was experienced in getting the necessary permits to ship rice to Hawaii, but the scarcity of ships and the high freight rates interfered with shipments. In April a rice shortage seemed to be imminent. As a measure of precaution, Food Administrator Child issued an order withdrawing rice from the list of substitutes to be sold with flour, and it was arranged that no rice should be exported from the territory without his permission. A determined effort was made to bring into the market all Hawaiian grown rice and to keep the price down. Nearly all the holders of Hawaiian rice came to an agreement with the food administration to put it on the market at \$8 a bag (of 100 pounds) and sell it in the smallest quantities possible in order to conserve the supply.

To prevent profiteering in the local product the Territorial Food Commission on May 3 made a regulation to the effect that the price at which Hawaiian rice should be sold in 100-pound bags within the territory should be \$8 and no higher. This was the first time the Commission had attempted to exercise the price-fixing authority given to it by the legislature. L. L. McCandless, who had a quantity of Hawaiian rice, announced that he would not abide by the regulation, taking the position that the action of the Food Commission amounted to an unfair discrimination against the Hawaiian product, since no limit was



placed on the price of either Japan or California rice, both of which were being sold at rates higher than \$8 per bag. The Commission maintained that Hawaiian rice ought to be sold at a lower price, since it was not subject to the high freight rates paid on imported rice. Mr. McCandless sold some of his rice at \$10 a bag and was arrested and brought into court. He demurred to the charge, raising constitutional questions, and Circuit Judge Heen sent the case to the Supreme Court of the territory on a set of reserved questions. The matter was argued on October 8 and on October 31 the court handed down its decision holding the territorial law unconstitutional in so far as it attempted to confer authority on the Food Commission to fix prices at which food should be sold within the territory. Congress possesses such authority as a part of the war power conferred on it by the constitution of the United States, but the power is not enjoyed by the states and territories. The court furthermore held that the statute in question was contrary to the provisions of the fifth and fourteenth amendments to the federal constitution.

While this case was pending the Territorial Food Commission amended its earlier regulation by advancing the price of Hawaiian rice from \$8 to \$8.50 per bag. The Commission also established prices for taro. As soon as the Supreme Court rendered its decision in the McCandless case, these price-fixing regulations were rescinded by the Commission, but at the same time the following resolution was adopted:

"It is the sense of the Territorial Food Commission that Hawaiian grown rice, taro to be made into poi, and poi should not be sold in excess of the following prices: \$8.50 per bag of 100 pounds of rice; 5.55 cents per pound for poi; and \$2.25 per bag of taro; and

"Further, it is resolved that the Food Commission believes that the patriotic growers, producers, and manufacturers of these products will, in view of present war time conditions, abide by these prices."

In the meantime the spring and early summer passed without any noticeable shortage in the supply of rice, though there were

disquieting rumors from time to time. Food Administrator Child kept a close watch on the situation and repeatedly stated that, with proper care, there was no danger of anything like a rice "famine." Shipments came through from Japan somewhat irregularly but with sufficient frequency to keep the local market supplied. As the summer wore on the situation in Japan began to cause some uneasiness. Early in July the Japanese consulate in Honolulu issued to every importer of and dealer in Japanese rice orders that Japan rice should be sold only to Japanese and that the rice must be used for food purposes only; any importer or dealer violating the terms of this order would run the risk of having his rice supply from Japan shut off. Vice-Consul Imai explained that "this order to importers and dealers has been made absolutely necessary by conditions in Japan. The supply of rice at home has been very short since last winter and very high prices have obtained. . . . There is no disposition on the part of the Japanese government to deny rice to other nationalities, but it is felt that other peoples have different things which they can use in place of rice, while to the Japanese rice is absolutely a necessity; and the supply is now so short that it is all Japan can do to supply her own people with enough to get along on. Unless some disaster befalls the growing crop, Japan will have a surplus of rice after October when the restriction will be removed."

In August, rice riots in Japan created a tense situation and the government stopped all rice exports to foreign countries. There was no assurance as to when the embargo would be lifted though it was expected that this would be not later than the first of November. The Japanese Chamber of Commerce of Honolulu held a special meeting and appointed a committee to call on the consul and enlist his influence to have the rice shipments resumed. The president of the Chamber, K. Yamamoto, made a special trip to Japan to confer with government officials there on the seriousness of the rice situation in Hawaii and to endeavor to secure more satisfactory shipping arrangements. Food Administrator Child had taken steps to find out definitely how much rice was on hand, and he now sought to prevent a panicky "run"

on the dealers by pointing out that there was certainly a sufficient supply to last until the latter part of October, by which time it was entirely probable the new crop would be in. Mr. Child also gave his support to the efforts of the Japanese Chamber of Commerce. Mr. Yamamoto was entirely successful in his mission—the Japanese government lifted the embargo on rice shipments to Hawaii and arrangements were made for ships enough to take care of the Hawaiian trade. By the end of September, therefore, all fear of a rice “famine” had disappeared.

In the spring of 1918, when the rice situation first began to cause serious concern, Food Administrator Child appointed twelve prominent Japanese citizens as members of an advisory committee on food conservation. This committee rendered good service, but it had no official connection with the Territorial Food Commission and no authority to take any positive action for the control of prices or the distribution of food. At first there had been a Japanese member, A. K. Ozawa, on the Food Commission, but his death in June, 1917, left the Japanese without representation on that body. This fact occasioned some unfavorable comment by the Japanese press of Honolulu.

At about the same time that the Japanese government stopped the exportation of rice to Hawaii, the local Japanese community was aroused by charges that some dealers were profiteering in rice. On August 23, 1918, a meeting was held in the Asahi Theater under the auspices of the Japanese Association of Hawaii and appropriate resolutions were adopted. Subsequently a committee of five prominent Japanese called on Food Administrator Child and Governor McCarthy and urged that some plan be devised whereby they might cooperate effectively with the Food Commission among their own people. They said that while they could unofficially give much aid to the Commission, yet, unless they were clothed with the powers and authority which the food commission could confer upon them, their effectiveness would be impaired. It was accordingly arranged that a Japanese food commission of twelve members should be appointed, and finally that the Territorial Food Commission should appoint a sub-committee composed of two of its own members and three

members delegated from the Japanese food commission. This sub-committee, appointed in the early part of September, consisted of James D. Dole, John Waterhouse, Dr. I. Mori, G. Negoro, and K. Ishida. The Japanese food commission subsequently appointed a fair price committee to decide on fair prices for rice, soy, miso, and other Japanese foods.

#### TARO AND POI

Investigation of the taro and poi situation by the Territorial Food Commission in the spring of 1917 indicated that up to the beginning of that year there had been no material increase in the price of poi. G. N. Gere, an engineer for the Bishop Estate reported that "the use of taro as a food staple has fallen off to such an extent in the past three years that under ordinary conditions the growers have found it difficult to meet expenses. The area formerly devoted to taro in and around Honolulu has been greatly reduced. . . . The local demand for taro and poi has decreased on all the islands in much the same ratio as on Oahu, the use of flour in the poi being found cheaper and much more expedient as a labor saving device. Within the past year, probably 20,000 bags of taro grown on Keei, South Kona, Hawaii, and 15,000 bags grown at Waipio, Hawaii, have had to be left in the fields to rot as the money for which it would sell was not sufficient to pay the cost of marketing." The natural result of this was that growers of taro became discouraged and turned their attention to other things. In order to create a more steady demand, the Food Commission tried to popularize the use of taro as a vegetable.

From about the beginning of 1917 the price of poi began to rise. At that time it was about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  or 3 cents a pound. By September it was around 4 cents, and one year later it had gone as high as 8 cents. On May 13, 1918, the Territorial Food Commission wrote to Governor Pinkham that they were "endeavoring to cope with the taro and poi situation and in order to have a sufficient supply of poi so that the price may be kept within the reach of the general public at a reasonable figure, it

is absolutely essential to have a sufficient supply of taro and at the present time there does not seem to be sufficient taro being produced in the territory to fill the demand. We are under the impression that while the price of poi has been advancing rapidly, the taro producer has not benefitted proportionately from this advance and we are inclined to think that to meet this situation it may be necessary to guarantee to the growers a certain minimum price per hundred pounds for such taro as may be planted, commencing at an early date and continuing either for a two-year period or perhaps until a certain length of time after the war." For this purpose they suggested that a fund of \$50,000 be made available. At nearly the same time the *Star-Bulletin*, commenting editorially on the taro and poi situation, said that something must be done to prevent a possible poi famine and expressed the opinion that the Food Commission would be justified in asking the legislature for a revolving fund to guarantee taro growers a reasonable profit. It was in part to meet this situation that the legislature, as previously noted, placed at the disposal of the governor a \$200,000 revolving fund known as the "War Food Supply Fund."

The Territorial Food Commission appointed a committee, consisting of Eben P. Low, Jonah Kumalae, and C. K. Ai, which made an exhaustive investigation of the taro and poi question during the summer of 1918. They discovered that there was a wide variation in the cost of producing taro and in the amount produced per acre. Mr. Low believed that the price of poi was higher than the conditions justified and urged, as a remedy, that the distribution of poi be controlled by the territory through the Territorial Marketing Commission. In September, at a conference between Mr. Low and the taro growers and poi dealers, it was agreed that the price of poi on the island of Oahu should be reduced from the current prices of 6 cents a pound wholesale and 8 1/4 cents retail to 5 cents wholesale and 6 1/4 cents retail; and the Food Commission passed a resolution fixing the prices at those figures. A few weeks later the taro and poi committee presented its report in which it recommended that the retail price of poi be fixed at 4½ pounds for 25 cents (5.55 cents

a pound) and that taro sell for \$2 a bag at the patch and \$2.25 at the factory (instead of \$3 as it had been); and these prices were established by resolution of the Commission. It was agreed that the new prices would go into effect November 15; before that date the Commission had rescinded all its price-fixing regulations as a result of the decision of the Supreme Court in the McCandless case, but it was reported that the producers and dealers would adhere to the new schedule and would not take advantage of the decision in order to raise prices.

It was noticed above that the Hawaiians and other users of poi had begun the practice of mixing flour with their poi. This fact came to the front when the Food Administration promulgated the regulation requiring that wheat flour should be sold only with an equal quantity of some substitute. The Hawaiians bought flour to mix with their poi and had no use for the substitutes; the regulation, therefore, seemed to be a hardship and to result in waste rather than saving. Mayor Fern and Governor Pinkham championed this view of the matter and urged that the Hawaiians be given credit for taro as a substitute and not be required to buy other substitutes when they bought wheat flour; but Food Administrator Child pointed out that the object of the regulation was to save wheat and he insisted that it was no greater hardship for the Hawaiians to use wheat flour substitutes in their poi than it was for others to use them in their bread. In order to determine whether substitutes could be used in poi, practical experiments were made by the Board of Health and the College of Hawaii. These experiments showed that some of the substitutes could be very satisfactorily used; barley flour was particularly good, being in some respects superior to wheat flour as a poi extender. No modification was made in the 50-50 rule.

## CHAPTER XVII

# THE SUGAR INDUSTRY AND GENERAL ECONOMIC CONDITIONS

### WAR AND THE SUGAR INDUSTRY

IN THE summer of 1914 the sugar industry of Hawaii—and consequently the entire economic life of the territory—was facing what promised to be one of the most critical periods in its history. Not only was the price of sugar low—during most of July raw sugar sold for 3.26 cents per pound in New York—but there lay just ahead the prospect, decreed by act of Congress, of the complete removal of the tariff on sugar, taking away the strong support which had protected the Hawaiian industry for nearly forty years and which had enabled it to accomplish a phenomenal growth. This disheartening prospect was caused by the enactment of the Underwood Tariff Law within a few months after the Democratic party came into power in 1913. At the beginning of 1914 the tariff on sugar imported from Cuba, which island furnished more than half the total sugar consumed in the United States and was the only foreign country from which any considerable amount of sugar was imported, was 1.348 cents per pound. The Underwood Law made the duty on Cuban sugar 1.0048 cents per pound for a period of two years from May 1, 1914, and provided that sugar should be admitted into the United States entirely free of duty beginning May 1, 1916. “Free sugar” was a menace to the very existence of the entire domestic sugar industry of the United States; and nowhere else was it so much to be feared as in Hawaii, where nearly the whole economic structure was based on sugar.

The war completely altered the situation. By the middle of August the price of raw sugar had gone up to more than 6½ cents a pound, double what it was in the middle of July. It soon receded from that high level, but during the last five months

of 1914 the average price was well above 4 cents. In 1915 the average price was 4.65 cents per pound; and in 1916 it was 5.76 cents. This meant prosperity—very great prosperity—for Hawaii. In an earlier chapter it was pointed out how this unexpected good fortune was used as one of the most effective arguments in favor of the various war relief movements which were started during the early war years—it afforded both the means and the inclination for the generous response that was given to those appeals.

Not only did the war raise the price of sugar, it also removed the menace of "free sugar." The general disturbance of world trade caused such a reduction in the income of the federal government that the treasury found itself confronted with a huge deficit. It was imperatively necessary to raise more money, and since the tariff on sugar was one of the most effective revenue producers, a widespread demand arose for the repeal of the free sugar clause of the Underwood Law. The movement received the endorsement of the Secretary of the Treasury and the President, and the repeal was accomplished by the enactment into law of the Kitchin bill, which was signed by President Wilson on April 27, 1916, three days before the free sugar clause was to have gone into operation.

The benefits of the higher sugar prices were widely diffused and were enjoyed by all classes of the population. The plantation laborer's share came in the form of larger bonus payments. The sliding scale bonus system was introduced by the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association in 1912. "Under this plan, prior to April 1, 1916, each wage hand working on an average twenty days each month for the plantation during the preceding year, earning \$24 or less a month, was paid [in addition to his wages] 1 per cent of his earning for every \$1 that the price of sugar rose above \$70 a ton." During the first year in which this system was in operation (ten months from January 1 to October 31, 1912), the bonus rate was 13 per cent and the total amount paid was \$335,933.43. The low price of raw sugar throughout 1913 and the first half of 1914 resulted in a marked reduction in the bonus, so that for the year ending October 31, 1913, the rate was



only 1 per cent, and for the year ending October 31, 1914, 5 per cent. War's effect on the price of sugar was felt throughout the whole of the next year, and the bonus rate for the twelve months ending October 31, 1915, was 20 per cent and the amount paid was \$825,451.84.

In the spring of 1916 a demand arose for an extension of the bonus system in two directions: (1) to increase the rate; and (2) to make it apply to laborers working on contracts as well as to those working for day wages. There were two distinct causes for this demand. The primary one was the general increase in the cost of living, which was directly attributable to the European war. The secondary cause was the knowledge by the workers of the prosperity brought to the sugar industry by the rising price of raw sugar. The result was a revision of the bonus plan, effective April 1, 1916. The rate was increased to  $1\frac{1}{2}$  per cent for each dollar that the price of raw sugar rose above \$70 per ton; and the system was extended to include short term and cultivating contractors who worked not less than twenty days per calendar month in the case of men or fifteen days in the case of women. Under this revised scheme the bonus rate for the year ending October 31, 1916, was 52.95 per cent and the amount paid was \$4,003,684.99. For the year ending October 31, 1917, the rate was 78 per cent and the amount paid was approximately \$7,000,000.

The price of raw sugar continued to rise, though with considerable fluctuation, until it reached its peak,  $7\frac{3}{4}$  cents per pound, in the middle of August, 1917. At that time the national government, through Food Administrator Herbert Hoover and in cooperation with the British and French governments through the International Sugar Committee, undertook to stabilize the price of sugar at a figure that would be fair to the consumer and yet insure maximum production. Voluntary price agreements were made with the domestic beet sugar producers and the Louisiana cane sugar producers; and finally, on December 24, 1917, an agreement was made with the Cuban sugar interests, by which the price of raw sugar delivered in New York was fixed at a small fraction over 6 cents per pound. This price

continued in effect until the latter part of 1918 and applied to practically all of the 1918 crop.

In view of the continued rise in the price of sugar during the first eight months of 1917 and the steadily mounting cost of living, an agitation for higher wages for plantation laborers was started in the fall of that year, fostered principally by the Japanese newspapers in the territory. To this agitation the sugar planters replied that the treatment accorded plantation laborers was fair and the wages as high as circumstances warranted. The cost of production had risen more rapidly than the price of sugar, and in addition, war taxes were bound to cut heavily into the profits. Another disturbing factor was a severe drouth which prevailed through the summer and early fall of 1917. In confirmation of this view of the matter, a decline was noted in the market price of the stock in various sugar companies and in the amount of dividends paid. The higher wage movement culminated in a series of formal "requests"—not demands—to the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association, asking for higher wages or a change in the bonus system which would allow a larger number of laborers to participate in it (by reducing the number of days' work required in a month and by allowing a bonus to those who did not continue on the same plantation to the end of the bonus year). The question of wages and bonus was considered by the planters at their meeting in December. No change was made in the scale of wages, but the bonus schedule was revised, the revision being downward, however, instead of upward. This was done by providing that the bonus should begin with the price of raw sugar at \$85 per ton instead of \$71. In explanation of this action the Association issued the following statement:

"Since the European war started conditions have radically changed and the entry of the United States into the struggle has been followed by a heavy increase in all of the expenses of the plantations. During the past two years, by reason of the war, the cost of producing sugar in Hawaii has increased in excess of \$25 per ton. In addition to this the plantations must face a large increase of freight rates on sugar as well as all materials

imported, and must also pay income and war taxes which will amount to at least twenty-five per cent of their profits."

Under the revised schedule, with the price of raw sugar stabilized at 6 cents per pound, the bonus rate for the year ending October 31, 1918, was 57 per cent and the amount paid was about \$5,500,000. Governmental regulation continued throughout 1918 and was further developed by the formation (in July of that year) of the Sugar Equalization Board with a capital of \$5,000,000 subscribed from the President's emergency fund. This Board bought outright the entire Cuban crop of 1918-1919 and fixed the price of raw sugar at 7.28 cents per pound. With this price prevailing through most of the year, the bonus rate for the year ending October 31, 1919, was 87 per cent and the amount paid was about \$8,700,000.

Government control was removed at the end of 1919 and the sugar industry in 1920 experienced the most spectacular and chaotic year in its history. Frenzied buying induced by a belief that there was a shortage of sugar, forced the price upward until in the middle of May raw sugar was selling for the astounding price of 23½ cents a pound. This brought a flood of sugar into the United States from all parts of the world and by the end of the year the price was back to about five cents. The bonus rate for plantation laborers averaged 276 per cent for the year; in some months it reached as high as 500 per cent. The amount paid on account of the bonus for the year ending October 31, 1920, was \$29,321,011.46. It was during this year that the industry in Hawaii suffered its most serious labor difficulty, a strike of Japanese laborers which affected directly only the Oahu plantations but was supported by nearly the entire Japanese community in the territory. The strike was a failure as far as its immediate object was concerned, but it entailed a loss of over \$12,000,000 on the plantations. This loss was pooled and distributed among all the companies in the association.

From this brief review it will be seen that the war was on the whole of great benefit to the Hawaiian sugar industry, which enjoyed a rising average price for its product from the middle of 1914 for a period of six years. But from the very beginning of

the period the higher price was in part and to an increasing extent discounted by the growing expense of carrying on the business. This was especially and most noticeably the case after the United States entered the war. In addition to the heavy taxes, war conditions threw into high relief the characteristic difficulties which the sugar industry has to contend with in Hawaii—the long distance to its market and consequent dependence on ocean transportation, and the high cost of production due to the necessity of cultivating, fertilizing, and irrigating the crop and to the relatively high priced and uncertain labor supply. The three problems which caused the greatest amount of anxiety were the problem of shipping, the problem of fertilizer and fuel, and the problem of labor.

#### THE PROBLEM OF SHIPPING

Prior to the beginning of the European war, Hawaii's transportation needs for both passengers and freight were cared for principally by two companies, the Matson Navigation Company and the American-Hawaiian Steamship Company. The bulk of the passenger business and the carriage of freight to and from San Francisco was handled by the Matson company; while freight to and from the Atlantic ports and from Puget Sound was carried in vessels of the American-Hawaiian Company. In addition to these essentially Hawaiian lines, there were half a dozen trans-Pacific lines on various routes which touched at Honolulu, carrying freight and passengers to and from foreign ports in Canada, Australia, and the Orient.

Hawaii's sugar crop was divided between refineries in California and refineries on the Atlantic Coast (New York and Philadelphia), about three-fifths of the total going to the former and two-fifths to the latter. Shipments to California were carried in Matson ships, while those to Atlantic ports were taken east through the Panama Canal by the American-Hawaiian fleet. This latter arrangement was interfered with by the closing of the Panama Canal in the fall of 1915 and by the reduction, because of the war, in tonnage available for the world's

commerce. At the beginning of 1916 the American-Hawaiian Steamship Company arranged to carry the eastern sugar shipments by two of its large vessels, the *Mexican* and *Texan*, to San Francisco and thence overland by rail to Philadelphia and New York, all other vessels of that line being withdrawn from the Hawaiian trade and placed in service on the Atlantic. This plan was followed in handling the 1916 and 1917 crops, although a small quantity in each year went through the Canal, some of it (in the fall of 1917) being transshipped at San Francisco on vessels that were being withdrawn from the Pacific by the United States Shipping Board for use on the Atlantic. The Matson ships transported to San Francisco part of the sugar consigned to eastern refineries.

Up to the time the United States entered the war, while ocean freight rates went up and commerce in the Pacific was somewhat disturbed, there was no serious shortage of ships for the Hawaiian trade. And during 1917, although there were disquieting reports from time to time, no particular trouble was experienced in getting the sugar crop to market in good season. As early as the middle of June of that year it was reported that the government was about to take over the two biggest ships of the Matson fleet, the *Maui* and the *Matsonia*. This brought forth a protest from Delegate Kalaniana'ole to the Shipping Board and a cable message from Governor Pinkham to the federal authorities. It was pointed out that the national government had asked Hawaii to increase her export of staple food (sugar) to the mainland; but if these ships were taken off the island run, it would not only lessen the export of sugar but would seriously cripple island trade in general and impose an undeserved hardship on the people of Hawaii. It turned out that the report was erroneous, and assurance was given that the Matson ships would not be taken except in case of great emergency and that even in such case, other tonnage would be supplied to care for the vital transportation needs of the territory.

On October 15 the United States Shipping Board requisitioned the entire fleet of the Matson Navigation Company with the exception of the motor bark *Annie Johnson*, and after that date the ships were operated by the company for the Shipping Board. About ten days later orders were received at San Francisco to dispatch the *Maui*, *Matsonia*, and *Wilhelmina* to Atlantic ports at the earliest possible date, and the three ships were withdrawn from the Hawaiian run after their November sailings from Honolulu. These ships were particularly valuable for the service to which they were assigned, for Captain Matson had seen to it that they were so built as to make them easily adaptable for use as troop ships or auxiliary naval vessels. They were in transport service on the Atlantic from the spring of 1918 to the fall of 1919, each one making more than a dozen trans-Atlantic round trips. Before the armistice they had many a thrilling experience, battling submarines and storms.

The two remaining passenger ships of the Matson line, the *Manoa* and *Lurline*, were put on the San Francisco-Manila run during the last half of 1918, making three voyages and calling at Honolulu both ways. Two small freighters of the same company, the *Hyades* and *Enterprise*, were taken from the island trade for government service between October, 1918, and April, 1919. The entire fleet of the American-Hawaiian Steamship Company, including the two ships which had been left in the Pacific to carry sugar from Hawaii to San Francisco, were pressed into government service. The *Sierra* of the Oceanic Steamship Company was sent to the Atlantic to serve as a transport. In brief, the Pacific was stripped bare of every American vessel that was at all suitable for the Atlantic service.

As a substitute for the passenger accommodations on the *Maui*, *Matsonia*, and *Wilhelmina*, the Shipping Board assigned to the Matson Navigation Company the two coastwise steamers *Governor* and *President*. These ships had large passenger capacity but they were not sufficiently supplied with suitable conveniences, such as bathrooms, etc., for so long a run as that between the islands and the coast and they had very little cargo

space. After each of them had made about five trips they were withdrawn by the government. A small Shipping Board steamer, the *Sachem*, with limited passenger accommodations, was then assigned to the Matson Company. The suspension of the coast-wise shipping law, thereby allowing foreign ships to carry passengers and freight between American ports, relieved the situation to some extent by permitting Japanese and Dutch steamers to engage in the trade between Hawaii and the mainland.

To supply the cargo space needed to carry general freight to the islands and to transport Hawaii's sugar and pineapple crops to the mainland, the Shipping Board turned over to the Matson Company a large number and varied assortment of small vessels. A number of square rigged sailing ships of the Alaska packing fleet were sent down during the winter of 1917-1918. A score or so of wooden steamers, built on the Pacific Coast for the Emergency Fleet Corporation, were assigned to the Hawaiian run from time to time as they were completed. Five large Norwegian motor ships were utilized as sugar carriers in the fall of 1918. By the last of August, 1918, the Matson Navigation Company was operating a total of more than thirty Shipping Board vessels, the greater part of them being small wooden steamers. During that month a record was established in the shipping of more than 100,000 tons of raw sugar from the territory. All available cargo space on army transports was pressed into service to relieve the freight situation; and foreign ships were also of some assistance.

One interesting incident, resulting in part at least from the general derangement of shipping in the Pacific, was the allocation of some 35,000 tons of the 1918 Hawaiian sugar crop to refineries in British Columbia. These refineries depended largely on Fiji for their raw sugar, but lack of bottoms interfered with that supply. Hence, in accordance with the agreement by the allied nations for the disposition of sugar in a manner that would best serve their mutual interests, it was decided to send a small part of the Hawaiian crop to the Vancouver refineries. This served the additional purpose of re-

ducing the amount of raw sugar that had to be hauled across the United States and thus aided, to a small degree, in relieving the freight congestion on the mainland.

The United States Shipping Board fully redeemed its pledge to take care of the absolute needs of the islands in the matter of transportation, but the people of Hawaii, in common with those on the mainland, had to put up with some inconvenience and a good many annoyances. The islands were much better provided with cargo space than they were with passenger accommodations. In the latter half of 1918, especially, there was considerable congestion in passenger traffic. This meant, of course, that Hawaii lost some lucrative tourist business.

During 1919 conditions were much the same as in 1918. After the signing of the armistice a strong effort was made by the Honolulu Chamber of Commerce, the Hawaii Promotion Committee and other local interests to obtain the release of ships for the island trade, both freight and passenger; but the government was not in position to afford much relief before the beginning of 1920. The *Maui*, *Matsonia*, and *Wilhelmina* were turned back to the Matson Navigation Company in the fall of 1919. The *Maui* arrived at Honolulu on November 21, the *Matsonia* on January 7, 1920, and the *Wilhelmina* on March 16. The delay in the case of the *Wilhelmina* was due to the shipyard strike in California, where she was overhauled and reconditioned. For the same reason the *Maui* was put into service for a time practically without refitting and was then taken off the run temporarily for reconditioning after the return of the *Matsonia*. The latter ship was refitted and overhauled at Newport News, Virginia, before being sent back to the Pacific. The return of the Matson fleet restored local shipping to something like its pre-war condition. The American-Hawaiian Steamship Company did not come back into the island trade, but the loss from that fact was soon made up in other ways.

#### THE PROBLEM OF FUEL AND FERTILIZER

The problem of fuel and fertilizer was closely related to that of shipping. In the case of fuel it was, in fact, essentially a



shipping problem. Hawaii has no natural fuel supply and must therefore depend upon imported coal and crude oil. Local industries required adequate supplies of both in order to maintain production. In addition, coal was needed to fill the bunkers of steamships which made Honolulu a port of call. The latter business, which was in the hands of the Inter-Island Steam Navigation Company, was interrupted for a period of about three months just after the United States entered the war, but an appeal to the Shipping Board resulted in the release of coal carriers sufficient to keep up the local supply. In the summer and fall of 1917 there seemed to be danger of a fuel oil famine. Delegate Kalanianaʻole wrote a letter to Federal Food Administrator Herbert Hoover, in which, after pointing out clearly and forcefully Hawaii's absolute need of fuel oil, he added:

"The federal government has refused to call to the colors Hawaii's militia and up to this time no demand has been made on the territory for its quota of draft men for the National Army. The fact of the matter is, the federal government is demanding of Hawaii increased food production. The war department informs me that its failure to call the militia to the colors is due to the fact that it believed it the best policy to hold all available men in the territory for economic reasons. As Hawaii must plow, it is the duty of the federal government to make sure that her endeavors for increased food production are not nullified by the stoppage or curtailment of her needed supply of fuel oil."

The Territorial Food Commission wrote to Mr. Hoover along the same line and said, "A failure of our fuel oil supply . . . would shortly paralyze our industries. Coal is not available as a substitute and our wood supply is too limited to begin to fill the gap and the destruction of our native forests and watersheds for any purpose would be an irredeemable crime."

Mr. Hoover and the Secretary of Agriculture saw the force of these arguments and the Shipping Board was prevailed upon to see that Hawaii was kept supplied with the necessary fuel.

The fertilizer problem did not begin to cause serious concern until the spring of 1918. At that time a shortage of nitrate loomed up as a possibility in the near future. Of this essential ingredient, which was imported from Chile, Hawaii used about 40,000 tons a year. Failure of this supply would mean a great reduction in the sugar output. In this case a shortage of ships was only one element in the problem. A second element was the fact that the government required immense quantities of nitrate in the manufacture of ammunition, and that demand took priority of all others. The matter was presented to Secretary of the Interior Lane while he was in the territory in June, 1918; and the situation was brought to the attention of the federal government through other channels also. The result was that Hawaii's case was recognized as a just one and a supply of nitrate was assured to care for her minimum requirements.

#### THE PROBLEM OF LABOR

In an earlier chapter attention was called to the intimate connection between the National Guard and the labor supply, and also to the dilemma—"sugar or soldiers?"—which confronted the territory just after the United States entered the war. The question of whether the National Guard would be called into active service in the spring or summer of 1917, the effect which such action would have on the sugar industry, and the steps taken by the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association and the Territorial Food Commission to avert the disastrous consequences of the anticipated mobilization have been fully discussed in Chapter II. It is sufficient at this point to note the fact that the National Guard was not called out and Hawaii was not called upon to furnish a quota of drafted men during that year.

There was no labor shortage in 1917. At the meeting of the Planters' Association in December, 1917, President E. D. Tenney said, in his opening address, "Generally speaking the labor supply has been sufficient to meet the needs of the plantation. The large earnings possible under the prevailing system of

compensation have attracted to the plantations a large portion of our floating population, with the result that the aggregate number of laborers is greater than heretofore."

With the mobilization of the National Guard and the call of the draft in June and July, 1918, the labor supply was seriously depleted. The president of the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association, in his address at the annual meeting in December, stated that the plantations were then approximately 4,000 men short of their normal requirements. This shortage was due in part to the lack of ships. Laborers were available in the Philippines but they could not be brought to Hawaii because transportation facilities were not obtainable. For the same reason other possible sources of supply could not be drawn upon. In the address just referred to, the president of the Planters' Association said:

"In December [1917] the United States Department of Labor offered to supply us with labor from Porto Rico, the recruiting to be carried on by them, we to pay all expenses. An investigation of the conditions in Porto Rico and the possibility of securing good agricultural laborers from there was made by the Director of the Labor Bureau [of the H. S. P. A., Royal D. Mead,] and upon his recommendation, the Trustees accepted the offer of the Department, but shipping conditions became so difficult and the demand on the mainland for labor so great that the Department found it impossible to carry out its program."

The demand for labor on the mainland and the high wages offered were a magnet which drew a good many laborers away from Hawaii. In the fall of 1918 attention was called to the fact that there was under way a veritable exodus of Portuguese from the territory, a majority of them going to the fruit and lumber districts of California.

The labor shortage continued until after the demobilization of the 1st and 2nd Hawaiian Regiments in the spring and summer of 1919. At the annual meeting of the Planters' Association in December of that year, President E. H. Wodehouse briefly reviewed the labor situation: "Labor conditions during

the year have been abnormal, and during the early months considerable shortage existed. This was due to the large number of men drafted into the army from the plantations, but relief came on the demobilization of the troops, which enabled a large number of men representing many races to return to work on the plantations. It is pleasing to note that so large a number of the men honorably discharged from the army returned to the plantations where they were employed when the draft was called."

The sugar plantations were not alone in being handicapped by the shortage of labor. The pineapple industry and practically all lines of business in the territory were more or less affected by it. In anticipation of a shortage and during the period of its continuance, approximately a year, various plans were put into practice or were proposed for meeting the difficulty. In many clerical positions women took the places of men who were drawn into the army or navy. Some firms simply divided the extra work among the employees who remained and got along the best they could with fewer hands. Merchants reduced their delivery service and asked their customers to carry their parcels instead of having them delivered. Some of the least essential kinds of work were left undone. A certain measure of relief was afforded by the organization of the Boys' Working Reserve. A movement was launched looking to the importation, for a limited time, of a large number of agricultural laborers from China.

#### THE BOYS' WORKING RESERVE

The United States Boys' Working Reserve was an enrolled civilian army of the patriotic youth of the country between the ages of sixteen and twenty-one, organized under the United States Department of Labor to help the nation where most needed—in field or factory—in winning the war. On the mainland the Reserve was organized in 1917 to help fill the gap caused by the calling of men from the farms for war service. In Hawaii the organization took place in the spring of 1918. W. R. Farrington, business manager of the Honolulu *Star-Bulletin*, received an appointment from Washington as director of the Hawaiian

Division of the Reserve. Jay O. Warner, citizenship secretary of the Honolulu Y. M. C. A., was appointed executive secretary and devoted his time to the work for a period of several months. The Y. M. C. A., the school department, the newspapers, and a considerable number of industrial leaders took an active interest in the movement. County directors were appointed as follows: Oahu, K. C. Bryan; Maui and Molokai, John Watt, Jr.; Kauai, C. F. Loomis; Hawaii (Hilo and Hamakua), W. W. G. Moir, (Kohala), P. W. P. Bluett, (Kona and Kau), J. H. Midkiff. Besides these directors, 185 enrolling officers were officially commissioned, of whom 175 were teachers and principals of schools and 10 represented industries.

The work of the organization consisted in finding jobs for the boys and boys for the jobs and in fitting the two together. The boys responded with a fine patriotic enthusiasm. In order to utilize the services of those below sixteen who wished to do their bit but who could not be included in the national Reserve, the Hawaii Junior Working Reserve was created. An informal report by Executive Secretary Warner gives the following résumé:

"The Boys' Working Reserve forces have been applied to the pineapple canneries, sugar plantations, iron works, coffee companies, and naval station in considerable numbers and many have worked individually or in small groups. Three camps were maintained for a period of from six to ten weeks, the Korean school, the Moiliili school on this island, and Camp Baldwin on Kauai. Large groups were also transported to and from homes to work during the summer.

"Camp Baldwin at Makaweli has been in the limelight particularly since the conditions were unique and the whole thing in Hawaii being regarded as an experiment. One hundred boys and four lunas were sent from Honolulu to this one camp. The boys were selected from McKinley, Iolani, Normal, Royal and Central Grammar Schools with a few who were not attending school. The camp was set up at the Makaweli school grounds and the details involved make an interesting story alone. Suffice

it to say here that 90 boys remained through July and 80 to the end of camp, covering a period of eight weeks. They prepared, planted, and irrigated about 150 acres of cane besides other work assigned from time to time. The average time worked in July was 22 days, notwithstanding a siege of influenza the first week, while for the month of August the boys made nearly 100 per cent good. Several of the boys were promoted to lunas and most of them made their bonus. The nationalities represented were American (white), Chinese, Japanese, German, Portuguese, Hawaiian, Negro, and Part-Hawaiian. The results of discipline, regularity, recreation, work, instruction, and play all combined had a marked influence for good not only on the camp morale but on individual boys."

It was estimated that the Boys' Working Reserve movement led about 5,000 boys (and girls) to do some productive work during the summer of 1918. Effective aid was given to the sugar plantations, which was of special value in view of the existing shortage of labor. This fact was testified to by a request from the sugar planters, with the backing of the Territorial Food Commission, to the school department for a postponement of the opening of the schools until the beginning of October, in order that the older school children might assist during September in finishing up the season's work on the plantations. The request was not granted, but it was decided that children over fourteen years of age in rural districts might be excused from school attendance during September if they were employed in useful agricultural industries. The Boys' Working Reserve was in operation again during the summer of 1919.

#### CHINESE LABOR MOVEMENT

The movement to bring about the introduction of Chinese labor was not originally a war proposition, it was not promoted by the sugar planters, and was not, at first, designed to benefit the sugar industry directly. It was inaugurated in 1915 by local Chinese business men and societies for the avowed purpose of rehabilitating the rice industry in Hawaii. To aid them in pro-

moting the movement the Chinese societies employed W. H. Hindle. The general idea was presented in the spring of 1915 to a group of Congressmen who were visiting in the territory. Subsequently a petition was prepared and sent to Washington. Mr. Hindle made several trips to Washington and spent considerable time there doing what he termed "missionary work" for the proposition, but very little publicity was given to the matter in Hawaii until after the United States entered the war.

Before any action could be expected from Congress it was necessary to show that body that the introduction of Chinese labor was actually desired by the local legislature and the people of the territory. Accordingly a concurrent resolution was introduced in the 1917 session of the legislature "requesting the Congress of the United States to enact a law under which a limited number of Chinese laborers may be admitted, with proper restrictions, into the Territory of Hawaii," for the purpose of cultivating land adapted to the raising of rice and other food products, much of which land was, for lack of suitable labor, lying idle and unproductive. While this resolution was pending in the legislature, the United States entered the war and public attention was directed to the critical food situation confronting the territory. The resolution was adopted and sent on to Washington, its adoption undoubtedly being facilitated by the evident importance of increasing and safeguarding the food supply.

In response to the resolution of the legislature Delegate J. K. Kalanianaʻole introduced in Congress a resolution (H. Res. No. 93) "that the Congress of the United States by apt legislation provide for the admission into the Territory of Hawaii from the Republic of China (without right to proceed to any other part of the United States), under such terms and conditions and subject to such rules and restrictions as it deems advisable, thirty thousand Chinese laborers." The preamble of the resolution outlined the argument in its favor. The resolution was not on its face a war measure and therefore could not be taken up by Congress during 1917. In October of that year Mr. Hindle endeavored to get an endorsement of the resolution from the Chamber

of Commerce of Honolulu, but at that time the committee of the Chamber to which the matter was referred thought the Chamber of Commerce ought not to go on record in asking Congress to modify any federal law for the exclusive benefit of this community. In January, 1918, the Delegate's resolution came on for a hearing before the House committee on immigration, and Mr. Hindle presented a statement and was cross-examined by members of the committee. On March 7 the committee decided to postpone action on the resolution until January, 1919.

In the summer of 1918 the possibility of a rice famine in Hawaii combined with the actual labor shortage, gave added force to the argument in favor of the admission of Chinese labor. Up to this time Mr. Hindle had been the most active agent in promoting the movement, and he stated repeatedly that he was working solely in the interest of the rice industry. But now the matter entered on a new phase. Several other men took up the fight, most conspicuous among them being W. H. McInerny, R. W. Shingle, and Frank E. Thompson. These men urged the importance of securing more laborers as a war measure in order not only to rehabilitate the rice industry but to insure the maximum production of sugar. For a time it was thought that the authority granted to the President by the Overman Act, recently passed by Congress, might be sufficient to enable him to bring about the desired object by executive proclamation; but all effort was finally centered upon support of Prince Kuhio's resolution.

The subject was again brought before the Chamber of Commerce where it was considered by committees and by the Chamber as a whole; and on September 25 a resolution was adopted by unanimous vote of the members present, memorializing Congress "to grant the territory relief from its present labor shortage by the passage of House Resolution 93." With the endorsement of the Chamber of Commerce the campaign was renewed in Washington, but it proved impossible to get any immediate action on the matter even in the form of committee hearings; and the signing of the armistice practically put an



end to the movement for the time being by taking away the most effective argument in favor of the proposition.

#### WAR PHASE OF THE HOMESTEAD QUESTION

Generally speaking, homesteading in Hawaii has been a very different thing from homesteading as understood and practiced in the mainland portion of the United States. On the mainland a homestead was a piece of virgin land which the homesteader developed by his own efforts and resources. In Hawaii a homestead was ordinarily carved out of what had been intensively cultivated sugar land. The result was that homesteads in Hawaii were very frequently taken up for speculative purposes by persons who had no intention of themselves occupying and cultivating the land. The greater part of the arable public land in the territory was under long leases to the plantations, and opportunities for obtaining homesteads occurred chiefly at the time of expiration of such leases. It happened that leases on a large acreage of valuable land were to expire in the years 1917, 1918, and 1919. Under the Organic Act it was mandatory on the territorial government to open for homestead entry any available public land upon the petition of twenty-five or more citizens. The government had virtually no discretion in the allotment of homesteads and no authority to select homesteaders on the basis of responsibility or fitness. After the land became available for homesteading it was necessary to make surveys, divide the land into lots, construct roads, hold a drawing for selection of lots, and attend to all the numerous details of converting highly developed plantation land into homesteads. This could not be done before the lease expired nor further until the lessee had taken off the crop that was on the land at the time the lease expired. In practice this meant a serious loss in sugar production. Homesteaders who took up cane land nearly always continued the raising of cane. If the lessee left ratoons on the ground, these were almost certain to be overgrown with weeds and the ratoon crop damaged or destroyed before the homesteader could get on the land. If a plant crop was to be put in, the work was delayed for months beyond the proper time.

When the war came on, with its demand for maximum food production (which in Hawaii meant, among other things, maximum sugar production), the defects of the homestead system stood out in glaring relief. In view of the large amount of valuable land that was to be available for homestead entry during the war years, those who were anxious to have the territory do its full duty in the time of crisis looked about for some method by which the anticipated loss of sugar could be averted. Quite aside from the war emergency, there was a general feeling that the land laws of the territory needed some revision, but this could be accomplished only by action of Congress; although the President could, by virtue of his war powers, temporarily suspend the operation of the laws in order to insure maximum food production.

Agitation of the public lands and homestead question began long before the war. One scheme was to have legislative control of the public lands vested in the local legislature rather than in Congress. Shortly before the United States entered the war a bill for that purpose was introduced in Congress by Delegate Kalanianaʻole. In the regular session of the territorial legislature in 1917 the whole subject was given extended consideration, but the two houses were unable to agree on what they should ask of Congress. The House of Representatives adopted a concurrent resolution (H. C. R. No. 10) introduced by Speaker H. L. Holstein, requesting Congress to pass the Delegate's bill. The Senate tabled the House resolution and at the same time adopted a concurrent resolution of its own (S. C. R. No. 14), introduced by President C. F. Chillingworth, requesting Congress to amend the land laws of the territory in certain specified ways which would, substantially, permit the continued leasing of part of the public land to corporations and would also give the territorial officials some discretion in the granting of homesteads. The Senate resolution had a distinct war angle, but it was tabled by the House on the ground that its objects were fully covered in a resolution previously adopted by the House, the reference evidently being to the House concurrent resolution (No. 10) which had been tabled by the Senate.

Soon after the adjournment of the legislature, Governor Pinkham sent a long telegram to Secretary of the Interior Franklin K. Lane (May 13, 1917), in which he urged the elimination of the "twenty-five petitioner clause" of the public lands section of the Organic Act and recommended placing the public lands for six years or longer under control of the territorial commissioner of public lands and the governor, with the proviso that no lands be sold or leased without approval of the Secretary of the Interior. Governor Pinkham had previously (September 18, 1916) written to Secretary Lane a long and pessimistic review of the homestead question. Twelve days after the date of his first telegram, the governor sent to Secretary Lane a second one, in which he endorsed the amendments proposed by Senate Concurrent Resolution No. 14, saying that they would furnish a permanent solution of the land problem if they could be carried through Congress; if they could not be carried, then the war and food conditions demanded action practically along the lines indicated in his telegram of May 13. The commissioner of public lands, B. G. Rivenburg, visited Washington during the summer in the interest of this and other matters; but no change was accomplished during 1917 either in the land laws or in the homestead policy of the territory.

In the spring of 1918 a number of developments foreshadowed some decisive action. In the first place, public interest became more acute, resulting in constant and constructive discussion of the question, accompanied by a general demand that something should be done. In this phase of the matter the newspapers, the Chamber of Commerce, and the Hawaiian Vigilance Corps took a leading part. Second, a change in the territorial administration was announced. Governor Pinkham's four-year term expired in November, 1917; and after a long delay President Wilson appointed as his successor the territorial treasurer, Colonel Charles J. McCarthy. It was arranged that the new governor should take office in the latter part of June, 1918. Third, Governor Pinkham called a special session of the legislature to meet in May for the consideration of emergency measures made necessary by the war and by destructive storms in

certain parts of the territory. Fourth, it was announced that Secretary of the Interior Lane would visit Hawaii during the summer, one purpose of his visit being to study at first hand the land and homestead situation so that he might make some recommendation to the President.

Out of the general discussion of how to deal with the problem in such a way as to prevent a reduction in the sugar output, came the concrete suggestion that the homestead laws be suspended or the sugar producing lands be withdrawn from homestead entry for the duration of the war and two or three years following. This plan, however, met with the most serious opposition not only from would-be homesteaders but from many leaders in business and public affairs who pointed out that it was not wise to interfere in so drastic a fashion with such a well established American principle as that of homesteading and who furthermore expressed the opinion that it would be useless to ask the federal government to sanction such a step.

It was then proposed to devise some plan by which the land might be kept in cultivation during the interval between the expiration of the leases to the sugar companies and the time of actual taking possession by the homesteaders; and it was along this line that the problem was finally worked out. An attempt was made to have a law embodying this idea passed during the special session of the legislature in May, 1918, but it failed, the two houses being even more hopelessly at cross purposes than they were during the regular session of 1917. A bill was passed by the Senate but killed in the House by action upon it being postponed indefinitely. The House leaders declared that the bill did not sufficiently safeguard the interests of the homesteaders. The House then passed a concurrent resolution calling for a general investigation of the homestead question, but this resolution was promptly tabled by the Senate.

About two weeks after the adjournment of the legislature, Secretary of the Interior Lane arrived in Hawaii and visited the various islands, devoting his time especially to an investigation of the public land and homestead problem. The last important incident during his stay in the territory was the in-

inauguration of Governor McCarthy on June 22. On that occasion Secretary Lane delivered a carefully prepared address from which the following extracts indicate his conclusions and point to the policy adopted for dealing with the local situation.

"There has been a difference of opinion, much of it an honest difference, as to the possibility of applying the homestead law to sugar lands, but that experiment must be made. . . . And whatever opportunity remains with the limited amount of public land that you have should be availed of to make the experiment which the law requires. . . . There can be no question but that in following the law a risk is run and particularly is that true at this time when the country so gravely needs whatever food products these islands can produce. Unless the law is to be disregarded that risk must be taken, and if it is not taken now, when will the day of safety certainly come? No one can answer that question. As to those lands which are now subject to homesteading, and those which soon will be by the expiration of their leases, a policy has been devised which will make sure that these lands do not fall into idleness. This policy is based primarily upon the desire of the mill owners, their patriotic desire, as well as their selfish desire, that the lands upon which their mills are dependent be cultivated. It would be a crime, an unforgivable crime, to allow lands that can be used and are in crop to go uncultivated during the war. Homesteads must be made with such conditions as will enforce the meeting of this national necessity and those who would have the temerity to put in jeopardy the realization of the largest possible output, whether mill owners or homesteaders, could not be regarded as other than enemies of the public welfare."

Secretary Lane cabled his recommendations to President Wilson and the President, on June 24, signed a proclamation which, after reciting the necessity of securing an adequate supply of sugar and other food products as a war measure, went on as follows:

"Now therefore, I, Woodrow Wilson, President of the United States, by virtue of the powers conferred upon me by law, do hereby find and determine, and by this proclamation do announce

that it is essential in order to secure such adequate food supply to continue to the fullest extent possible the cultivation of all public lands in the Territory of Hawaii now under cultivation in sugar or other food products; and for the purpose of continuing such cultivation and of maintaining the production of all such food products the Commissioner of Public Lands of the Territory of Hawaii, with the approval of the governor, is hereby authorized and empowered to enter into all necessary contracts with the lessees of any of said government lands, the leases of which have expired or which, while this proclamation is in force, will expire, or with any other person, firm or corporation for the continued cultivation of said lands, until such time as the same shall be occupied and cultivated by homesteaders," the actual cost of such cultivation to be ultimately paid for by the homesteaders.

This proclamation was the basis for agreements which were made for the continued cultivation of lease-expired cane lands at Waiakea and elsewhere. The details of those agreements and the history of the homesteads which were made out of the lands in question lie outside the scope of the present volume.

## CHAPTER XVIII

### PROHIBITION AS A WAR MEASURE

#### THE PROHIBITION QUESTION IN HAWAII

**A**N earnest appeal for prohibition in Hawaii as a war measure was voiced by army officers within a few days after the United States entered the war. Major Charles S. Lincoln, Hawaiian Department officer in charge of militia affairs, said in a talk to the Honolulu Chamber of Commerce on April 9, 1917, "I'd like to see Hawaii close all saloons tomorrow. . . . We shall have a large number of young men in training, taken away, perhaps, from home influences. I would like to see prohibition in Hawaii on account of the military situation." On the same day, Brigadier General F. S. Strong, commander of the Hawaiian Department, in a statement to the Honolulu *Advertiser*, used these words:

"You can say for me that personally no one would be more delighted than I would be over the passage of some measure which would bring about bone-dry prohibition in this territory. As the commanding officer of this department I can not speak, but as Frederick Strong, and as an officer of the army I may say that fully ninety per cent of the difficulties we have to face in the handling of enlisted men . . . is traceable directly to the pernicious influence of the saloon. . . . I can imagine nothing better for the army here than the closing of all the saloons."

The importance of these statements lay in the fact that there were more than 8,000 regular soldiers stationed at the various posts on the island of Oahu; and at that time (middle of April, 1917) it was quite generally believed that the National Guard would be called into federal service before long.

Prohibition was not a new issue in Hawaii. On the contrary, it had been a live question for many years and at the beginning of 1917 a movement for prohibition of the liquor traffic in the

territory was very actively under way. Since the beginning of 1916 the Anti-Saloon League of Hawaii had kept a representative (Dr. John W. Wadman) in Washington in an effort to bring about prohibition in the islands by congressional enactment. In the regular session of the territorial legislature in the spring of 1917 the subject received considerable attention. Early in March the Senate passed a bill (S.B. No. 33) which provided for prohibition, subject to a referendum election to be held prior to the date when prohibition was to go into effect. In the House, consideration of this bill was indefinitely postponed on the stated ground that there was no constitutional authority for a referendum. The House then, on April 14, passed a bill (H. B. No. 383) which provided for a plebiscite on the subject of prohibition, to be followed by a special session of the legislature for the purpose of enacting a prohibition law in case the plebiscite favored such a measure. The Senate amended this bill by substantially inserting in it a large part of Senate Bill No. 33. On being returned to the House the amended bill was referred to the Judiciary Committee and no further action was taken upon it.

The entry of the United States into the war gave the question immediate local importance on the island of Oahu and a strong demand arose for some action that would curb the traffic in intoxicants. This was reflected in the legislature in the introduction of a concurrent resolution in the Senate (S. C. R. No. 13) requesting the various boards of liquor license commissioners to curtail the sale of intoxicants and to issue no licenses for the period following the end of June, 1917. A week later another resolution (S. C. R. No. 15) was introduced, at the request of the Anti-Saloon League, asking Congress to enact a prohibition law for Hawaii, the request being founded on the expressed belief that the local legislature did not have power to enact such a law. Both of these resolutions were tabled, the first in view of the action already taken on Senate Bill No. 33 and House Bill No. 383; in the case of the second resolution (No. 15), the committee report stated emphatically that the legislature had all necessary power to deal with the question.



In view of the war emergency and the rapid development of public sentiment, part of the Honolulu liquor dealers sent a communication to the Oahu board of liquor license commissioners offering to close the saloons at an earlier hour in the evening, if that was desired. The *Star-Bulletin* and the *Advertiser*, both of which ardently advocated prohibition, declared that the action of the liquor interests was simply a desperate attempt on their part to stave off the impending prohibition legislation. However that may be, the liquor license commissioners took the dealers at their word and on April 16 adopted regulations requiring all saloons (retail liquor dealers) to close at 7 p. m. and all wholesale liquor stores to close at 5 p. m.

The history of the prohibition question in the territorial legislature seemed to demonstrate the impossibility of getting any action there. Soon after the adjournment of the legislature the Anti-Saloon League of Hawaii announced its intention of carrying the fight back to Washington, where it had temporarily suspended its activities in order to give the local legislature a clear field for action on the question. The experience of the League in its efforts to bring about congressional action had by this time shown the impossibility of passing a straight prohibition law for the territory without a provision for a local referendum, and the League had therefore lined up behind a bill containing such a provision.

There was, however, very strong objection to congressional enactment of any kind of prohibition law for the territory on the ground that it was an encroachment on the principle of "home rule", which had been championed for many years by Delegate Kalaniana'ole and was tenaciously adhered to by most of the local leaders in industry as well as in politics. This idea came out very clearly in the committee report on Senate Concurrent Resolution No. 15, referred to above. The same objection was voiced in a meeting of the Honolulu Chamber of Commerce on April 18, 1917, when the Chamber voted by a heavy majority against endorsing Senate Concurrent Resolution No. 15; but at the same meeting the Chamber voted, with only one dissenting

vote, in favor of the enactment of a prohibition law by the territorial legislature.

#### DEVELOPMENT OF PUBLIC OPINION DURING 1917

Without the active support of Prince Kuhio and the endorsement of local business interests, there was little hope of any action by Congress. Within less than a year, however, developments in the situation on the island of Oahu brought both the Delegate and the local business interests to the point of urging Congress to pass a prohibition law for the territory.

The first factor which helped to bring about this change of sentiment was the failure of the legislature to act in the matter. A second, and perhaps the most important factor, was certain results which flowed from the federal Selective Service Law (approved May 18, 1917) as it operated under local conditions in Honolulu. Section 12 of that law made it unlawful to sell intoxicating liquor to any officer or member of the military forces of the United States while in uniform. One immediate result of the application of the law was the springing up of a rank crop of bootleggers who tempted the soldiers on every hand. Cheap rooming houses and low dives carried on an illicit traffic in defiance of the law. "Treating" of soldiers (not forbidden by the law) became a common practice, being in many cases a mere subterfuge by which the law was nullified. Hand in hand with the illicit supplying of liquor to service men went an increase in commercialized vice, a problem with which the better people of Honolulu had been struggling for years.

A feature of the situation to which attention was soon called was the discrimination which the law set up between soldiers and civilians. The *Advertiser*, on June 8, under the heading "Prohibition Should Be Fair", printed a long editorial on this phase of the question, in the course of which it said, "The *Advertiser* would not suggest that the law prohibiting the sale of intoxicants to soldiers be abridged in the slightest, nor its enforcement be anything less than absolute. It does suggest, however, that an effort be made to secure an executive order under the Selective

Service Act, whereby, for the duration of the war, every saloon and every other licensed place on Oahu be closed. Make the restrictions now applied to the soldier apply to everyone and in that way remove the discrimination. If it be good for our boys in uniform to forego the use of intoxicants during the war period, it is equally good for all the rest of us."

The local civil authorities seemed to be unable to cope with the situation. While General Strong continued in command of the Hawaiian Department his authority and influence were vigorously exercised in the direction of enforcement of the law in letter and in spirit, with good results; but Brigadier General J. P. Wisser, who had command during the fall of 1917 and the spring of 1918, assumed a different attitude. His view seemed to be that the enforcement of the law was exclusively a matter for the civil authorities, and he insisted upon a technical interpretation of the law which made its enforcement difficult in many cases. James Wakefield, chairman of the board of management of the Army and Navy Y. M. C. A., in a letter to Dr. John R. Mott, January 11, 1918, said: "While General Wisser may be technically correct in his attitude, the results of this attitude are unquestionably contrary to the Act of Congress passed May 18th, 1917. The cases of drunkenness among enlisted men and officers on the island of Oahu are more frequent than they were any time" prior to that date. The Women's War Work Council of Honolulu, writing about the same time to Raymond B. Fosdick, chairman of the Commission on Training Camp Activities, made this statement: "Vice conditions in the city are deplorable. Opium joints and houses of ill fame are running wide open; in spite of efforts to prevent the sale of liquor to soldiers, bootlegging and blind pigs flourish."

In the latter respect (i. e. commercialized vice), conditions became so bad that on January 22, 1918, General Wisser addressed a long communication to Mayor Fern on the subject and stated that if the conditions referred to were not promptly corrected, "the only course properly open to the department commander (in his opinion) is to forbid the troops to come to the

city at all." This ultimatum stirred the local authorities to vigorous action and General Wisser did not impose the threatened tabu.

It was generally recognized that the liquor traffic was the main root of all these evils. During the summer and fall of 1917 the Oahu board of liquor license commissioners adopted various regulations designed to check its worst features, but none of these struck at the heart of the difficulty. It gradually became evident to nearly all the responsible citizens of the territory that the only effective remedy for the intolerable situation was immediate and bone dry prohibition, the only hope for which lay in action by the federal government. To secure that action a campaign was carried on in Hawaii and in Washington along two lines, one with the object of getting the President to issue an order making the island of Oahu dry for the duration of the war—the Selective Service Law gave him authority to do this—and the other having for its goal prohibition for the whole territory by act of Congress.

#### PROHIBITION FOR OAHU BY PRESIDENTIAL ORDER

Prohibition for Oahu by order of the President was suggested almost as soon as the provisions of the Selective Service Law became known in the territory. The *Advertiser* (as shown above) and the *Star-Bulletin* both urged such a measure. Early in the summer (1917) the Anti-Saloon League wrote to President Wilson, describing the local situation and asking him to issue an order making Oahu dry. The League also wrote to the Secretary of War and to influential congressmen on the subject. On July 26 the President issued an order establishing a five-mile dry zone around all training camps, but this order had no effect on the situation in Honolulu.

About the end of 1917, after public sentiment had been thoroughly aroused by the conditions which had developed, a movement was launched to line up the three most representative and influential local organizations, the Chamber of Commerce, the Rotary Club, and the Ad Club, in support of an appeal to

the President. The leader in this movement was James Wakefield, ably seconded by Emil A. Berndt. A resolution urgently recommending that the President issue an order prohibiting, during the war, the sale of liquor in the City and County of Honolulu (i. e. the whole of the island of Oahu) was prepared and presented for adoption at a meeting of each organization. Ample publicity was given to the matter, with advance notice of intention to bring the resolution to vote, so that a full expression of public opinion might be brought out. The resolution came up for adoption in the Chamber of Commerce on January 7, 1918, in the Ad Club on January 9, and in the Rotary Club on January 10; and in each case the vote in favor of the resolution was unanimous.

Following this decisive expression of non-official public opinion, the influence of the governor of the territory and the commander of the Hawaiian Department of the army was thrown into the balance on the side of presidential action. On January 11, Governor Pinkham sent the following message to Secretary of the Interior Lane: "If you can induce the President or any federal authority to prohibit . . . liquor in this territory or any part of it I urge you to do so." The governor's message was referred to the War and Navy Departments. The adjutant general of the army then cabled to General Wisser asking what his recommendation would be from the military standpoint. His reply was: "Zone of prohibition . . . to include the whole of Oahu island earnestly recommended from military viewpoint. Prohibition should greatly facilitate carrying out the law." The Secretary of the Navy added his endorsement to the proposition.

Early in March President Wilson signed an order providing that "within Oahu alcoholic liquors . . . shall not be sold, bartered, given, or served . . . and to any place within said island shall not knowingly . . . be sent, shipped, transmitted, carried, or transported, except that this regulation shall not apply to the giving and serving of such liquors in a private home to members of the family and bona fide guests other than

•

members of the military forces or to the sending, shipping, transmitting, carrying, or transporting of such liquors to private homes for use as aforesaid, . . ." The order went into effect on April 10. Following its promulgation, the Kauai and Maui boards of liquor license commissioners announced that they would not renew or issue any liquor licenses for use on those islands after the end of June, 1918; but the Hawaii board declined to follow their example.

#### PROHIBITION BY ACT OF CONGRESS

Delegate Kalanianaʻole, returning from Washington at the end of August, 1917, expressed the opinion that prohibition for Hawaii by act of Congress would not come about unless there was "greater and more unanimous demand for it from the islands" than had been the case previously. He was not at that time in favor of congressional action; his statement and his attitude were a reflection of the state of opinion which had resulted in the refusal of the legislature to request congressional action and in the refusal of the Chamber of Commerce to endorse a request for such action. Prince Kuhio did not return to Washington for the opening of Congress in December, but remained in the territory until about the end of January, 1918. By that time the demand from the islands for congressional action had become overwhelmingly "greater and more unanimous" than had been the case previously.

On December 3, 1917, the *Star-Bulletin* published a long editorial on the subject "Public Sentiment and Prohibition," calling attention to the tide of public opinion that was rolling up behind the prohibition movement and commenting on the great change in that respect which had taken place since the early part of 1917. Toward the latter part of November the Anti-Saloon League began to circulate through the islands petitions asking Congress to pass a prohibition law for the territory. The object was to secure signatures of men prominent in local business, religious, educational, and charitable circles. The result was an impressive list of names which amounted virtually

to a roster of the leaders in those four lines of endeavor. It was apparent that the influential men of the territory were at last, for this one purpose, ready to lay aside the doctrine of "home rule."

At nearly the same time, another very important appeal to Congress was being gotten ready. The Ahahui Puuhonua o na Hawaii (Hawaiian Protective Association) adopted a set of resolutions and prepared a petition to Congress asking that body to pass a prohibition bill for the territory. Among the leaders in this movement were Rev. Akaiko Akana, John C. Lane, and Noa Aluli. These resolutions and petition placed the demand for prohibition squarely on the grounds of the welfare of the Hawaiian race and the importance of maximum war time efficiency, and contained this significant clause: "While we do believe in and adhere to the home-rule doctrine, we do recognize that the emergency occasioned by the war must be met now, and in order to accomplish it, the home-rule doctrine must be suspended." The petition was circulated on all the islands and received a large number of signatures.

Prince Kuhio himself was the president of the Ahahui Puuhonua o na Hawaii; and there is reason to believe that it was this appeal from his own people, for whose interests the Prince was intensely solicitous, that converted him to the cause of prohibition for the territory by congressional action. When he returned to Washington in February, 1918, it was with the full determination to support that cause with all his energy and influence. When the petition of the Hawaiian Protective Association went to Congress, his name headed the list of signers.

The work of the Anti-Saloon League in Washington had prepared the ground for an aggressive campaign to bring about congressional action during the long session which began in December, 1917. During the first weeks of the session attention was centered upon the proposed prohibition amendment to the federal constitution, but when that was out of the way, after the Christmas recess, the fight was actively renewed for a dry Hawaii. In view of the prohibition sentiment existing in Congress,

the impressive showing that was made by the various petitions from the islands, and the active support of Delegate Kalani-anaole, there could be little doubt as to the final outcome.

When Prince Kuhio returned to Washington there were already pending in Congress two bills providing for prohibition in Hawaii, but neither of these was quite in accord with the Delegate's ideas. He therefore introduced a bill of his own; and in order that the leaders in the fight might be in position to take advantage of every parliamentary opportunity, Senator Sheppard introduced a similar bill in the Senate. As matters shaped up, it was the Sheppard bill that was finally put through. It was passed by the Senate on May 16, 1918, by the House of Representatives on May 18, and was approved by the President on May 23. The law went into effect on August 20, ninety days after its approval by the President. It provided that the question of repeal of the law might be submitted to the voters of the territory for decision at any general election within two years after the conclusion of peace, on petition of twenty per cent of the qualified electors. Before any such election could be held, the prohibition amendment to the federal constitution was adopted and the repeal of the law was thereby taken out of the power of the people of Hawaii.



## CHAPTER XIX

### AMERICANISM vs. KAISERISM

#### A LOYAL AMERICAN COMMUNITY

THERE was never any doubt of the patriotism of Hawaii or of her loyalty to the cause of the United States and the Allies in the Great War. The thoroughly American spirit permeating the territory and the intelligent comprehension by its population of the reasons why we were at war and of the war aims of our government were frequently the subject of favorable comment by visitors who came here from other parts of the country. In June, 1918, Secretary of the Interior Franklin K. Lane made an official visit to Hawaii and travelled in all parts of the territory. Before going back to the mainland, he delivered an address in Honolulu in the course of which he said:

"I do not know of any better place to come to get a running start or to get inspired as to the patriotism of our country than to this most mixed community. I frankly say to you that I have been astonished on my trip through these islands to discover how nearly, how well, how certainly the most remote people, the children of the schools, the men and women of the plantations, and in the upper reaches of the grazing country, knew what the significance was of this great war in which we are involved. I can frankly say to you that I have travelled throughout the country from New England to the Pacific Coast, searching out those spots where there might be slackness of sentiment, and there is no part of our country where the people as a whole know better why we are at war, or have any more purpose to win it than they do here." In his first public address after returning to the mainland, Mr. Lane said: "Nowhere have I found in all my travels a more intelligently patriotic and devoted people than our citizens of Hawaii."

This was said at a time when we had been at war for more

than a year and public opinion had been brought to a high pitch of patriotic fervor. But the facts recounted in the present volume show clearly that the people were awake to the situation from the very start, and willing and eager to strike every blow they could in their country's cause. The war spirit deepened and intensified during the last half of 1917 and throughout 1918.

Such a war conscious and loyal state of mind in a population so heterogeneous as that of Hawaii was a source of wonder to many observers. It was due largely to the fact that the local population was derived principally from countries which were at war with the Central Powers. While the population was heterogeneous in its racial origin, it was very homogeneous with respect to the alignment of nations in the war. Nevertheless, there were a few hundred alien enemies and a few hundred American citizens (naturalized and native born) of recent German origin. German capital was strongly knit into the territory's economic fabric in the form of the old and powerful firm of H. Hackfeld & Company and its affiliated organizations. The president of this firm resided in Germany, but its standing in the community may be indicated by the fact that, when the United States entered the war, the first vice president of H. Hackfeld & Company, George Rodiek, was the president of the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association; while the second vice president of the company, J. F. C. Hagens, was president of the Chamber of Commerce of Honolulu. Both of these men were naturalized American citizens. Mr. Rodiek had been for several years German consul in Honolulu. Mr. Hagens held a commission as captain in the Officers' Reserve Corps of the United States army.

The presence of this German element in the community created a serious problem both for them and for the rest of the population. For those of German origin, whether aliens or American citizens, the years 1917 and 1918 were a period of great stress and difficulty. The beginning of war between the United States and Germany immediately put a question mark after the names of all of them, and whether or not it was erased

depended upon how they conducted themselves. For the bulk of the citizen population (those not of German birth) the problem was of a different character. Clearly it was the duty of a patriot in war time not only to honor the flag and support the government, but also to defend them from their enemies at home as well as abroad. How should a German be treated? The question was not an easy one to answer. In his war proclamation (April 6, 1917), President Wilson said that so long as alien enemies "shall conduct themselves in accordance with law, they shall be undisturbed in the peaceful pursuit of their lives and occupations and be accorded the consideration due to all peaceful and law-abiding persons, except so far as restrictions may be necessary for their own protection and for the safety of the United States; and towards such alien enemies as conduct themselves in accordance with law, all citizens of the United States are enjoined to preserve the peace and to treat them with all such friendliness as may be compatible with loyalty and allegiance to the United States."

The President's proclamation in its terms applied only to alien enemies. American citizens of German birth were in a different category, but the general principle underlying the proclamation was applicable to them. On the other hand, it was pointed out that, while the President laid down a general principle, his statement contained several qualifications which called for the exercise of judgment in dealing with specific cases. During the war there were many people who sincerely and earnestly believed that every person of German blood was a potential enemy and as such to be distrusted and carefully watched until he gave the most unequivocal proof of his loyalty, if he was an American citizen, or of his inoffensive and peaceful character, if he was an alien. It was not alone that overt acts of hostility or disloyalty must be prevented at all hazards; insidious enemy propaganda had to be combated, subtle intrigue frustrated, and German influence eradicated. This was one phase of the duty of patriotism.

AGENCIES PROMOTING AMERICAN PATRIOTISM AND COMBATING  
ENEMY PROPAGANDA AND GERMAN INFLUENCE

Foremost among the agencies promoting American patriotism and combating enemy propaganda and German influence were the newspapers. The work which they did was of the most vital importance. In the first place, they kept the people informed of what was going on, so far as it was possible to find that out; and the way in which they presented the news, the headlines which they employed, and the emphasis which they placed on this or that, went far to interpret the news to their readers. In the second place, their editorial columns were dedicated to the service of the nation; in the most earnest and effective way they expounded the duty of patriotism in war time. In the third place, they energetically supported every war activity, by printing news stories and pictures, by donating advertising space, by editorial comment, and in other ways. And finally, they showed the rest of the world where Hawaii stood. It would be difficult to over-estimate the importance of the newspapers as moulders of public opinion in this war period. In Hawaii they were all heart and soul loyal to their country's cause. On minor points of procedure they sometimes differed sharply with each other; if on rare occasions their zeal outran their discretion that probably will not be counted a very heinous offense.

Another very important group of agencies promoting patriotism included certain public or semi-public organizations of a permanent character—the schools, churches, Boy Scouts and Girl Scouts, Y.M.C.A., Y.W.C.A., Knights of Columbus, and similar organizations. In an article on "Hawaii's Schools and the Great War," the editor of the *Hawaii Educational Review* makes this statement: "By far the most valuable work done by the schools has been the development of patriotic spirit among the pupils and parents throughout the whole territory. Everywhere the spirit of patriotism has reached an unparalleled height, and the territory is unified as never before in a friendly competition to serve our nation. Never before has there been such understanding of the duties and privileges of citizenship,

and I believe that no one force has contributed to this great public education as have the territorial schools." The work of all these organizations is dealt with in other places in the present volume.

A similar group was made up of those organizations created specifically for the purpose of carrying on or coordinating various war activities—the Red Cross, Liberty Loan, and War Savings Stamp organizations, the Selective Draft organization, United States Food Administration, and Territorial Food Commission (especially its Women's Committee). In the nature of the case, their success depended upon the development of patriotic enthusiasm, and all the drives and demonstrations which they promoted were arranged with that end in view. In this group would be included a territorial Council of Defense, if there had been such an organization. The Council of National Defense wrote to Governor Pinkham several times suggesting the formation of a territorial Council of Defense, but he did not favor the plan because he thought the people of the territory were already sufficiently organized for war work; he expressed the opinion that the Hawaiian Vigilance Corps was doing much of the work that a Council of Defense would be expected to do.

There was formed, however, a division for Hawaii of the Woman's Committee of the Council of National Defense. In October, 1917, Mrs. J. M. Dowsett received from the national organization an appointment as temporary chairman for Hawaii; at her invitation, a meeting of representatives of the various women's organizations in the territory was held in the Library of Hawaii, November 1, to talk things over and form a territorial division. The permanent officers chosen were: Chairman, Mrs. J. M. Dowsett; Vice Chairmen, Mrs. W. F. Dillingham, Mrs. W. F. Frear, and Mrs. Gerrit P. Wilder; Secretary, Mrs. A. N. Lincoln; Treasurer, Mrs. A. Lewis, Jr. The purpose of this organization was not to increase the amount of work but "to supply a new and direct channel of communication and cooperation between women and governmental departments, and to coordinate the activities and resources of the organized and

unorganized women of the country, that their power may be immediately utilized in time of need." A number of sub-committees or departments were provided to deal with various phases of women's work in war time, such as registration for service (Mrs. L. C. Howland, chairman), women in industry (Mrs. F. E. Steere), child welfare (Mrs. A. L. Andrews), maintenance of existing social service agencies (Mrs. J. R. Galt), Liberty Loan (Mrs. L. Tenney Peck), Home and Foreign Relief (Miss Beatrice Castle, Mrs. H. F. Damon), finance and publicity (Mrs. M. F. Prosser), unorganized women (Mrs. John P. Erdman), food production and home economics (Mrs. James Russell), food administration (Mrs. A. C. Alexander), health and recreation (Miss Grace Channon), education (Mrs. P. M. Pond, Mrs. H. R. Macfarlane, Jr.).

The work of this council was not as important in Hawaii as it was in some of the states, due to the fact that women's war work in the territory was well advanced before the council came into existence, but it did perform a valuable service in keeping different forms of activity in touch with each other and with what was being done elsewhere in the country; and along certain lines it took the initiative in a useful way. One of the most valuable things which it did was to organize, through the committee on health and recreation, the Girls' Patriotic League, with Mrs. W. C. Hobdy as chairman. Miss Marguerite C. Hearsey (followed some months later by Mrs. Spencer Bowen) had active charge of the work among the girls. The members of the League signed the following pledge: "I pledge to express my patriotism by doing better than ever before whatever work I have to do; by rendering whatever special service I can to my community and country; by living up to the highest standards of character and honor and by helping others to do the same." The Patriotic League was organized in February, 1918, and by the close of the school term more than a thousand girls of Honolulu were members. Groups were formed among the seventh and eighth grade girls in nearly all the public schools, and in private schools, Sunday Schools, various clubs, the Y. W. C. A., and in Girl Scout troops.

A fourth group of patriotic agencies included organizations formed with the primary object of promoting patriotism and combating hostile influences. One of these was the organization of Four Minute Men, which was a branch of the Committee on Public Information (the Creel Committee), the official governmental instrument for the dissemination of American propaganda. The Four Minute Men were volunteer speakers whose talks, in theatres and elsewhere, were made on topics and based on materials sent out from Washington. In Honolulu the Four Minute Men were organized in November, 1917, Royal D. Mead being chairman; on the outer islands they were organized somewhat later. Their first speeches were made during Food Pledge Week and emphasized the patriotic duty of food conservation. Afterwards, they took part in the various campaigns for Liberty Bonds, War Savings Stamps, and the Red Cross.

The Hawaiian Vigilance Corps of the American Defense Society had an aggressive and effective part in the work of maintaining the morale of the people and breaking down hostile influences. The Corps was organized January 2, 1918, by a small group of men who felt keenly the need of vigilance throughout the community to avert any disloyal action on the part of those who might be favorably disposed toward the enemy's interests. The foremost leader was former-Governor George R. Carter, who had recently returned from a visit to the eastern states with a conviction that the people of Hawaii did not sufficiently realize the tremendous, all-overshadowing importance of the struggle in which the nation was engaged. Since the beginning of the war, Mr. Carter had taken an active interest in war work and on more than one occasion his voice had been raised in fervent appeal to the patriotic spirit of the community. He was elected president of the Vigilance Corps, J. A. Balch, treasurer, H. Gooding Field, secretary, and George I. Brown, assistant secretary. On Mr. Carter's departure for Red Cross work abroad in the summer of 1918, Norman Watkins was chosen as acting head of the organization. The purposes of the Corps were to promote high standards of patriot-

ism, to oppose propaganda of the German government and all those working in the interest of our country's enemies, to aid the prosecution of the war by the mobilization of all the available forces in the islands, and to maintain the morale of the people in these trying times. The outstanding requisite for membership was that each must have the endorsement of the member who proposed him, and the member lending his endorsement was held strictly responsible for the loyalty of his candidate. Membership was much desired, since it amounted to a certificate of American patriotism. There were eleven charter members, but the number grew with great rapidity. The Corps had a luncheon meeting each week for the transaction of business; these meetings likewise gave opportunity for the radicals to voice what was in their minds; and the frank and open discussion not infrequently resulted in dissipating doubt and needless anxiety.

Soon after the organization of the Vigilance Corps in Honolulu, branches were formed on the outer islands. The Maui branch was headed by F. F. Baldwin, president; C. C. Campbell, secretary; and D. C. Lindsay, treasurer. The officers of the Hilo (Hawaii) branch were C. E. Wright, president; J. C. Plankinton, secretary, and H. V. Patten, treasurer.

The first subject to which the Vigilantes directed their attention was that of food conservation. The good work which they did in promoting the banana campaign has been described in an earlier chapter. Their services in managing the round-up of draft delinquents in the spring of 1918 has also been referred to. Their activities in other directions will be noted farther along in the present chapter. In certain respects the Vigilance Corps corresponded to the state Councils of Defense on the mainland; it cooperated effectively with all local law enforcement officers, both civil and military, in investigating reports of disloyalty.

Patriotism and the war spirit were promoted not alone by the agencies mentioned above, but by many incidents occurring from time to time, such as the visits of various missions from nations with which the United States was associated in the war—the Japanese missions headed by Baron Megata and Vis-



count Ishii (October and November, 1917), the French economic mission headed by General Paul Pau (August, 1918), the Czecho-Slovak mission and allied mission to Siberia (September, 1918); a visit by a large group of congressmen in November, 1917; and by the island tour of Secretary of the Interior Franklin K. Lane and his party in June, 1918. The return of war workers and wounded veterans who had gone over-seas from Hawaii and the visits and speeches of such men as Captain Peguenot of the Canadian army and the blind Anzac Skeyhill brought the grim fact of war home to the people and strengthened their determination to see it through. Holidays such as Washington's birthday, Memorial Day, Flag Day, and the Fourth of July became days of dedication to the service of our country.

#### CIRCUMSTANCES WHICH INTENSIFIED ANTI-GERMAN FEELING

During the war period, patriotism naturally and necessarily took on an anti-German aspect. While it was frequently emphasized that our quarrel was not with the German people but with the imperial German government, the fact that the German people seemed to be quite solidly back of the Kaiser made it difficult to maintain this distinction in practice. From the beginning of 1917—and even earlier—many factors piled up one on the other to intensify the anti-German sentiment in the territory. The reports of German atrocities on land and sea and the intrigues carried on by agents of the German government in the United States aroused a feeling of bitter resentment. In Hawaii various local happenings pointed to the need of vigilance in guarding against acts of hostility and to the importance of eradicating "Germanism."

The first important event of this kind was the attempt to destroy the boilers and machinery of the gunboat *Geier* and the refugee German merchant ships at Honolulu and Hilo during the first week of February, 1917. This involved the possibility of destruction of property along the waterfront. What was done in Hawaii was only part of the wholesale attempt to render

all German ships in American ports useless to the United States in case of war. A report issued by the Committee on Public Information in January, 1918, strongly hinted that the Germans had not only planned to burn the ships, but had also intended to cause as much damage as possible to the harbors in which the ships were lying. Added to the uneasiness occasioned by the attempt to disable the ships was the irritation caused by the futile efforts to have the steamships *Pommern* and *Setos* removed from the territorial wharves.

When the United States entered the war, by far the larger part of the Germans and German-Americans residing in Hawaii accepted the situation in proper spirit; but a very small number, by their indiscreet actions, gave reason for distrust. There was one in particular, Dr. F. H. Schurmann, who made himself obnoxious to loyal citizens. This man had written a book, *The War as Seen Through German Eyes*, published during the early part of the war, which defended the course taken by Germany and bitterly attacked the Allies. After the United States entered the war, the book was ostensibly withdrawn from circulation, but in the spring of 1918 the Vigilance Corps discovered that it was still being circulated; the remaining copies were thereupon seized by the federal authorities. As a result of further investigation the United States district attorney brought a suit in equity to cancel Dr. Schurmann's naturalization; and in January, 1919, after a long trial, he was deprived of his American citizenship.

In the summer of 1917 anthrax broke out among several herds of island cattle under circumstances which led to the belief that the germs were deliberately "planted." A little later, typhoid germs were found in the Nuuanu water supply of Honolulu. These two incidents caused many people to think that German agents were attempting to spread disease, though it was admitted that there was no direct evidence to support such a belief.

During the same period the Queen's Hospital became involved in unpleasant notoriety as a result of charges made by

a head nurse who had resigned at the request of the superintendent. The gist of the charges was that the institution was pro-German, the accusation on its face being given some color by the fact that the superintendent and a number of the other officials were German-Americans. The matter was investigated by a committee of life members of the hospital association, which reported that the evidence failed to sustain the charges. Shortly afterwards the superintendent resigned and other changes were made with the object of removing the German atmosphere of the institution.

It was also in the summer of 1917 that the Hawaiian phase of the India conspiracy was disclosed. That gigantic, somewhat fantastic plot, fomented by German agents in the United States and elsewhere with the object of bringing about a revolution in India, thereby distracting the attention of Great Britain from the business in hand in Europe, had ramifications in all parts of the world and involved very serious breaches of the neutrality laws of the United States. War had scarcely been declared by the United States when the Department of Justice began making arrests of persons implicated in the conspiracy. One of these arrests (that of H. Wehde) was made in Honolulu toward the end of April, 1917. Early in July indictments were returned by the federal grand jury in San Francisco against a large number of persons, who were accused of connection with the plot in various ways. The people of Hawaii were startled to find in the list the names of Georg Rodiek, vice president of H. Hackfeld & Company, president of the Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association, and former German consul; H. A. Schroeder, an employee of H. Hackfeld & Company and formerly secretary of the German consulate in Honolulu; and Captain Edmund Deinat, commander of the refugee steamer *Holsatia*.

It afterwards developed that Messrs. Rodiek and Schroeder were involved in the conspiracy through their connection with the steamer *Maverick*. One of the overt acts of the plot was an attempt to send a shipment of arms and ammunition from the

United States to India. The shipment was placed on the schooner *Annie Larsen* at San Diego, being ostensibly destined for the coast of Mexico. The *Annie Larsen* was to meet the steamer *Maverick* (former Standard Oil tanker) somewhere off the coast and transfer to it the guns and ammunition. The *Maverick* was then to cross the Pacific ocean, proceed to a point on the coast of India, and deliver the cargo to revolutionists who would be waiting to receive it. The two boats failed to make connections off the Mexican coast; the plans were then altered and the *Maverick* was ordered to proceed to Hilo, Hawaii, for instructions, the intention being to have the two vessels meet at Johnson Island to transfer the guns and ammunition. The *Maverick* arrived at Hilo about the middle of June, 1915, and was visited by Mr. Schroeder of the German consulate at Honolulu and by the captains of some of the German refugee steamers. New sailing orders were received and after a stay of ten days the *Maverick* continued on her way, eventually arriving in the Dutch East Indies, but without having met the *Annie Larsen*. The *Maverick* enterprise was a complete failure; in fact the whole conspiracy fizzled out; but many of the persons concerned in it had to pay a heavy price for the privilege of being threads in the vast web of intrigue.

At the time his indictment was made known in Honolulu, Mr. Rodiek was on his way to the coast. He was arrested on his arrival at San Francisco. Mr. Schroeder surrendered himself to the United States Marshal and was placed under bond to appear in the federal court in San Francisco. On arraignment both men entered pleas of not guilty, but after being brought to trial they withdrew those pleas (December 5, 1917) and pleaded guilty to a violation of the neutrality laws of the United States. At the same time they presented a statement to the court, in which they maintained that as far as the *Maverick* was concerned, the transactions in which they were involved were all on the basis of ordinary commercial transactions and that they were not at the time aware that any violation of law was taking place. "While pleading guilty to a violation of one of the

neutrality laws of the country, . . . the defendant, Rodiek, does not concede any disloyalty to this country or lack of devotion to its institutions." The statement closed with the declaration that the two men intended "by their future conduct and future residence in their Hawaiian home to confirm the respect and confidence of their neighbors and their right to fellowship with American citizens."

Just a week later the naval intelligence office in Honolulu made public extracts from the diary kept by Captain Karl Grasshof, commander of the *Geier* during the period of her internment at Honolulu, in 1914 and 1915. The diary had been discovered some months after the seizure of the *Geier* in the spring of 1917. This publication disclosed the fact that, during the whole period covered, the *Geier* was using her wireless, receiving and sending messages, although the vessel was interned and her radio outfit was supposed to be sealed. The diary also showed that the little gunboat was a center of widespread intrigue, and it cast a very dubious light on the doings of the German consulate in Honolulu. It was revealed how an attempt was made to get men from the *Geier* through to Germany, by means of substitutions and false passports—some of these men were caught by United States agents. The diary showed that, following the sinking of the *Lusitania*, preparations were made to disable German war and merchant ships in American ports, as was later done after diplomatic relations were broken. The names of the German agents Boy-Ed and von Papen figured largely in the diary.

The publication of the Grasshof diary created a profound sensation in Hawaii. The newspapers pointed to it as a revelation and a warning of German intrigue and duplicity. The *Star-Bulletin* said editorially, "These revelations should serve to wake up every American citizen who is inclined to easy-going indifference to the facts of German activity in Hawaii. They should convince every such citizen that nothing but the most ceaseless vigilance will serve to protect Hawaii and the nation from the ceaseless conspiracies of the enemy." "The east has

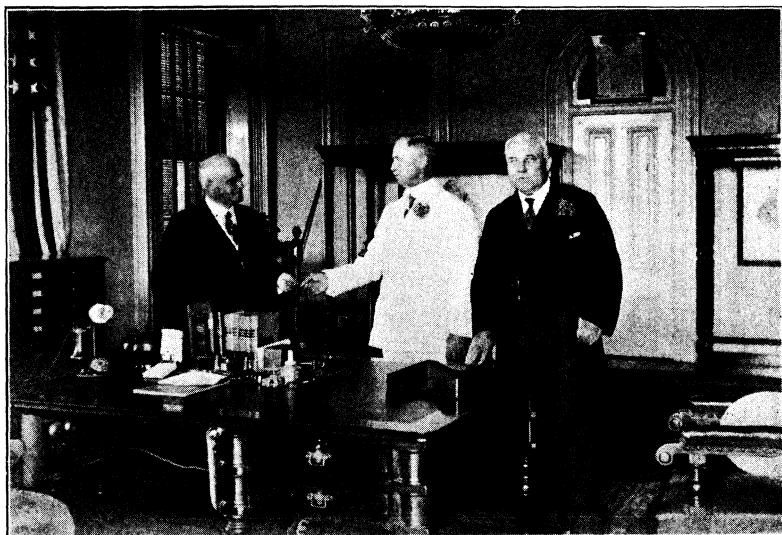
had its awakening. Hawaii is just beginning to rub its eyes. Perhaps after awhile Hawaii will begin to 'get mad' . . . Perhaps we shall begin to realize that German plotting concerns not only New York and Washington and Halifax, but Honolulu. Perhaps we shall strip the situation of a sentiment colored by long friendships and see Hun ruthlessness in all its brazen, lying blackness."

Coming on the heels of the extenuating statement of Messrs. Rodiek and Schroeder, made at the time they changed their pleas to guilty, the Grasshof diary caused a powerful revulsion of feeling against those men. Up to this time many persons had been inclined to give them the benefit of every possible doubt. That feeling was now submerged in a flood of denunciation. People found it impossible to believe that the two consular officials could have been ignorant of what was going on under their very eyes. The opinion was freely expressed that the sentences imposed on them—a fine of \$10,000 for Rodiek and a fine of \$1,000 for Schroeder—were entirely inadequate to the measure of their guilt. The general feeling of the community was expressed in a newspaper editorial which said, speaking of Mr. Rodiek:

"That fine was the very least of the penalties he has suffered and is suffering. He has lost the respect and esteem of the community where he had lived for twenty-seven years. He has lost the confidence of men with whom he has long been connected by business ties. . . . He has lost the splendid business position earned through many years of hard work. . . . He cannot return to the community he calls his home. . . . He 'escaped with a ten thousand dollar fine'—and walks forevermore under the shadow of a life-tragedy."

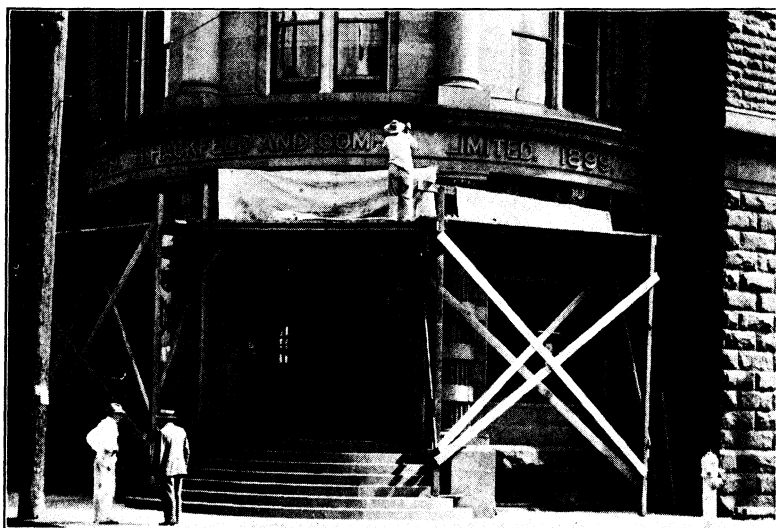
#### REORGANIZATION OF H. HACKFELD & COMPANY

The developments which have just been described had a serious reaction upon the firm of H. Hackfeld & Company. That concern had already experienced some inconvenience as a result of the war by being placed on the British government's



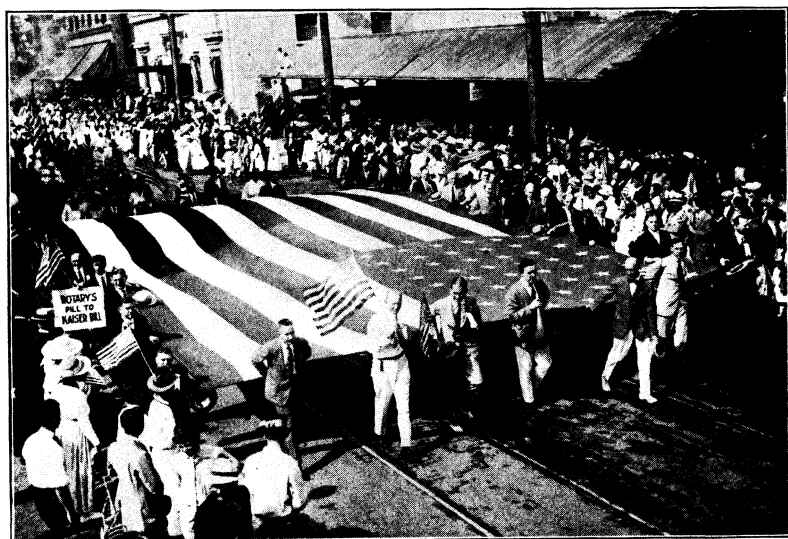
RETIRING GOVERNOR PINKHAM HANDING KEY OF OFFICE  
TO INCOMING GOVERNOR MCCARTHY, JUNE 22, 1918

Left to right: Governor Pinkham, Governor McCarthy, Secretary of the  
Interior Franklin K. Lane



REMOVING HACKFELD NAME FROM BUILDING PREPARA-  
TORY TO TRANSFER TO AMERICAN FACTORS

(August 19, 1918)



CELEBRATING THE VICTORY—ARMISTICE DAY,  
NOVEMBER 11, 1918

Above: Crowd at King Street and Aala Park  
Below: Group of Rotarians in parade



"blacklist." Following the implication of Mr. Rodiek, managing vice president of the company, in the India conspiracy, the United States government denied the company the use of cable and radio, thus handicapping its commercial operations. The two governments seem to have looked upon the organization as a center of German influence in the Pacific. The general feeling of distrust and indignation seriously shook the company's standing in the community. In the absence of Mr. Rodiek, the management of the business devolved upon the second vice president, J. F. C. Hagens. A few days after the publication of the Grasshof diary, Mr. Hagens resigned from his official position in the company in order to make plain his stand as an American citizen and avoid any implication in recent developments. His resignation left the management in the hands of J. F. Humburg, third vice president, who was on the mainland at the time but returned immediately in order to straighten out the affairs of the company. At about the same time that Mr. Hagens sent in his resignation, a number of the local stockholders—American citizens—cabled to Mr. Rodiek a request for his resignation on the ground that his further connection with the company was inimical to its best interests. In reply he asked the stockholders to await the arrival of Vice President Humburg.

Mr. Humburg arrived in Honolulu at the beginning of January, 1918, and immediately began a careful study of the situation. He agreed with Mr. Hagens and other local industrial leaders that the only way to keep the business from going on the rocks was to thoroughly Americanize the company, eliminating every taint or suggestion of the "Germanism" that had brought it into disrepute. It was intimated that if such a reorganization could be effected, Mr. Hagens would withdraw his resignation and stay with the company. A reorganization was made possible by the way in which the stock of the company was owned and controlled. Of the 40,000 shares of H. Hackfeld & Company, 12,647 shares were held by the firm of J. F. Hackfeld, Limited, the latter company being simply an incorporation of the personal interests of J. F. Hackfeld (who was

president of H. Hackfeld & Company), formed by him at the time he returned to Germany to reside some years before the outbreak of the war. Ninety-nine per cent of the stock in J. F. Hackfeld, Limited, was owned by J. F. Hackfeld personally, but the by-laws of the company gave to the managing vice president in Honolulu practical control of the shares which the corporation owned in H. Hackfeld & Company. This meant that Georg Rodiek controlled this block of 12,647 shares when he was in Honolulu; in his absence, J. F. C. Hagens had control.

Messrs. Humburg and Hagens, in consultation with local men whose Americanism was unquestioned, worked out a plan of reorganization of H. Hackfeld & Company which was carried through in the following manner. Eleven thousand of the 12,647 shares mentioned above were sold to a group of six men who were to be brought into the company (2000 shares each to F. J. Lowrey, W. F. Dillingham, A. J. Campbell, A. W. T. Bottomley, and G. P. Wilcox, and 1000 shares to H. L. Scott of New York). These men also obtained for the duration of the war irrevocable proxies for enough additional stock to give them complete control of H. Hackfeld & Company. The company was then reorganized, on January 11, by the election of the following directors: J. F. C. Hagens, president; J. F. Humburg, A. J. Campbell, and H. L. Scott, vice presidents; A. W. T. Bottomley, treasurer; W. F. Dillingham, secretary; F. J. Lowrey, W. F. Frear, and G. P. Wilcox. This removed from the organization every one of the former officers and directors except Messrs. Hagens and Humburg. The plan was rushed through in order to prevent Mr. Rodiek from having anything to do with the business, since it was reported, on apparently reliable authority, that he was to return to Honolulu on January 12 (a false report, as it turned out). The new directors proceeded as rapidly as was practicable to further Americanize the company by changes among department heads and subordinate officials and employees. The reorganization was hailed with satisfaction by the newspapers and the public generally, though the approval was not quite unanimous.

In the meantime a new element had come into the situation. On October 6, 1917, President Wilson approved the Trading-with-the-Enemy Act, one object of which was to prevent property and business enterprises in the United States owned by enemy persons from giving aid to the enemy in any way. Under this act the President had the right to take over for the duration of the war any or all property in the United States owned by enemy persons (i. e. persons residing in Germany or other countries with which the United States was at war or in territory controlled by them), to manage such property, and, on certain conditions, to sell it, the property or proceeds of sale to be returned to the former owners at the close of the war. The president proceeded to carry out the law by appointing an Alien Property Custodian (A. Mitchell Palmer), through whom an organization was built up, representatives appointed in the various states, and an immense amount of enemy owned property taken into custody.

There was some speculation as to just how this would affect German holdings in Hawaii, chiefly embodied in the Hackfeld interests. Up to the time of the January 11 reorganization, no word had been received in Hawaii of the appointment of a representative of the Alien Property Custodian for this territory, but shortly after that date, the appointment of Richard H. Trent, president of Trent Trust Company, as such representative was announced. Under instruction from Washington he proceeded to take into custody enemy owned property in the territory to the total value of about \$15,000,000. Among the things that came into the hands of the custodian were the shares owned by J. F. Hackfeld in the firm of J. F. Hackfeld, Limited (about 99 per cent of the whole number of such shares). This gave the custodian complete control of that corporation. The shares in H. Hackfeld & Company owned by J. F. Hackfeld, Limited, did not technically come into his possession since the latter company was an Hawaiian corporation, but the custodian controlled those shares through his control of J. F. Hackfeld, Limited. Something over 14,000 enemy owned shares in H. Hackfeld & Company came into the hands of the custodian.

It appears that at the time of the January 11 reorganization the Alien Property Custodian in Washington was preparing to take control of the two Hackfeld corporations, though this fact was unknown to the men who carried through the reorganization. It was, however, perfectly clear that, under the existing circumstances, it was necessary to have the custodian's approval of what had been done. The company still labored under the handicap of the British government's "blacklist" and the denial of cable and radio facilities. Judge Frear was sent to Washington to confer with the custodian, to obtain, if possible, the necessary approval and an order from him authorizing the sale of all the enemy owned shares in order to place the full control of H. Hackfeld & Company in the hands of American citizens for all time. He found that the custodian had adopted a general policy for dealing with all enemy controlled corporations and insisted that all reorganizations be carried out under his own supervision. The custodian requested that the January 11 reorganization be "unscrambled" and everything restored to the status in which it had been before. This included the rescinding of the sale of the 11,000 shares of H. Hackfeld & Company stock and the return of that stock to J. F. Hackfeld, Limited. This was reported to the directors in Honolulu by Judge Frear, who also suggested that Messrs Hagens and Humburg proceed to Washington to confer with the custodian in regard to further plans which the latter might have in mind.

The requests of the Alien Property Custodian were fully complied with, the 11,000 shares of stock being returned to J. F. Hackfeld, Limited, and the former officers and directors of H. Hackfeld & Company reinstated. The custodian in the meantime had reorganized J. F. Hackfeld, Limited, by voting in a new set of officers and directors (R. A. Cooke, president; F. C. Atherton, secretary, and R. H. Trent, treasurer) and had taken the first steps in the legal process for the dissolution of that company. The return of the 11,000 shares to J. F. Hackfeld, Limited, gave the custodian control of more than 27,000 of the 40,000 shares of H. Hackfeld & Company. After con-

ferences, in Washington, with Judge Frear and Messrs. Hagens and Humburg, he announced (March 22) a reorganization of the company to take effect on April 20. The officers and directors who took charge of the company on that date were: G. C. Sherman, president; R. A. Cooke, C. R. Hemenway, and F. J. Lowrey, vice presidents; F. C. Atherton, secretary; R. H. Trent, treasurer; A. W. T. Bottomley, W. F. Dillingham, and G. P. Wilcox. J. F. C. Hagens was appointed general manager. It was stated that this was a temporary arrangement. The final and permanent disposition which it was planned to make of the business waited for the action of Congress upon certain proposed amendments to the Trading-with-the-Enemy Act.

The amendments just referred to became law with the approval of the President on March 28. They gave full authority for the sale of any or all enemy owned property which the President, through the Alien Property Custodian, saw fit to dispose of in that way; all such sales to be made, however, only to American citizens. The custodian's plans for disposing of H. Hackfeld & Company were then carried out as rapidly as possible. Without going into the complicated technical details of the process, what was done amounted essentially to this: A new corporation was formed, known as "American Factors, Limited," with a par capitalization of \$5,000,000 (valued at \$7,500,000), and this new company bought out all the business of H. Hackfeld & Company. The latter corporation was then dissolved and went out of existence. J. F. Hackfeld, Limited, was also dissolved; so that the name Hackfeld disappeared from industrial Hawaii. The shares in the new company were widely distributed, there being more than six hundred stockholders. The formal transfer of the business from H. Hackfeld & Company to American Factors occurred on August 20, 1918. On the preceding day the Hackfeld name was removed by stone masons from the building at the corner of Fort and Queen streets in Honolulu and after the transfer the name American Factors, Limited, was carved deep in the stone over the entrance to the building.

Along with the changes in H. Hackfeld & Company went changes in the enterprises which it owned or controlled. One of these was the mercantile house of B. F. Ehlers & Company. Immediately after the January 11 reorganization, Carl Du Roi, the manager of that business, resigned and was succeeded by F. J. Lindeman. On August 2, double page advertisements in the newspapers announced that the business of B. F. Ehlers & Company would be continued by the American Factors, Limited, under the name of "The Liberty House." Some changes were made in the organization of several sugar plantation companies, and during the early part of 1919 enemy owned shares in these companies to the value of about four million dollars were sold at auction by Mr. Trent, local representative of the Alien Property Custodian.

#### ERADICATING GERMAN INFLUENCE

The Rodiek-Schroeder affair and the Grasshof diary did more than anything else to bring all things German under suspicion and to arouse the community to a determination to eradicate every trace of German influence. As usual under such circumstances, many rumors arose regarding the loyalty of various individuals; the public atmosphere was such that these rumors were brought out into the open and not allowed to circulate about under the surface. Thus, about the end of November, 1917, J. A. Balch and Dr. E. S. Goodhue, in letters published in the *Advertiser*, called on Carl Du Roi, manager of B. F. Ehlers & Company, to affirm or deny current rumors which credited him with a pro-German attitude; Mr. Du Roi categorically denied the charges mentioned, but this denial did not satisfy everyone. At about the same time there began to appear weekly, as paid advertisements in the *Advertiser*, a series of articles over the mysterious signature "Dixie Doolittle". In his first article, the writer hurled a lance at the National Guard, the Queen's Hospital, and Carl Du Roi; in the second, he asked "What about our Chamber of Commerce?" raising the question whether it was right at such a time for a German-American (J. F. C.

Hagens) to be president of that body, though admitting his perfect loyalty. This questioning of Mr. Hagens' position was indicative of the intensity of the existing anti-German feeling. He had before this time given the most convincing proofs of his thorough Americanism; he now refused to be driven from his place by an anonymous attack, but furnished additional proof of his loyalty by handing in his resignation as vice president of H. Hackfeld & Company, feeling that the company was too heavily compromised by recent happenings to permit him longer to continue as one of its officers.

In later articles, Dixie Doolittle gave publicity to various current rumors, and devoted much space to a severe attack on various clubs and organizations which aided the enemy by keeping John Barleycorn in good standing (the prohibition question being a very live issue at that time). The writer of these articles was criticised for hiding behind a shield of anonymity, but he afterwards defended that course by saying that he believed the air of impersonal mystery gave the articles greater effectiveness than they would have had if his own personality had been injected into the matter. It came out, about the first of February, that Dixie Doolittle was none other than Richard H. Trent, one of the leading business men of the community. For some of the things he wrote, Mr. Trent and the editor of the *Advertiser* were sued for libel. The trial of the former, which was somewhat sensational, resulted in his acquittal; and the charge against the editor was subsequently dropped without trial.

For a short time, in December, 1917, the College of Hawaii was a storm center in the campaign to eradicate German influence. Rumors had been circulating to the effect that some members of the faculty were disloyal. The trouble arose chiefly from the presence on the faculty of a woman who was a German citizen, Miss Maria Heuer, who had come to the college from Germany shortly before the outbreak of the war to teach the German language. In reply to a questionnaire sent to all members of the faculty, Miss Heuer said that she was "in principle against any kind of war and therefore not loyal to any govern-

ment at war." She denied, however, that she had ever said or done anything to undermine the loyalty of the students in her classes. There was an insistent demand, in which one member of the board of regents of the college, Fred L. Waldron, joined, that Miss Heuer be dismissed.

The regents, after long and careful consideration, unanimously passed a resolution that "for the duration of the war, no person who is not actively and aggressively loyal to the United States shall be appointed to the faculty of the College of Hawaii." The question of the retention or dismissal of Miss Heuer was left to the judgment of President Dean. Mr. Waldron vigorously objected to this action and resigned from the board, declaring that Miss Heuer should be instantly dismissed. President Dean and W. R. Farrington, chairman of the board of regents, issued statements in which they explained the action of the board and asserted that Miss Heuer was an efficient teacher, loyal to the college, and that she had done nothing that would justify her dismissal, especially in view of the fact that she was employed under a contract which did not expire until the summer of 1918; and, in defense of their view of the case, they quoted various utterances of President Wilson on the subject of how alien enemies should be treated. Those who demanded Miss Heuer's dismissal, without calling in question President Wilson's words, argued that this was not a case of an ordinary alien enemy; that the College of Hawaii, being a public institution, supported by public funds, both territorial and federal, should be extremely careful to prevent any possibility of disloyalty within its gates, and should not employ alien enemies in time of war.

The controversy became heated and some hard things were said on both sides. Miss Heuer allowed herself to be quoted in a bitter attack on those who were trying to bring about her removal, and rather frankly admitted her pro-German feelings. A few days later she resigned and with the acceptance of her resignation by the board of regents the question was closed so far as the college was concerned. With her departure, the teach-



ing of German was discontinued and was not resumed until the fall of 1927.

Teachers in the elementary and high schools under control of the territorial department of public instruction were called upon to affirm their loyalty. In December, 1917, there were twelve teachers in the department who were listed as Germans. Superintendent H. W. Kinney proposed to ask them to state their position, but at the suggestion of one of the school commissioners the inquiry was broadened to include all of the thousand or more teachers employed. The following letter, which had the approval of the Hawaiian Vigilance Corps, was sent to each one: "The principal function of the public schools of the Territory of Hawaii is to produce loyal American citizens. Good American citizenship is more important than scholarship. The department expects all its teachers to express themselves positively in teaching loyal Americanism. Will you do this? Answer this question 'Yes' or 'No'." Every teacher in the department answered in the affirmative.

In the fall of 1918 the question came up again. All teachers were required to express their loyalty. Two whose attitude had been unsatisfactory were dismissed. A public demand arose, led by R. W. Breckons, that teachers who were alien enemies (there were four of these) be likewise dropped. The four in question had all declared their loyal Americanism by answering "yes" to the letter quoted above, and the department did not believe there was any danger involved in retaining them; but finally, in deference to public feeling, the commissioners voted (not unanimously) to request their resignation. This was done and the four teachers resigned.

German schools came under the ban of public opinion. This issue was raised in March, 1918, at a meeting of the Vigilance Corps when the maintenance of such schools in connection with the German churches in Honolulu and Lihue was sharply criticized. It developed, however, that there was no German "school" in Honolulu; formerly there had been classes four times a week for the teaching of German, but shortly after the opening of the

war this had been reduced to two days a week and at the beginning of 1918 all teaching of German had been discontinued; two classes were being held each week for religious instruction which was given in English. The situation at Lihue was different; there a regularly licensed private school was being conducted. It had been started by Rev. Hans Isenberg, pastor of the Lutheran church, and after his death was carried on by his widow, Mrs. Dora Isenberg. Originally the instruction had been given in German, but in the fall of 1917, in accordance with an order from the school department, the medium of instruction was changed to English. Criticism of this school in the spring of 1918 arose in part from the fact that one of the teachers was Miss Maria Heuer, who had been employed there after she left the College of Hawaii. Prominent citizens of Kauai whose Americanism was above suspicion warmly defended both Miss Heuer and the school; no one who knew Mrs. Isenberg doubted her loyalty; but there was a widespread feeling that under the circumstances of the time such a school should not be in operation. President Carter of the Vigilance Corps suggested to Mrs. Isenberg that she close the school voluntarily, but she declined on the ground that such action would be a confession of wrong doing; she stated, however, that she would close the school if the school department so requested. Acting on this hint, Superintendent Kinney, with the approval of the commissioners, requested that the school be discontinued at the close of the term in progress, and the matter was disposed of in that way.

The study of the German language was eliminated from the public high schools of the territory. Discussion of the subject began as early as the fall of 1917, but it did not become a live issue until the spring of 1918. In April and again in June Superintendent Kinney stated that, "for the present at least", the teaching of German would not be discontinued, since it would work a hardship on students who were studying the language for college entrance credit and needed another year to complete their requirements. He went on to say that a careful scrutiny had been made of all textbooks used in order to remove any that might be

in any way harmful. In August Mr. Kinney, in answer to an inquiry, repeated his earlier statement, adding that he thought there would be little demand for classes in German except by college preparatory students. A few days later the question was brought up at a meeting of the Vigilance Corps and the superintendent's attitude was severely criticised, though some speakers defended it. One member said he was in favor of any movement that would relegate German to the status of a "dead" language. A committee was appointed to confer with Mr. Kinney. The latter said that the question would be taken up by the school commissioners who alone had authority to make a decision; the attitude of the Vigilance Corps would be given due consideration. At the meeting of the commissioners on August 20, it was voted to discontinue the teaching of German entirely, substituting a course in Spanish at McKinley high school and wherever else it was possible. It was decided that students who needed another year of German for college entrance credit would have to make that sacrifice just as others were making sacrifices in this war.

Street names of German origin or that had a German sound came into disfavor and an agitation was begun to have them changed. This movement got well under way in August, 1918. Objection was voiced to several names of streets in Honolulu, but the agitation was finally concentrated on Hackfeld street. Various names were suggested for this thoroughfare, such as Government, Liberty, Roosevelt, Wilson, and Pershing. Mayor Fern proposed Pau Street; this would signify that Hackfeld was pau (finished) so far as Hawaii was concerned, and, with a slight change in pronunciation, would honor the French veteran, General Paul Pau, who was a visitor in Hawaii about that time. The discussion settled down to two names: Emerson street, by which it was proposed to honor Mrs. Dorothea Emerson for her self-sacrificing Belgian relief work; and McGrew street, in honor of Dr. John S. McGrew, commonly called the "father of annexation." The board of supervisors decided on August 20 that Hackfeld street should have a new name, but it was not until

October 1 that they settled the matter definitely by voting (4 to 3) in favor of the name Emerson street.

German societies were looked upon with suspicion. One such organization, the German-American Alliance, disbanded soon after the United States severed diplomatic relations with Germany; but another one, a local lodge of the order of Hermanns Soehne, continued to meet and to carry on its meetings in the German language. This fact was noted from time to time in the newspapers. About the first of January the society was denied further use of the Knights of Pythias hall and thereafter met at the home of one of the officers. Some members of the society were currently believed to be lukewarm in their loyalty if not actually pro-German in sentiment. Toward the end of September, 1918, R. W. Breckons, Republican national committeeman for Hawaii, began a vigorous attack on the society with the object of closing it up. He discovered from an examination of its constitution that two of the objects of the society were "to maintain the usage of the German language and German customs amongst its members" and "to use its influence to promote the teaching of the German language in the schools of the country," both of which objects were held to be improper while the United States was at war with Germany. Mr. Breckons addressed a letter to the attorney general of the territory, talked with the United States district attorney, and brought the matter before the Vigilance Corps, which gave him strong support. The newspapers editorially endorsed the movement. The district attorney seized the papers of the organization in order to make a careful examination, but found nothing that warranted prosecution under federal laws. The society operated under a license which was revocable at the pleasure of the governor; the matter was therefore presented to him. Governor McCarthy requested an opinion from the attorney general, who advised that the license be revoked. The governor agreed that in view of the existing war and in deference to an aroused public sentiment the society should cease to meet; hence, on October 8, he formally revoked its license.

During the summer of 1918 attention was called to the fact that portraits of some of the builders of the German state, Marshal Blucher and Kings William I and Frederick William III of Prussia, were hanging on the walls of the Capitol. These pictures had been presented to Kamehameha III in the days when Prussian kings and generals were in good standing, but now that their labors had come to such evil fruition it was not deemed proper that they should remain longer in places of honor in the statehouse of an American commonwealth. An order was issued by the superintendent of public works and Blucher and the two kings were removed to an obscure corner in the attic, where they collected dust for eight years. They were then brought to light once more by an antiquary of the local archives, to whom it occurred that these portraits were, after all, entitled to some respect as mementoes of a good Hawaiian king, and because they were of historic value as probably the oldest oil paintings associated with the royal Hawaiian government.

In the summer of 1918 the Vigilance Corps inaugurated a campaign against the Hearst publications. At a meeting on July 2 a resolution was adopted which said in part: "The un-American and pro-German sentiments of these publications are very well known; and recently Hearst has been carrying on an anti-Japanese campaign that carries a distinct menace to the welfare and safety of the Territory of Hawaii. It is, therefore, resolved that the Vigilance Corps recommend that all newsdealers doing business in the Territory of Hawaii be requested voluntarily to give up the sale of all Hearst publications, whether of newspapers or magazines, during the progress of the war." A committee was appointed to interview the newsdealers, all of whom expressed a willingness to cooperate. It was finally decided not to take drastic action but to make an appeal to the patriotism of the people of Hawaii to put an "effective community ban" on these publications by not purchasing them. The response to the appeal was indicated a few months later by reports which showed that sales in the territory of the various

Hearst publications had fallen off considerably more than fifty per cent.

#### ALIEN ENEMIES AND DISLOYAL AMERICANS

Alien enemies were subject to various limitations upon their freedom of action. They were required to register—in fact they had to register twice, once in the spring of 1917 and once in the spring of 1918. They were not allowed to be within the limits or immediate vicinity of the forts or the naval station. They could not enter into zones within a hundred yards of piers or wharves. They could not travel from one island to another without special permission and then only on urgent business. These and other restrictions were imposed in accordance with law by presidential proclamations as measures necessary for the protection of commerce and public property from the activities of alien enemies who might be of dangerous character.

There were really two classes of alien enemies: First, those who were permanent residents of Hawaii or at least domiciled here for the time being. These people were, generally speaking, not molested unless they committed acts of hostility or brought suspicion upon themselves by their words or deeds. A second and much smaller class consisted of alien enemies who were transients or were stranded in the territory by the fortunes of war—chiefly German sailors removed from American ships (the law did not permit alien enemies to serve on American ships in time of war). These men were ordinarily interned, some held in prison and some paroled and placed on Kipahulu plantation, Maui, where they remained at work until the restrictions were removed in the summer of 1919. A comparatively small number of alien enemies, a few from each of the above classes, who acted in an improper manner, were arrested and removed, under presidential warrants, to detention camps on the mainland.

Developments during the fall and winter of 1917-18 sharpened the eyes of the law officers and made all loyal citizens more vigilant in seeking to detect and prevent hostile acts of alien enemies or disloyal citizens. Just at the end of January the *Star-Bulletin*

said in an editorial that "a good many people in Honolulu believe that the United States Government should at once intern all German subjects here. Others believe that German subjects should be immediately dismissed from any employment, public or private. Representations such as this are not infrequently made to the department of justice representatives, and this is not unnatural in view of the general—and justified—suspicion which German intrigue in the United States has aroused." Some Germans did lose their jobs because of the distrust or dislike which they brought on themselves; some others were thrown out of employment as a result of the Americanization of H. Hackfeld & Company; a few, without funds and unable to find employment, became destitute and had to be cared for by the Spanish consul (who was in charge of German interests), by the Associated Charities, or by the German Benevolent Society. The question of what to do with destitute alien enemies became a topic of discussion in the press and elsewhere. A suggestion was made that a public farm be established where they could raise food.

At a meeting of the Vigilance Corps on March 19 General John H. Soper proposed that an internment camp be established for alien enemies dangerous to the public safety. The idea was approved and a resolution adopted, which was sent through the office of Delegate Kalanianaʻole to the Department of Justice in Washington. Impetus was given to the movement for an internment camp by a tragic incident which occurred on April 14, the shooting to death of S. J. Walker by Henry Allen. It was said that Walker was notoriously pro-German and that Allen shot in self defense and in righteous patriotic wrath over Walker's disloyal words. A fund was raised for Allen's defense and after a short trial he was acquitted, ostensibly on the ground of self defense. The *Star-Bulletin* said editorially that he was freed on sentiment. In comment on this affair both the *Advertiser* and the *Star-Bulletin* emphatically declared that acts of lawlessness ought not to be tolerated even under the strong provocation that was offered. "Acts of violence under the stress of war influence and excitement must not be encouraged here or in any other

American community." "Loyal citizens must respect the law and there must be no advocacy of Judge Lynch, either by one man with a gun or by a mob with a rope. Others must be made to respect the law by those sworn to administer it. We believe they will hereafter."

A week after the shooting of Walker a mass meeting called by Mayor Fern was held in the Capitol grounds to discuss the question of an internment camp. Speeches were made by a number of representative citizens and resolutions adopted which expressed a belief that "all persons who sympathize with our alien enemies, or who express disloyal or unpatriotic wishes, or who attempt to injure in any way the lives and property of our citizens" should be interned for the period of the war. A committee, composed of Lorrin Andrews, chairman, Mayor J. J. Fern, W. J. Sheldon, M. C. Pacheco, John A. Balch, M. Negoro, A. Y. Seto, Fred Harrison, R. O. Matheson, and W. R. Farrington, was appointed to take action for the carrying out of the purpose of the resolutions. The committee held several meetings, forwarded a copy of the resolutions to the Department of Justice in Washington, and, through sub-committees, drafted two bills, one providing for the establishment of an internment camp and one to define and punish disloyalty, for introduction into the legislature at a special session which had been called by the governor.

On the opening day of the special session (May 14), Representative Lorrin Andrews introduced the bill providing for the internment of alien enemies. It was eventually passed by the House, but was tabled in the Senate on the ground that it was in conflict with the laws of the United States and the President's proclamation on the subject of alien enemies. In lieu of the bill a resolution was introduced and passed by both houses requesting the President to establish in the territory an internment camp for the detention of alien enemies dangerous to the safety of the United States. The disloyalty bill was introduced in the Senate by Senator M. C. Pacheco and, with some amendment, was passed and became a law.



No internment camp was established in Hawaii, however. The resolutions adopted by the Vigilance Corps and the mass meeting in the Capitol grounds called forth a reply from the Department of Justice to the effect that the department had "no present intention of establishing an internment camp in Hawaii." The letter also intimated that the department believed the people of Hawaii were allowing their patriotic zeal to carry them too far in their discrimination against alien enemies and were not giving heed to the injunction contained in the President's proclamation of April 6, 1917 (quoted in the early part of this chapter). It was subsequently explained that the department got this impression from a perusal of the communications received from the United States district attorney and marshal in the territory. This virtual charge that alien enemies were being persecuted in Hawaii was strongly resented. The district attorney and marshal denied that they had ever written anything that would justify such an accusation. A committee of the Vigilance Corps, after investigating the matter, agreed with those two officials and expressed the opinion that the Department of Justice misunderstood the local situation. As a result of the early close of the war the question soon ceased to be of more than academic interest. A letter was received from the War Department toward the end of July, acknowledging receipt of the resolution adopted by the legislature. It referred to the existing arrangements for arrest and temporary restraint of alien enemies in Hawaii and for their transfer to the mainland for permanent internment, and added that it was not considered advisable, economically or otherwise, to change that procedure.

There were two cases of disloyalty in Hawaii which created intense interest throughout the territory. One was the case of an army chaplain, Captain Franz J. Feinler, a naturalized citizen of German birth, who was arrested by the military authorities at the beginning of March, 1918, and tried by a court martial. The Vigilance Corps had an active part in collecting the evidence against him. Captain Feinler was found guilty and sentenced "to be dismissed from the service and to be confined at hard labor

. . . for fifteen years." He was sent to McNeil Island, Washington. The other case was that of Charles Spillner, also a naturalized citizen of German birth, a luna on the Oahu Sugar Plantation, who was arrested in May, 1918, charged with spreading disloyal propaganda among the laborers on the plantation. He was indicted on four counts, tried in the federal court, found guilty, and sentenced to four years imprisonment on each count, the sentences to run consecutively, making a total of sixteen years in prison. This was the only case tried in Hawaii under the federal espionage act. After the close of the war, the case was reviewed in Washington, along with many similar cases in other parts of the country, and Spillner's sentence was reduced to three years.

## CHAPTER XX

### A WAR MEMORIAL

#### EARLY DISCUSSION

AS EARLY as March, 1918, the Daughters and Sons of Hawaiian Warriors proposed the erection of a shaft of Hawaiian lava with polished sides, on which would be carved the names of all the island boys who gave up their lives in their country's cause during the Great War. In November, just after the signing of the armistice, a similar suggestion was made by Colonel Howard Hathaway, his idea being that a monument should be raised by public subscription and be made a feature of the civic center in Honolulu. The suggestion was taken up by the Honolulu Ad Club, which on November 20, 1918, appointed a committee consisting of Colonel Hathaway, Ned Loomis, and W. D. Westervelt to make an investigation and confer with other organizations in the city on the subject. While the movement for a war memorial was thus getting under way, the *Star-Bulletin* voiced the feeling of many in the community when it asked why the territory's enduring tribute to its war heroes might not be something more pretentious than a simple monument.

The Ad Club committee sent invitations to all civic organizations in Honolulu, requesting them to appoint representatives to attend a conference on December 6. At that meeting an organization was formed for the general committee on a war memorial, Colonel Hathaway being made chairman and Fred W. Beckley secretary. A second meeting was called for January 10, 1919, and all civic organizations in the territory were invited to send delegates. At this meeting, after a general discussion of the question, a sub-committee composed of Princess Kalaniana'ole, Mrs. Walter Macfarlane, Mrs. A. A. Young, Mrs. J. M. Dowsett, C. R. Hemenway, Senator John H. Wise, and J. D. Mc-

Inerny was appointed to prepare a report on a design and probable cost of a memorial.

Simultaneously with the activities of the war memorial committee, there was going on a public discussion of the subject in the newspapers and elsewhere. From this discussion emerged definite support for two types of memorial: (1) a monument, to consist of a statuary group alone or of a statuary group with a fountain; and (2) a memorial building, to contain an auditorium and other features of a practical character as well as places for war relics, memorial tablets, and possibly also a statuary group. Various sites were proposed, the one most commonly mentioned being the strip of land between the Judiciary Building and Punchbowl street (now occupied by the Territorial Office Building). Governor McCarthy's message to the legislature, which convened on February 19, contained this reference to the subject:

"We owe it to the splendid young men of Hawaii who went forth to the colors in answer to the call of their country, on land or on sea, to do something perpetuating the memory of their faith and allegiance. There has been much discussion and many ideas have been presented as to a suitable memorial for these men. At this time I wish to suggest that if the Territory gain possession of the block of land on the seaward side of the Judiciary Square a suitable building, with appropriate statuary, could be erected thereon to be used as an auditorium where large public gatherings could be held. I believe that the Territory should furnish the site and one-half the cost of this building, the other half to be paid by public subscription. The suggestion has been made that the auditorium should be under the control of a board, similar to that governing the Library of Hawaii."

In line with the governor's suggestion, Senator M. C. Pacheco on March 3 introduced in the legislature a bill to provide for the construction of a memorial building. The bill called for the creation of a "Victory Fund" of about \$600,000, half to be raised by popular subscription and half by special

taxation, to be used in the erection of a memorial building to be known as "Victory Hall," containing an auditorium and other rooms, with a statuary group, memorial tablets, etc. Later in the month Senator Pacheco suggested that, with a small appropriation for necessary alterations, the National Guard armory might be converted into a suitable memorial hall.

#### PURCHASE OF IRWIN PROPERTY AT WAIKIKI

On March 24 the war memorial committee met for the purpose of hearing the report of its sub-committee. The majority (John H. Wise, Mrs. A. A. Young, J. D. McInerny, Mrs. J. M. Dowsett, and C. R. Hemenway) presented a report favoring a combination of monument and auditorium, the monument to be a group of sculpture with or without a fountain, the whole to be located on the site between the Judiciary Building and Punchbowl street. Mrs. Walter Macfarlane presented a minority report recommending "that in connection with the civic center, a monument or a fountain symbolizing the freedom of humanity and human brotherhood, be erected." In the course of the discussion that followed the reading of these reports, an entirely new plan was brought forward, namely, the purchase of the Irwin beach property at Waikiki, which had lain idle for a long time, and its conversion into a public park, with such subsequent development as might be appropriate. This suggestion met with instant favor and a committee, consisting of John Guild, Mrs. Walter Macfarlane, Mrs. John Baird, Mrs. A. G. M. Robertson, and Alexander Hume Ford, was named to look into the matter.

An investigation soon disclosed that the property could be acquired for \$200,000, which was considered a very reasonable price, and the great desirability of enlarging the public beach frontage gave weight to the proposition. Senator Pacheco's bill, which was still before the Senate, was tabled on recommendation of the committee of the whole house and a new bill was introduced, providing for the acquisition, for park and other public purposes, of the Irwin beach property (not including the build-

ings) by means of an issuance of territorial bonds. The bill was passed with little delay and with practical unanimity and received the approval of the governor on April 29, 1919. The act provided that the name of any park created out of the property should be "Memorial Park." Issuance of the bonds and formal transfer of the property to the territory were accomplished during the summer and fall; and the park was formally dedicated on the first anniversary of the signing of the armistice, the dedicatory exercises being in charge of the recently formed local organization of the American Legion. An address of acceptance on behalf of the people of the territory was made by Captain A. L. C. Atkinson, followed by a pageant symbolizing Hawaii's response to the nation's call for war service.

#### DEVELOPMENT OF PLANS FOR MEMORIAL

With the purchase of the Irwin property the general public interest in a war memorial abated to a certain extent. It was felt that further development should come only after a very careful study of the possibilities of the beach site. The war memorial committee continued in existence for some time, but the initiative in the matter soon passed to the American Legion, which was organized throughout the territory during 1919 and 1920. Promotion of the war memorial idea was undertaken by the Honolulu Post, with the enthusiastic backing of all the other Posts in the Department. In 1920 a committee was formed to work up the project, the following being included in its membership: A. Lester Marks, chairman, J. K. Butler, L. S. Cain, A. L. C. Atkinson, A. T. Longley, H. P. O'Sullivan, Norman Watkins, Senator L. M. Judd, J. R. Galt, L. B. Reeves, Alexander May, R. L. Richards, G. H. Angus; the Chamber of Commerce was represented by Sherwood Lowrey, the Rotary Club by R. N. Burnham, the Ad Club by Milo Vanek, and the Hawaiian Academy of Art and Design by Gordon Usborne.

The committee devoted much time and thought to consideration of the subject, and brought its deliberations to a con-

clusion just on the eve of the opening of the 1921 legislative session. The scheme evolved called for a memorial natatorium with a pavilion and attractive landscaping of Memorial Park, the swimming pool itself to be of Olympic proportions. It was thought that the plan could be carried out for \$250,000, and the legislature was asked to provide the funds by means of a bond issue. On the opening day of the session Senator Judd introduced a bill providing for an issue of bonds to produce \$250,000 for the construction of a memorial at Memorial Park to the men and women of Hawaii who served during the Great War. The bill further provided for the appointment of a Territorial War Memorial Commission to make arrangements for and conduct an architectural competition for the design of the memorial and to decide upon and designate the scheme of memorial to be adopted. "These plans shall include a swimming course at least 100 meters in length, and such other features as the commission may designate." The memorial was to be constructed under the supervision of the superintendent of public works, who was, however, authorized and directed to employ the winning architect to furnish detailed plans and specifications and to assist him in supervising the construction of the memorial. The bill was promptly passed by the two branches of the legislature and approved by the governor on March 15, 1921.

As members of the Territorial War Memorial Commission, Governor McCarthy, at the suggestion of the American Legion, appointed A. Lester Marks, John R. Galt, and A. L. C. Atkinson. When Mr. Atkinson removed from the territory two or three years later, J. K. Butler was named as the third member of the Commission. The Commission organized by the election of Mr. Marks as chairman and Mr. Galt as secretary. Louis Christian Mullgardt, a Fellow of the American Institute of Architects, was appointed advisory architect and prepared a general scheme for an ultimate complete development of Memorial Park, which was adopted by the Commission. According to this plan the war memorial was to consist of a temple of

music, plaza, and colosseum with swimming basin. Mr. Mullgardt arranged for a competition under the general rules of the American Institute of Architects. Seven cash prizes were offered, three of \$1,000 each and four of \$500 each. The jury of award was composed of the governor of the territory, the mayor of Honolulu, and three architects selected by the Commission from a list of five nominated by the San Francisco subcommittee on competitions of the American Institute of Architects. The three architects selected were: Bernard R. Maybeck of San Francisco, Ellis F. Lawrence of Portland, and W. R. B. Willcox of Seattle.

The competition came to a close on June 20, 1922. Louis P. Hobart of San Francisco won the first prize. The winning design was enthusiastically praised by the judges of the contest for the manner in which it interpreted the spirit of Hawaii. "It reveals a fine, discriminating taste and ability in architectural design, and in such landscape treatment as reflects the highly individual color and flavor of Hawaii and Honolulu; it forecasts a memorial which will sustain an appropriate interest into the distant future, and perpetuate the noble thought and purpose which animated the original conception of the project."

#### BUILDING OF MEMORIAL NATATORIUM

As required by the law, Mr. Hobart was employed to prepare the detailed plans and specifications for the project, and when these were completed, bids were invited for construction of the memorial. When the day arrived for opening the bids (September 10, 1923), none had been received. Preliminary estimates by contractors showed that it would be utterly impossible to carry out the plans within the amount available. Since it was likewise impossible to modify the plans as a whole in such a way as to keep within the appropriation, the only alternative was to amend the law so that part of the project might be completed with the funds available, which had been in the treasury since December, 1922. The question, therefore, came before the legislature of 1925 for appropriate action, and a law



was passed which gave all necessary authority to the superintendent of public works to go ahead with the construction, according to revised plans, of such part of the memorial, including the swimming pool, as could be completed within the appropriation.

Under this authorization Mr. Hobart was asked to prepare a modified plan for the natatorium. This was received in Honolulu in January, 1926, and was approved by Superintendent of Public Works Lyman H. Bigelow and by the War Memorial Commission. Detailed plans and specifications were prepared and bids again called for, to be opened August 21, 1926; but for the second time, none were received. In view of this fact, the plans were once more revised, this time by the department of public works; new working plans and specifications were drawn up and bids called for early in 1927. The contract was awarded to J. L. Cliff, and the natatorium (nearing completion as this volume goes to press) will be finished at a cost for construction amounting to approximately \$218,000. An incentive to speedy completion of the project was the fact that the men's national outdoor swimming championship meet was to be held in Honolulu in August, 1927, and the contract was drawn up with that in view.

While the entire contract was not completed by the day set for the opening of the meet (August 24), it was far enough along so that the swimming pool could be used. In the evening of that day, the natatorium, constituting the first unit of Hawaii's war memorial, was formally dedicated with a program arranged by the American Legion. After a number of musical selections by the 64th Coast Artillery Band, Governor W. R. Farrington delivered a short address, in which he paid a tribute to those who lost their lives in the war and pointed out that the natatorium would stand as a monument not only to the memory of Hawaii's heroic dead but also to the present and future youth of the territory. At the conclusion of the governor's remarks, taps were sounded, and the band played the "Star Spangled Banner," following which Duke Kahanamoku, Hawaii's greatest

swimming champion, gave a 100-meter freestyle exhibition swim. The national swimming championships then started and during this and the three following evenings the best swimmers of the United States and Japan tested the quality of the swimming pool. Their enthusiastic praise and the breaking of a dozen records gave the natatorium an appropriate inauguration.

Governor Farrington, in his message to the legislature of 1927, referred to the delays which had hindered the earlier carrying out of plans for Hawaii's war memorial, and made an earnest plea for completion of the project as originally outlined. He said: "There should be no turning back in the completion of this memorial along the lines and under the design originally secured through the cooperation of the members of the American Legion. The design was approved and highly commended by architects of national and international standing. They considered it to be most appropriate, and especially in keeping with the tropical and architectural atmosphere of Hawaii. We should not at this time hesitate to establish in enduring form our tribute to the self-sacrifice, courage and patriotism of those who answered the call to service in the day of national emergency. It has been a source of regret that interest in this enterprise has seemingly lagged. I trust that the construction of the first unit will be a signal for renewed enthusiasm to guarantee the completing of the whole project."

APPENDIX A  
THE SELECTIVE DRAFT

I. DISTRICT AND LOCAL EXEMPTION BOARDS

*District Board*

Francis J. Green, Chairman, appointed Aug. 16, 1917; resigned Oct., 1917.  
Dr. James R. Judd, appointed Aug. 16, 1917.  
Charles R. Hemenway, appointed Aug. 16, 1917.  
Percy M. Pond, appointed Aug. 16, 1917.  
Clarence L. Crabbe, Chairman succeeding Balch, appointed Aug. 16, 1917.  
John A. Balch, Chairman succeeding Green, appointed Oct. 16, 1917; resigned June, 1918.  
Thomas E. Wall, appointed June 25, 1918.

*Local Boards*

*Honolulu, Division No. 1*

H. Gooding Field, Chairman, appointed Sept. 14, 1917; resigned Jan., 1918.  
Antonio Perry, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.  
Dr. A. F. Jackson, appointed Sept. 14, 1917; resigned Nov., 1918.  
John Drew, appointed Oct. 29, 1917.  
John Guild, appointed Oct. 29, 1917.  
Clarence H. Cooke, Chairman succeeding Field, appointed Jan. 12, 1918.  
Dr. W. C. Hobdy, appointed Nov. 12, 1918.

*Honolulu, Division No. 2*

George F. Renton, Chairman, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.  
George R. Carter, appointed Sept. 14, 1917; resigned Sept., 1917.  
Dr. H. B. Cooper, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.  
Frederick J. Lowery, appointed Oct. 5, 1917.  
Benjamin L. Marx, appointed Oct. 29, 1917.  
Alfred W. Eames, appointed Oct. 29, 1917.

*Hawaii, Division No. 1*

H. B. Elliott, appointed Sept. 14, 1917; resigned Dec., 1917.  
Val Stevenson, appointed Sept. 14, 1917; resigned Oct., 1917.  
Dr. L. L. Sexton, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.  
W. H. Smith, Chairman, appointed Oct. 24, 1917.  
James Henderson, appointed Dec. 12, 1917.

*Hawaii, Division No. 2*

Thomas C. White, Chairman, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.  
L. Macfarlane, appointed Sept. 14, 1917; resigned Sept., 1917.  
Dr. O. A. Jeffreys, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.  
William McQuaid, appointed Oct. 3, 1917; resigned ?  
Frank R. Greenwell, appointed Aug. 13, 1918.

*Maui*

Clement Crowell, Chairman, appointed Sept. 14, 1917; resigned July, 1918.  
 William F. Kaae, Chairman succeeding Crowell, appointed Sept. 14, 1917;  
 resigned Nov., 1918.

Dr. William Osmer, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.

William H. Field, appointed July 10, 1918.

John J. Walsh, Chairman succeeding Kaae, appointed Nov. 13, 1918.

*Kauai*

William H. Rice, Chairman, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.

John M. Kaneakua, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.

Dr. J. M. Kuhns, appointed Sept. 14, 1917.

## II. TRAVELING MEDICAL ADVISORY BOARD

*Letter of Major C. B. Cooper, M. R. C., to Governor L. E. Pinkham,  
 dated April 9, 1918*

1. Owing to the paucity of physicians, especially in the country districts of these Islands (averaging one Caucasian M. D.), in order to carry out the intent of the law in the Selective Service Draft, it was necessary to appoint a special Medical Advisory Board which would be composed of medical men who had not been members or associate members of local Boards, as such appointments would necessarily require local Medical Advisory Boards to review their own work.

2. In taking up this problem with Colonel R. G. Ebert, Department Surgeon, he suggested that in this important matter a Board composed of medical officers of the United States Army, whose interest in any individual or corporate conditions would be negative, could be used to the best advantage, and the matter was taken up through proper military channels by the Governor of Hawaii, through the Department Commander, Brigadier General John P. Wisser.

3. When the situation was explained to General Wisser, he readily acquiesced (as has always been his attitude in any reasonable proposition affecting the conditions in these Islands), and requested the Department Surgeon, Colonel R. G. Ebert, to name a Board of three medical officers and three non-commissioned officers, the latter for duty as clerks, to report for duty to Major Chas. B. Cooper, M. R. C., Aide to the Governor of Hawaii, as adviser and in charge of the Medical Advisory Boards.

4. This Board was assigned to duty on February 8, 1918, but owing to the non-completion of the work of the local boards on the Islands, it began active duty in Honolulu for three weeks, helping out our local Medical Advisory Board.

5. This is the schedule of this Board to date, and its labors are now completed.

February 8-March 11. On duty as members of the Travelling Medical Advisory Board, Selective Service Draft, at Honolulu, T. H.

March 12-16. On duty as members of the Travelling Medical Advisory Board, Selective Service Draft, on Island of Kauai, T. H.

March 17-23. On duty as members of the Travelling Medical Advisory Board, Selective Service Draft, on Island of Maui, T. H.

March 24-April 9. On duty as members of the Travelling Medical Advisory Board, Selective Service Draft, on Island of Hawaii, T. H.

The task was not an easy one, as I personally know, having accompanied the party and assisted in the work. The ocean travel, long distances between places where examinations were held, difficulty in getting suitable buildings for examinations in some out districts, the motley class of registrants—all nationalities and few understanding English, made it difficult to elicit correct information. However, without exception we had the most hearty co-operation given us by the local Boards and Police Department. As soon as I can get statistical data, which will be of future value to the Territory, I will present a full report covering the work by all the local and Medical Advisory Boards on these Islands. This, I hope, will be forthcoming not later than the end of this month.

6. I wish as Medical Aide to the Governor of Hawaii, and in charge of and adviser to the Medical Advisory Boards of this Territory, to take this occasion to express my appreciation of the services rendered to this Territory and the Federal Government by the three Medical Reserve Officers of this Board, Major A. V. Hennessy, Captain A. J. Markley and Captain J. P. Cleary. These medical officers were especially appointed by Colonel Ebert for their professional qualifications and I wish to express my personal thanks for their hearty co-operation in every way in helping me to carry out my instructions to finish the tour of the Islands with "expedition, efficiency and economy." The good work done by these gentlemen will show itself when mobilization takes place.

III. REGISTRATIONS, BY LOCAL BOARDS  
(Excluding cancellations)

BOARD	Class of July, 1917	Class of July, 1918	Class of Oct., 1918	Total
Honolulu No. 1.....	4,386	232	6,143	10,761
Honolulu No. 2.....	8,736	589	13,799	23,124
Hawaii No. 1.....	5,834	374	7,971	14,179
Hawaii No. 2.....	1,822	149	2,686	4,657
Maui .....	3,828	291	5,888	10,007
Kauai .....	2,880	628	5,054	8,562
Total.....	27,486	2,263	41,541	71,290

IV. CALLS, INDUCTIONS, ACCEPTANCES, AND REJECTIONS, BY LOCAL BOARDS  
(From *Final Report of the Provost Marshal General*, page 64)

LOCAL BOARD	Total called	Total inducted	Total accepted	Total rejected	Total rejected. Cancellation of draft
Hawaii No. 1.....	.....	1,952	1,760	192	.....
Hawaii No. 2.....	.....	593	517	76	.....
Honolulu No. 1.....	.....	532	452	79	1
Honolulu No. 2.....	.....	1,642	1,466	176	.....
Kauai .....	.....	473	452	21	.....
Maui .....	.....	816	753	63	.....
Total.....	5,420	6,008	5,400	607	1

# APPENDIX B

## GRADUATES OF OFFICERS' TRAINING CAMPS AT SCHOFIELD BARRACKS

### I. FIRST CAMP, ENDING NOVEMBER 26, 1917

#### *Commissioned as Captains*

Phil H. Conniston	John D. Easton
Lewis Abshire	William J. Hampton
Lewis F. Pagel	Herbert E. Wescott
William L. Warren	A. L. C. Atkinson
Homer G. Davies	

#### *Commissioned as First Lieutenants*

Andrew Farrell	Robert E. White
Paul V. Knudsen	Chauncey F. Cleveland
William H. Young	Archie W. Brown
Hogarth Pettyjohn	Ralph B. Walker
Albert B. Clark	Frank A. Lufkin
John S. B. Pratt, Jr.	Morris H. Forbes
Cyril F. Damon	Fred C. Moore
Nicholas Nanassey	John F. McDevitt
George T. Bettin	Ward D. Walker
Wallace McK. Cooper	Philip L. Rice
Henry P. O'Sullivan	Fay E. McCall
Eben S. Cushingam	Theodore B. Marshall
George Hutchinson	Robert D. King
Edward W. Carden	Alexander R. Robertson
Wilhelm Anderson	Homer F. McDaniel
Lewis T. Lyman	Edward J. Malaniff
Harvey T. Cassedy	Arthur C. Betts
Abner T. Longley	W. A. Simpson
Kinichi Sakai	

#### *Commissioned as Second Lieutenants*

Allen Renton	Allen S. Davis
Allen E. Parmelee	Oscar W. Gibson
J. Atherton Gilman	Samuel W. Carter
A. Lester Marks	Edgar Anderson
Fred H. Austin	Addington L. Wise
William H. Keller	Alvin K. Robinson
Benjamin H. Watson	

*Candidates Commissioned Before Close of Camp but Who Remained to Complete the Course**Captains*

Herbert T. Osborne	Harold E. Stafford
Lewis B. Withers	

*First Lieutenants*

Albert B. Carter	Fred P. Rawson
Ralph E. Doty	Willard C. Ross
Kenneth W. Emerson	John G. Watkins

*Second Lieutenants*

Alfred R. Baird	Harry Henry
Herrick C. Brown	Donald M. Ladd
Adrian A. Engelhard	Charles O. Murray
George H. Thrush	

## II. SECOND CAMP, ENDING APRIL, 19, 1918

Graduates given certificates of eligibility for commissions, to be commissioned as Second Lieutenants as rapidly as needed.

*From the National Guard of Hawaii*

Herman V. von Holt	John W. Dassel
James L. Cushingham	Romayne R. Rohlfing
Thomas C. Boylan	Morris B. Value
Ludwig E. Langer	Edward B. Jackson
Frank S. Lee	R. W. Gray
Kimball Ho	William B. Shields
Chauncey Smith	Swinton D. Aldrich
Willard R. Grace	John W. Siddall
Harold E. Marsh	Arthur R. Brown
Erling W. Hedemann	Charles C. Crozier
Abraham Earl Cohen	

*From the Regular Army*

Melvin L. Crisp	James G. Boylan
Matt D. Cottrell	William E. Hoover
Neil van Overen	Alexander R. Slowitzky
Robert C. Sellers	Elmer Hurley
Ernest E. Neice	Frank W. Beebe
Werner D. Moore	Harold J. Kilty
Wilbur D. Feather	Joseph A. Kilroy
Wilfred C. Dittoe	William J. Farrell
William E. Heist	Eugene M. Lee
Robert Coleman	James M. Stuart
Glenn E. Hoover	Frank J. Lawrence
Harold E. Kerry	John E. Crosby
Preston B. Rowland	William R. Wall



Lyman Smock  
Harry R. Martin  
Edward P. Heelon  
Watson R. Copeland  
Herbert P. Tilgner  
William H. Shirley  
Charles R. Seitz  
Albert John  
Emil N. Olson

Raymond Jones  
Stephen Tammany  
Mack Evans  
Arthur D. Rains  
Roy Bedford  
William J. Sutherland  
Richard E. Jarvis  
Jesse Conway  
Jesse Coleman

*Candidates Who Passed the Course, but Cannot Qualify Until They Have Completed Their Citizenship*

James Sinclair

O. T. Weber

J. Roy Patten

*Candidates Commissioned in Officers' Reserve Corps as Second Lieutenants and Assigned to Active Duty*

Ralph P. Quarles

Frederick R. Hockett

III. THIRD CAMP, ENDING AUGUST 26, 1918

*Commissioned as Second Lieutenants*

Leon F. Colbert  
Charles J. Willett  
James H. McDonald  
Ocey P. Kyle  
Clarence Ward  
Donald B. Blanding  
Charles M. Hite  
Joe Collins  
William D. Rosson  
Frank G. Sutherland  
Christian M. Evanson  
William H. Storms  
Fred P. Callsen  
William Dykes  
John P. O'Keefe  
William L. S. Williams  
William H. McCurdy  
Thomas E. Hill  
Cyrus M. Flick  
Edward T. Kellogg  
Urban Rushing  
Thomas S. Abel  
Herbert Hansen  
Elton M. Hilton  
Harold E. Lindsay  
John F. Sneed  
George K. Moore  
Howard W. Gilbert  
Arthur R. Campbell

Lawrence L. McCray  
Lesley Y. Correthers  
John A. Marshall  
Walter J. Jastrzomski  
Louis C. Brown  
John G. Zabriskie  
Herbert W. Camp  
George D. Craig  
Gustave C. Ballentyne  
Wallace H. McKay  
James M. Duffy  
Elwin D. Johnson  
David W. Adams  
Aldus H. Eshelman  
Sydney G. Nicholson  
Ernest E. Young  
Roy J. Bayless  
Robert J. Hawkins  
Charles E. Ackerman  
Robert P. Palmer  
Robert M. Hamill  
John P. Van Valkenburg  
Albert L. Winter  
John Galt  
James J. Kenny  
Percival O. Carter  
Oren H. Upton  
Claude H. Riggs  
Oscar Letterman

Ralf McLain  
Herbert C. Popp  
Waldo W. Wallace  
Samuel C. Windham  
Henry R. Whaley  
Karl W. Harvell  
Sebert H. Mattingly  
Roger L. Noyes  
Benjamin H. Franklin  
William A. Maddry  
Charley Caldwell  
Roy R. Sears  
George M. Potter  
Burt B. McLean  
Richard E. Clapp  
Frederick A. Schaefer  
James P. Morgan  
David W. Townsend  
John Shelby  
Alderc W. Reindeau  
Roger T. Leavitt  
Ross Page  
Dele M. Elder  
Dabney H. Sneed  
William P. Saffold

Arthur Matthews  
Robert G. von Tempsky  
Henry I. Kyle  
Josiah O. Tooley  
Otis L. Butler  
Emil H. Dahlstrom  
Lewis N. Stewart  
Urban E. Wild  
Raymond O. Vandiver  
Ralph D. Harmon  
Henry Moses  
Erbie O. Thomas  
Clarence Hazelwood  
Bernard W. Vicars  
Earl S. Elmore  
Roy W. Cook  
Ferdinand R. Tripner  
Leo L. Cole, Jr.  
William C. Morgan  
Travis M. Fisk  
Arthur V. von Rhein  
Harry R. Stowe  
Napoleon Edwards  
William G. Burkhart  
Noell Wilson



## ERRATA

Page 2, line 3. *For* "merchants ships" *read* "merchant ships."

Page 19. The statement about the schooner *Hermes* may be misleading. The schooner retained that name until some time after the war, but in recent years has been renamed the *Lanikai*.

Page 43, line 10. Queen Liliuokalani died on Sunday, Nov. 11, 1917. While the National Guard encampment started on Nov. 9, more than half of the Guardsmen went into camp on Nov. 11.

Page 62, sub-head. *For* "Roundng" *read* "Rounding."

Page 111, third line from bottom, and Index. *For* "Mrs. J. A. Cockburn" *read* "Mrs. J. L. Cockburn."

Page 155, lines 12-13. *For* "Dr. F. A. Putman" *read* "Dr. F. L. Putman."

Page 378, lines 3-4, and Index. *For* "G. Negro" *read* "M. Negro."

# INDEX

- Adams, Dr. C., 132  
Ad Club, 54, 75, 84, 91-95, 101, 165, 217, 233, 236, 237, 239-241, 244, 246, 248, 299, 301, 312, 315, 323, 364, 410, 411, 447, 450.  
*Advertiser*, 10, 15, 42, 55, 87, 88, 100, 145, 150, 218, 244, 288, 321, 331, 351, 372, 405, 407, 408, 410, 434, 435, 443  
*Aeolus*, 4  
Agee, Miss Etta B., 276  
Agee, H. P., 337  
Agee, Mrs. H. P., 313, 315  
Ahahui Puuhonua o na Hawaii, 413  
*Ahlers*, 3, 4, 9, 18  
Ai, C. K., 96, 120, 319, 379  
Aiken, W. O., 314  
Akana, Rev. A., 339, 413  
Albrecht, Miss Anna, 175  
*Alert*, 86  
Alexander, Mrs. A. C., 279, 281-284, 287, 289, 298, 343-346, 420  
Alexander, Miss Helen, 270  
Alexander, Miss Mary C., 178, 234  
Alexander, W. M., 102  
Allen, Mrs. G. F., 301  
Allen, H., 443  
Allen, R. H., 141, 195, 196, 205-208, 211, 212, 214, 236  
Allen, Mrs. R. H., 274  
"Aloha Engineers", 87-90  
Aluli, N., 413  
American Factors, 315, 433  
American-Hawaiian Steamship Co., 110, 386-388, 390  
American Legion, 291, 450, 451, 453  
Amoy, Mrs., 150  
Ancill, Mrs. H. J., 149  
Anderson, Miss Elizabeth, 229  
Anderson, R. B., 183  
Anderson, Miss Ruth, 89  
Andrews, A. L., 323  
Andrews, Mrs. A. L., 151, 270, 344, 420  
Andrews, C. B., 74  
Andrews, Mrs. C. B., 272  
Andrews, L., 312, 324, 352, 444  
Andrews, Mrs. L., 109  
Andrus, G. A., 249, 274, 302, 321  
Angus, G. H., 74, 365, 450  
*Annie Johnson*, 388  
Anti-Saloon League, 406, 407, 410, 412, 413  
Armenian Relief, 105-107  
*Asama*, 4, 5  
Ash, Miss Frances, 288  
Ashford, Judge C. W., 373  
Atherton, C. H., 298  
Atherton, F. C., 107, 120, 242, 246, 298, 302, 303, 432, 433  
Atherton, Mrs. F. C., 281  
Atkinson, A. L. C., 75, 450, 451  
Ault, Canon, 346  
Austin, H. A. R., 74  
Austrian Relief, 101, 104-106  
Awoki, S., 310, 314  
*Aztec*, 16  
Bagley, L. A., 297  
Baird, Mrs. J., 449  
Balch, J. A., 421, 434, 444  
Baldwin, F. F., 33, 422  
Baldwin, Mrs. F. F., 104, 123, 128, 134, 143  
Baldwin, Mrs. H. A., 160  
Baldwin, Dr. W. D., 142, 173, 195, 202, 340  
Barnhart, G. H. W., 80  
Barns, C. C., 254  
Bartlett, C. W., 54, 231  
Bascon, Miss M. K., 175  
Basler, C., 274  
Batten, Dr. G., 132  
Bayerle, E. D., 254  
Bayless, R. W., 254  
Beck, B. D., 254  
Beckley, F. W., 447  
Beckley, H. P., 142, 156, 194, 195, 209, 213, 214  
Belgian Relief, 100-106, 164, 219, 229  
Bell, Mrs. A., 149  
Benedict, Miss Ruth, 148, 195, 214  
Benner, Mrs. E., 145, 272  
Berg, Mrs. A., 116, 137, 155, 260  
Berndt, E. A., 240, 246, 247, 249, 252, 411  
Bigelow, L. H., 453  
Bingman, C. E., 254  
Bishop, E. F., 102  
Bishop, Mrs. E. F., 133

- Biven, F., 178-180  
 Blake, F. E., 339  
 Blesse, C. H., 251, 252  
 Bluett, P. W. P., 395  
 Bockus, C. G., 339, 343  
 Bodel, Rev. J. K., 125, 126  
 Bond, Mrs. B. D., 344  
 Bottomley, A. W. T., 102, 308, 430, 433  
 Bowdish, Mrs. A. C., 344  
 Bowen, Mrs. S., 420  
 Bowman, D. S., 253  
 Boy Scouts, 57, 59, 89, 117, 168, 310, 312, 313, 315, 317, 318, 322, 325, 333, 345, 361, 363, 364, 418  
 Boys' Working Reserve, 267, 300, 394-396  
 Branco, F., 235  
 Breckons, R. W., 437, 440  
 British Army, Volunteers for, 83-85, 90  
 British relief, 101, 102, 106, 110, 111, 113, 215-218, 233  
 Brown, A. M., 145  
 Brown, F. I., 178-180  
 Brown, G. A., 248, 313  
 Brown, G. I., 156, 157, 421  
 Brown, Mrs. G. I., 145, 271  
 Brown, Mrs. K., 224, 229  
 Brown, Miss Mary K., 133  
 Brown, R. J., 156  
 Brundred, Miss Lois, 175  
 Bryan, E., Jr., 303  
 Bryan, K. C., 395  
 Bukeley, R., 142, 194, 198-202  
 Burnham, R. N., 57, 450  
 Burnham, Mrs. R. N., 269, 273  
 Burr, H., 254  
 Bush, A. S., 178, 180, 181  
 Butler, J. K., 74, 323, 363, 450, 451  
 Buttolph, G. H., 311, 313-317  
 Cabral, M., 182  
 Cain, L. S., 450  
 Caldwell, Mrs. J. W., 218  
 Camara, B., 235  
 Camara, J. M., 300  
 Cameron, Mrs. E. R., 287, 289  
 Campbell, A. J., 363, 430  
 Campbell, A. N., 319  
 Campbell, C. C., 422  
 Campsie, Mrs. 153  
 Cannon, F. Q., 289  
 Carl Schurz, 19, 130  
 Carson, Mrs. M. de M., 160  
 Carter, Miss Elizabeth, 116  
 Carter, G. R., 54, 107, 120, 123, 125, 126, 154, 166, 167, 184, 185, 364, 421, 438  
 Carter, Mrs. G. R., 116, 133, 150, 281  
 Carter, Miss Phoebe, 117  
 Cartwright, B., 74  
 Case, A. H., 341  
 Castle, A. L., 108, 116, 117, 120, 121, 123-128, 131, 136-139, 156, 162, 163, 165, 178, 189, 190, 193, 195, 196, 198, 211, 212, 340, 350  
 Castle, Mrs. A. L., 155, 160  
 Castle, Miss Beatrice, 111, 112, 114, 123, 124, 126, 129, 131, 133, 135, 137-141, 143-145, 147, 155, 158, 287, 420  
 Castle, Mrs. G. P., 273  
 Castle, H. K. L., 156  
 Castle, W. R., 96, 97, 100, 101, 105, 107  
 Castle, Mrs. W. R., 111  
 Catholic church, 272, 273, 295-297  
 Catton, Miss M. M. L., 173, 218, 219, 221, 222  
 Catton, R., 215  
 Central Grammar School, 346, 395  
 Central Union Church, 109, 113, 145, 148, 272, 273, 345  
 Chalmers, Miss A., 229  
 Chamber of Commerce, 16, 20, 54, 78, 102, 103, 219, 239-244, 257, 258, 261, 270, 287, 332, 337, 365, 390, 397, 398, 401, 405, 407, 410-412, 416, 434, 450  
 Channon, Miss Grace, 160, 257, 280, 281, 299  
 Chase, E. T., 265  
 Child, J. F., 92, 345, 350, 354, 357, 361, 367, 370, 372, 374, 376, 377, 380  
 Chillingworth, C. F., 400  
 Chillingworth, Mrs. S., 297  
 Chinese, 76, 161, 278, 279, 310, 319, 323, 341, 342, 369, 396-399  
 Christian, F. K., 302  
 Christian Church, 149, 272  
 Christman, Miss C. H., 175  
 Chuck Hoy, 92  
 Church, T. M., 74  
 Clark, Mrs. A. F., 141  
 Clark, Capt. G. R., 8, 246, 249  
 Clark, Miss Luella, 175, 270  
 Clark, Mrs. R., 260  
 Clarke, B. H., 127, 129  
 Clemons, Judge C. F., 30  
 Cliff, J. L., 453  
 Cloninger, Miss Alma, 175  
 Cockburn, J. L., 309  
 Cockburn, Mrs. J. A., 111-113, 116

- College Club, 272  
 College of Hawaii, 79-81, 133, 151, 303,  
 305, 366, 367, 380, 435, 436, 438  
 Columbus Welfare Club, 297  
 Commercial Club, 75, 169, 301, 302  
 Conant, E. E., 104  
 Conant, Mrs. E. E., 104  
 Condon, M. I., 252, 253  
 Conradt, Mrs. C., 150  
 Cooke, C. H., 120, 300, 308, 309  
 Cooke, Mrs. C. M., Jr., 218, 281, 284,  
 344, 346, 347, 349  
 Cooke, Mrs. G. P., 231, 344  
 Cooke, J. P., 102  
 Cooke, R. A., 126, 129, 432, 433  
 Cooke, Mrs. R. A., 145  
 Cooper, Dr. C. B., 46, 53, 74  
 Cooper, Mrs. E. A., 109  
 Cooper, Mrs. W. J., 154  
 Corbaley, R. N., 254  
 Corey, E. A., 254  
 Cornelison, A. C., 74  
 Correa, L. P., 235  
 Correira, M. G., 151  
 Cosgrove, F. B., 363  
 Costa, E. da, 235  
 County agents, 340-343, 345, 350, 365,  
 367  
 Cowan, Mrs. C., 154  
 Cowan, Rev. J. F., 264  
 Cox, Mrs. I. M., 286, 287  
 Cox, J. B., 177  
 Coyne, A., 74  
 Crabbe, C. L., 52  
 Craig, Miss Effie L., 173, 174  
 Crawford, D. L., 299, 305, 306  
 Crawford, F., 298, 299, 314, 323  
 Creedon, F. J., 295, 297  
 Crozier, C. R., 157  
 Dale, Mrs. W. F., 126  
 Damon, Miss Esme, 116  
 Damon, Miss Ethel, 174, 175, 232  
 Damon, F. B., 92  
 Damon, Miss Heather, 116  
 Damon, Mrs. H. F., 111, 112, 115, 117,  
 122, 133, 147, 167, 420  
 Danford, Mrs. W., 129, 153  
 Daughters of the American Revolution,  
 272, 273  
 Daughters of Hawaii, 272  
 Daughters of Warriors (Daughters  
 and Sons of Hawaiian Warriors),  
 89, 149, 150, 447  
 Dean, A. L., 80, 340, 343, 350, 355, 365,  
 371, 436  
 Deering, C. W. C., 74  
 De La Nux, Mrs., 153  
 Demobilization, 69-72, 256-264  
 Denison, F., 303  
 Deverill, P. G. H., 287, 289  
 Dewar, Miss Janet, 132, 155, 195, 202,  
 208, 214  
 Dillingham, H. G., 74  
 Dillingham, W. F., 74, 246, 247, 287,  
 430, 433  
 Dillingham, Mrs. W. F., 106, 108, 109,  
 132, 229, 231, 233, 419  
 Dizon, N., 251  
 Dobson, Miss Reba, 195, 214  
 Dobson, Miss Rebecca L., 152  
 Dodge, Rev. R. B., 266, 299  
 Dole, J. D., 337, 339, 343, 371, 378  
 Dole, S. B., 92, 95, 96, 105, 107  
 Dole, Mrs. S. B., 95  
 Doub, Miss Mabel, 195, 202  
 Dougherty F. J., 283  
 Dougherty, J. D., 46, 239, 246, 248  
 Dowsett, H., 156  
 Dowsett, Mrs. J. M., 145, 150, 287, 419,  
 447, 449  
 Draft, *see* Selective Draft  
 Dubbin, Lieut. Col. R., 160, 298  
 Dudley, F. R., 251, 252  
 Dunbar, J. A., 216  
 Dunbar, Mrs. L. M., 344  
 Du Roi, C., 434  
 Du Roi, Mrs. C., 235  
 Eames, A. W., 286, 287, 290, 292, 323  
 Easton, J. D., 25  
 Eaton, Mrs. W. L., 217  
 Ebersole, Rev. A. A., 264  
 Eckart, Mrs. C. F., 231  
 Ehlers & Co., B. F., 434  
 Elgin, Mrs. R., 124, 159, 232  
 Elks Club, 349, 350, 359  
 Elliott, Miss Narene, 276  
 Ellis, J. H., 287, 292  
 Elsass, 18, 19  
 Emerson, Mrs. J. S., 221-229, 439  
 Emory, Mrs. W. L., 218, 272  
 English, Mrs. W., 274  
 Enterprise, 388  
 Episcopal church, 271  
 Erdman, Mrs. J. P., 287, 289, 420  
 Farley, Mrs. J. K., 126  
 Farrington, W. R., 96, 120, 141, 233,  
 246, 248, 299, 304, 305, 394, 436, 444,  
 453, 454  
 Feinler, Capt. F. J., 445  
 Ferguson, Miss Grace H., 155

- Fern, Mayor J. J., 89, 287, 300, 302,  
 312, 380, 409, 439, 444  
 Field, H. G., 51, 67, 69, 421  
 Field, Mrs. H. G., 111  
 Filipinos, 29-31, 34, 36, 40, 41, 62, 161,  
 256, 277-279, 315  
 Fisher, T. A., 249  
 Fitts, Mrs. C. T., 270  
 Fitzpatrick, Miss Lillian, 195, 202, 208  
 Fitzpatrick, T. J., 295  
 Food Commission, *see* Territorial Food  
 Commission  
 Food Production and Conservation,  
 Chaps. XV and XVI; 391, 400, 401,  
 403, 404  
 Footlights Club, 272, 273  
 Forbes, C. R., 74, 175  
 Ford, A. H., 449  
 Forster, Mrs. C. M. V., 218  
 Foster, D. L., 254  
 Foster, Mrs. W. R., 149  
 Four Minute Men, 421  
 Franklin, M. A., 12  
 Frantz, H. W., 182  
 Frazier, C. R., 54, 71, 299, 346  
 Frear, W. F., 430, 432, 433  
 Frear, Mrs. W. F., 155, 269, 270, 273,  
 275, 276, 281, 283, 284, 287, 289, 298,  
 321, 419  
 Freeman, H. L., 74  
 French relief, 101, 103, 104-107, 110,  
 164, 229-233  
 Frias, J. M., 151  
*Friend*, 17, 92, 94-97, 245, 255, 267  
 Fullbrook, Mrs. K. R., 297  
 Gage, Mrs. C. B., 145  
 Galt, J. R., 74, 127, 128, 159, 161, 246-  
 248, 450, 451  
 Galt, Mrs. J. R., 420  
 Gartenberg, A., 298, 299  
 Gartley, Mrs. A., 344-347  
 Gaspar, Dr. L. R., 235  
*Geier*, 3-5, 7, 8, 18, 19, 130, 334, 423,  
 427  
 Gere, G. N., 378  
 Germans, Chap. XIX  
 German-American Alliance, 440  
 German relief, 101, 102, 106, 235  
 German ships, Chap. I, 423  
 Gibb, J., 305  
 Gill, Miss Edith, 174  
 Gill, Miss Emma, 175  
 Gill, W. G., 318  
 Gilman, J. A., 77  
 Girl Scouts, 89, 168, 322, 418  
 Girls' Patriotic League, 420  
 Givens, W. E., 254  
 Glenn, C. L., 251-253  
 Gomes, J. M., 235  
 Goodhue, Dr. E. S., 434  
 Goodhue, Mrs. E. S., 231  
 Goodrich, Mrs. M. J., 297  
 Gordon, E. L. S., 84, 85  
 Gordon, Mrs. E. L. S., 111, 116, 216  
 Gouveia, Manuel, Jr., 19  
*Gouverneur Jaeschke*, 3, 18  
*Governor*, 388  
 Graduate Nurses' Club, 152  
 Grasshof, Capt. K., 5, 8, 427  
 Grasshof diary, 427-429, 434  
 Graves, C. C., 323, 363  
 Gray, Miss Alice K., 173, 174  
 Green, F. J., 51, 52, 54-56  
 Griffiths, A. F., 127 162, 266, 325, 346  
 Griffiths, Mrs. A. F., 271, 281, 283, 287,  
 298  
 Guild, Miss Dorothy, 260  
 Guild, J., 449  
 Gurney, A. S. Le B., 128  
 Hackfeld, J. F., 429-431  
 Hackfeld, J. F., Limited, 429-433  
 Hackfeld & Co., H., 9, 12-16, 109, 169,  
 311, 315, 316, 416, 425, 428-434, 443  
 Hagens, J. F. C., 16, 74, 416, 429, 430,  
 432, 433, 435  
 Haley, F. E., 267  
 Hall, Mrs. C. L., 248  
 Hall, P., 312  
 Halsey, R. L., 302, 317  
 Hamamura, K., 371  
 Harrison, F., 444  
 Hastings, Miss Alice, 161  
 Hathaway, H., 447  
*Hawaii Educational Review*, 164, 349,  
 418  
*Hawaii Hochi*, 218  
 Hawaii Promotion Committee, 91, 92,  
 94, 390  
*Hawaii Shinpo*, 218  
 Hawaiian Allied War Relief Auxili-  
 ary, 121-123, 130, 131, 133  
 Hawaiian Allied War Relief Commit-  
 tee, 108-118, 120, 121, 132  
 Hawaiian band, 89, 260, 300, 312, 322  
 Hawaiian Lawn Tennis Association,  
 178, 181, 234  
 Hawaiian Protective Association, 413  
 Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association,  
 36, 38, 40, 58, 70, 332, 334-337, 382,  
 384, 392, 393, 416



- Hawaiian Vigilance Corps, 62, 89, 315,  
 363, 364, 371, 372, 401, 419, 421, 422,  
 424, 437, 439-441, 443, 445  
 Hawaiians, 34, 41, 84, 161, 277-279,  
 284, 323, 341, 342, 396  
 Hawes, A. G., 74  
 Hayward, H. S., 300  
 Hearsey, Miss Marguerite C., 420  
 Hedemann, C. J., 96, 97  
 Hedemann, Mrs. F. F., 128, 154  
 Hemenway, C. R., 52, 107, 120, 160,  
 287, 340, 433, 447, 449  
 Hemenway, Mrs. C. R., 289  
 Henderson, B. B., 182  
 Hendrick, Mrs. H. E., 320, 325  
 Henke, L. A., 267, 333  
 Hennessey, Miss Elizabeth, 195  
*Hermes*, 4, 10, 19  
 Heuer, Miss Maria, 435, 436, 438  
 Higgins, J. E., 54  
 Hilo Board of Trade, 332  
 Hilo war relief committee, 104  
 Hind, Mrs. J., 153  
 Hind, Mrs. R., 104  
 Hindle, W. H., 397, 398  
 Hitchcock, D. H., 54  
 Hitchcock, Miss H. C., 229  
*Hizen*, 4, 5  
 Hoapili, Mrs., 272  
 Hobdy, Dr. W. C., 132, 155  
 Hobdy, Mrs. W. C., 420  
 Hodgins, Dr. A. G., 173  
 Hoffman, Miss Florence, 195, 202-205  
 Holmes, Mrs., 112, 118  
*Holsatia*, 3, 18, 425  
 Holstein, H. L., 400  
 Homestead question, 399-404  
 Hongwanji Mission, 228, 356  
 Honolulu Automobile Club, 324  
 Honolulu Military Academy, 20, 89,  
 300  
 Hoogs, W. H., Sr., 339  
 "Hooverizing," 358-368  
 Hopkins, W. E., 257, 258, 286-291, 299  
 Hopper, Miss Margaret, 111  
 Horn, W. A., 160, 245, 247-251, 271,  
 272  
 Hostess Houses, 275-285  
 House, C. F., 160  
 Houston, Lieut. Com. V. S., 21  
 Howes, F. E., 74  
 Howland, Mrs. L. C., 420  
 Huber, Mrs. S. C., 260  
 Hughes, J. A., 106, 297, 349  
 Hugo, Mrs. H., 272  
 Humburg, J. F., 429, 430, 432, 433  
 Humphries, W., 264  
 Hunter, Miss Christina, 173, 174  
 Hutchinson, Miss Lani, 133  
 Hutton, W. H., 274, 305  
*Hyades*, 388  
 Iaukea, C. P., 121, 169, 318  
 Imamura, Bishop Y., 228, 332  
 Industrial School, 305  
 Ingalls, Mrs. A. B. (Iola B.), 105,  
 269  
 Iolani School, 395  
 Irons, Mrs. J., 151  
 Isaacs, Miss Agnes, 292  
 Isenberg, Rev. H., 438  
 Isenberg, Mrs. Dora, 438  
 Ishida, K., 378  
 Ivers, R., 339  
 Ivers, Mrs. R., 116, 133, 134  
 Jackson, Dr. A. F., 141, 173, 195, 200,  
 202-204, 214, 266  
 Jackson, G. E., 267  
 Japanese, 41, 42, 62, 76, 77, 161, 165,  
 167, 228, 229, 278, 279, 310, 314, 315,  
 319, 320, 323, 341, 342, 356, 369, 373,  
 376-378, 396  
 Japanese Chamber of Commerce, 376  
*Japanese Daily Chronicle*, 218  
 Japanese Red Cross Society, 165  
 Japanese Y. M. C. A., 272  
 Jarrett, W. P., 347  
 Javier, Mrs. J. D., 279  
 Johnson, Mrs. E., 236  
 Johnson, J. A. M., 269  
 Johnson, Mrs. Martha, 269  
 Johnson, M. O., 362  
 Johnson, Miss Mary, 152  
 Johnson, S. I., 24, 25, 27, 29, 33, 35, 38,  
 39, 42-44, 240, 249  
 Johnston, Miss Chestain, 195, 202  
 Jones, J. W., 92, 156, 238  
 Jordan, Miss E. Clara, 173, 174  
 Josephson, Miss Pearl, 289  
 Judd, Mrs. A. F., 230  
 Judd, C. S., 338  
 Judd, Dr. J. R., 52, 132, 155, 171-173,  
 233, 234  
 Judd, Mrs. J. R., 171-173, 231, 232  
 Judd, L. M., 363, 364, 450, 451  
 Junior Red Cross, 161-164  
 Kaahumanu School, 89, 305  
 Kahanamoku, Miss Bernice, 274  
 Kahanamoku, Duke, 453  
 Kaiulani School, 89, 317

- Kalaniana'ole, Jonah Kuhio, 39, 40, 64,  
     65, 68, 78, 89, 300, 322, 387, 391, 397,  
     398, 407, 408, 412-414, 443  
 Kalaniana'ole, Princess, 150, 447  
 Kalihikai School, 89  
 Kamehameha School, 81, 89, 300, 317,  
     346  
 Kanda, S., 176, 177  
 Kauluwela School, 89  
 Kaumakapili Church, 272  
 Kawaiahao Church, 272  
 Kawaiahao Seminary, 305  
 Kawanakoa, Princess, 149  
 Kelekolio, B. H., 12, 13  
 Kelley, Miss Claire, 287, 289  
 Kemp, Miss Christine, 195, 202, 214  
 Kilbourne, Dr. E. D., 132  
 Kilbourne, Mrs. E. D., 154, 275, 287,  
     289  
 Killam, L. R., 254, 266, 298  
 Killion, Mrs. F. P., 132  
 King, Mrs., 133  
 King, G. W. R., 310  
 King, N., 303  
 King, Lieut. Com. S. W., 22  
 Kingsbury, Miss Helen, 195, 202  
 Kinney, H. W., 126, 161, 325, 437, 439  
 Knights of Columbus, 217, 293-297,  
     301, 418  
 Knott, Mrs. W., 151  
 Knudsen, Mrs. E. A., 104, 123, 134, 153  
 Kopke, W. E., 136  
 Korean School, 395  
 Krauss, F. G., 341  
 Kuhlig, Miss Fanny, 195, 202  
 Kumalae, J., 379  
 Labor problem, 392-399  
 Lanai Club, 273  
 Lanai Players, 169  
 Lane, J. C., 223, 413  
 Larimer, A. E., 160, 264  
 Larimer, Mrs. A. E., 272  
 Larrison, G. K., 74  
 Lawrence, Miss Frances, 160  
 Lea, Fannie Heaslip, *see* Mrs. H. P.  
     Agee  
 Leach, R. D., 266  
 Lee, P. F., 319  
 Legislature, 12-14, 16, 23, 24, 352, 353,  
     370, 400-402, 406-408, 444, 448, 449,  
     451, 452  
 Lewis, A., Jr., 299, 311  
 Lewis, Mrs. A., Jr., 129, 163, 272, 321,  
     419  
 Lewis, Mrs. J., 260  
 Libert, Bishop, 295, 297  
 Liberty House, 434  
 Liberty Loans, Chap. XIV.  
 Liliuokalani, Queen, 43, 121, 122, 168,  
     223  
 Liliuokalani School, 89  
 Lincoln, Mrs. A. N., 419  
 Lincoln, Maj. C. S., 338, 339, 343, 405  
 Lindeman, F. J., 323, 434  
 Lindeman, Mrs. F. J., 149  
 Lindsay, D. C., 422  
 Lindsay, Mrs. D. C., 231  
*Locksun*, 3-5, 8, 18, 19  
 Long, O. E., 254, 265  
 Longley, A. T., 450  
 Loofbourrow, Rev. L. L., 248  
 Loomis, C. F., 252, 254, 262-264, 299,  
     305, 395  
*Loongmoon*, 3, 18  
 Love, Mrs. W. A., 230  
 Low, E. P., 371, 372, 379  
 Lowrey, F. D., 249, 252, 266  
 Lowrey, F. J., 102, 286, 287, 289, 290,  
     292, 430, 433  
 Lowrey, Mrs. F. J., 270, 271, 275  
 Lowrey, S., 450  
 Lucas, Mrs. J., 272  
*Lurline*, 388  
 Lynes, Miss Alice, 195, 202  
 MacAdam, D. H., 326  
 McAllister, Miss, 113  
 McBryde, W. D., 129, 167  
 McCalla, Miss Alice R., 195  
 McCandless, L. L., 374, 375, 380  
 McCarthy, C. J., 44, 46, 58, 60, 253,  
     287, 305, 317, 318, 323, 351, 352, 377,  
     401, 403, 440, 448  
 McCarthy, Mrs. C. J., 258  
 McCarthy, Miss Margaret, 324  
 MacCaughy, V., 287, 289  
 McCue, Miss Anne, 175  
 McDonald, C. A., 299  
 Macfarlane, Miss Alice, 289  
 Macfarlane, Mrs. F. W., 344, 346  
 Macfarlane, H. R., 126, 128, 129, 144,  
     189  
 Macfarlane, Mrs. H. R., 116, 150, 155,  
     420  
 Macfarlane, Mrs. W., 149, 150, 447,  
     449  
 McGaughey, Mrs. J. A., 279, 283, 284  
 McGill, J. C., 160  
 McInerney, J. D., 447, 449  
 McInerney, W. H., 398  
 McKay, Miss Mae, 103

- Mackaye, D. L., 42, 282  
 McKenzie, G. S., 287, 289, 347, 349  
 McKinley High School, 89, 151, 305, 395  
 McMenamin, Miss Elizabeth, 195, 202  
*Manoa*, 388  
 Mariner, Mrs. H. B., 125  
 Markham, Miss Mary C., 195  
 Marks, A. L., 450, 451  
 Matheson, R. O., 444  
 Matheson, Mrs. R. O., 111  
 Matson Navigation Company, 386-390  
*Matsonia*, 387, 388, 390  
 Matthewman, J. A., 195, 196  
 Matthews, Miss Sarah, 195, 214  
*Maui*, 387, 388, 390  
 Maui Fair & Racing Association, 333  
*Maverick*, 425, 426  
 May, A., 450  
 Maynard, Miss Agnes E., 155  
 Mead, R. D., 393, 421  
 Memorial Park, 450, 451  
 Merrill, Mrs. C. P., 141  
 Metcalf, H. W., 254  
 Methodist Church, 109, 149, 272  
 Midkiff, J., 341, 395  
 Midkiff, F. E., 79, 81  
 Mills School, 305  
 Milton, J., 303  
 Moiliili School, 395  
 Moir, J. T., 298, 299  
 Moir, W. W. G., 341, 395  
 Mokihana Club, 348  
 Moncrief, Mrs. M., 242  
 Mooney, D. E., 317, 326  
 Mooney, Mrs. D. E., 149  
 Moore, Miss Nellie, 133  
 Moore, Mrs. W. L., 155  
 Morgan, Dr. J. A., 249, 252  
 Morgan, J. C., 74  
 Morgan, M. M., 254  
 Morgan, W., 178, 181  
 Mori, Dr. I., 378  
 Morning Music Club, 272  
 Moroi, Consul General R., 120, 165  
 Moses, Mrs. E. H., 125, 126  
 Mosher, H. N., 249, 252  
 Munro, J. G., 167  
 Munro, Mrs. J. G., 153  
 Murphy, Mrs. A. E., 271  
 Murray, H. E., 74  
 National Guard, 7, 17, Chap. II, 53, 57, 63-66, 68, 73, 75-80, 86, 87, 156, 157, 275, 276, 312, 325, 351, 391-393, 405, 434  
 Naval Militia, 21, 22  
 Navy League, 113, 114, 124, 131-133, 155, 272  
 Neeley, A. W., 339  
 Negoro, G., 378  
 Negoro, M., 444  
 Nelson, Miss Mayme, 277, 279, 280, 285  
 Newcombe, E. P., 296  
 Newspapers, 17, 99, 218, 332, 340, 395, 418, 427  
 Niemeyer, Miss Julia, 130  
*Nippu Jiji*, 218  
 Noble, Mrs. R. E., 260  
 Noble, W., 178-180  
 Normal School, 89, 151, 305, 318, 333, 346, 395  
 Norton, Mrs. C., 155  
 Norton, L. W. de Vis, 299  
 Nott, J., 113  
 Nowell, A. M., 287, 292  
*Nurnberg*, 3  
 O'Day, Mrs. C., 274  
 Officers' Training Camps, Chapter IV.  
*O. J. D. Ahlers*, 3, 4, 9, 18  
 Oliveira, K. F., 235  
*O Luso*, 218  
 Osmond, Mrs. Frances, 236  
 O'Sullivan, H. P., 450  
 Outdoor Circle, 135, 272, 296, 300  
 Outrigger Canoe Club auxiliary, 272  
 Ozawa, A. K., 92, 339, 377  
 Pacheco, M. C., 444, 448, 449  
 Pacific Club, 138, 169  
 Page, H. W., 254  
 Palmer, Rev. A. W., 265, 266  
 Palmer, Mrs. A. W., 275  
 Palmer, Mrs. G., 151  
 Pan-Pacific Club, 332  
 Paris, Mrs. Doris E., 195  
 Paschoal, M. I., 235  
 Patten, H. V., 167, 299, 422  
 Patterson, A., 54  
 Peacock, Mrs. C. A., 109, 149  
 Peck, L. T., 240, 298, 299, 308-311, 314, 316, 318  
 Peck, Mrs. L. T., 420  
 Perkins, Miss Edith, 270, 271  
 Perry, Judge A., 54, 55, 266, 299  
 Pessoa, A. da C., 235  
 Pessoa, Mrs. A. da C., 151  
 Peters, Rev. D. C., 248, 265, 332  
 Phillips, J. T., 74  
 Pinkham, L. E., 9, 11-15, 17, 21, 23-33, 35-38, 40-42, 44, 51-53, 59, 62, 64, 65, 90, 117, 121, 122, 169, 230, 308,

- 312, 328-331, 337, 339, 343, 350-352,  
364, 378, 380, 387, 401, 411, 419
- Plankinton, J. C., 422
- Podmore, E., 178, 179
- Pohukaina School, 89
- Polish relief, 104-107, 110
- Pommern*, 3, 8, 10-15, 18, 424
- Pond, P. M., 52, 287, 289, 323
- Pond, Mrs. P. M., 420
- Ponte, J. B., 235
- Poole, J., 141
- Porto Ricans, 279
- Portuguese, 34, 41, 161, 277, 279, 347,  
396
- Portuguese Red Cross, 235
- Potter, Mrs. G. C., 116, 134
- President*, 388
- Prinz Waldemar*, 3, 8, 18
- Prohibition, Chap. XVIII.
- Prosser, M. F., 182, 183
- Prosser, Mrs. M. F., 111, 195, 207, 420
- Punahou Guild, 109
- Punahou School, 20, 81, 82, 151, 300
- Putman, Dr. F. L., 74, 155
- Putman, Mrs. F. L., 126, 158, 260
- Queen's Hospital, 424, 434
- Quevillon, Mme., 267, 269
- Rath, J. A., 96, 97, 100, 104, 106-108,  
126, 129, 160, 166, 167, 299, 302
- Red Cross, 45, 85, 89, 105-107, 109,  
110, 116-118, Chaps. VII and VIII,  
261, 262, 293, 294, 419
- Redington, L. W., 54
- Reeves, L. B., 450
- Regala, J., 253
- Relief funds, special, Chap. IX
- Renton, Mrs. G. F., 227
- Reserve Officers' Training Corps (R.  
O. T. C.), 81, 82
- Restarick, Bishop H. B., 248, 346
- Restarick, Mrs. H. B., 110-112, 116,  
271
- Rice, C. A., 123, 340
- Rice, Mrs. C. A., 123, 129, 134, 153
- Rice, H. W., 167, 298, 299
- Rice, Mrs. H. W., 128
- Rice, Mrs. M. L., 111
- Rice, Mrs. P., 126
- Rice, Mrs. W. H., 348
- Richards, R. L., 450
- Richards, T., 92-95
- Richardson, Miss Ivy, 125, 126, 153
- Richley, A., 118
- Richmond, Mrs., 153
- Riggs, J. M., 246
- Riley, W. R., 46, 251, 282, 283
- Ripley, C. B., 248
- Ritz, A. H., 157
- Rivenburg, B. G., 401
- Robertson, Mrs. A. G. M., 260, 274,  
287, 291, 449
- Robinson, A. C., 182, 183
- Rodiek, G., 9, 246, 247, 416, 425-430,  
434
- Roll, Dr. A. T., 125
- Rose, C. H., 300
- Ross, H. L., 128, 129
- Rotary Club, 75, 205, 217, 236, 289,  
301, 323, 364, 410, 411, 450
- Rothwell, Mrs. G., 150
- Royal Hawaiian Hotel, 239, 246, 247
- Royal School, 89, 395
- Royola, P., 253
- Rudin, H. A., 254
- Russell, J. W., 339
- Russell, Mrs. Jas., 269, 348, 365, 420
- Sachem*, 389
- Sacred Heart Church, 149
- Sacred Heart Convent, 149
- St. Andrew's Auxiliary, 109
- St. Andrew's Cathedral, 84, 110, 113,  
145, 147, 272, 346
- St. Andrew's Guild, 111
- St. Clement's Church, 113
- St. Clement's Guild, 110
- St. Leger, Rev. F. P., 297
- St. Louis*, 7, 21, 22, 86, 130
- St. Louis College, 89, 300, 305, 322
- Sakai, K., 77
- Salvation Army, 89, 235, 236, 322
- Santos, L., 305
- Santos, M. D., 235
- Schaefer, Mrs. F. A., Jr., 127
- Schaefer, G. E., 74
- Scharlin, Mrs. I. R., 237
- Schofield, Col. R. M., 150, 276, 339
- Schools and school children, 20, 81, 82,  
88, 89, 124, 127, 134, 145, 162-164,  
167, 168, 218, 227, 230, 231, 291, 305,  
306, 317, 319, 320, 322, 325, 331-334,  
337, 345, 346, 349, 356, 395, 418, 420,  
437-439
- Schroeder, H. A., 425, 426, 428, 429,  
434
- Schurmann, Dr. F. H., 424
- Schurz*, see *Carl Schurz*
- Scott, H. L., 430
- Scott, L., 195, 205
- Sudder, Dr. D., 142, 196, 198, 207

- Scudder, Mrs. D., 299  
 Scudder, F. S., 253  
 Searight, Miss Jeanette, 195, 197, 214  
 Selective Draft, Chap. III.  
 Senni, Mrs., 153  
 Serbian relief, 101, 104-107  
 Seto, A. Y., 444  
 Setos, 2, 10-15, 18, 424  
 Sheldon, W. J., 444  
 Shepherd, Mrs. I. J., 270  
 Sherman, G. C., 433  
 Shingle, R. W., 176, 319, 321, 323, 326, 327, 398  
 Shipping problem, 386-390  
 Short, S. T., 142, 156, 157, 194, 196, 205, 208  
 Siberia, Red Cross work in, 137-144, 185-214  
*Sierra*, 328  
 Siler, J. J., 156, 157, 195, 207, 208  
 Sill, Miss Ida F., 175  
 Silva, J. L., 178  
 Sinclair, Mrs. H., 152  
 Sloggett, Mrs. H. D., 128, 143  
 Smith, A. G., 249, 252  
 Smith, Mrs. A. G., 109  
 Smith, T., 54, 86  
 Smith, Mrs. W. H., 160  
 Smith, W. O., 246, 248  
 Smoot, P. M., 74, 317  
*Solf*, 18  
 Soper, Gen. J. H., 237, 443  
 Soper, Mrs. Mary E., 237  
 Sorenson, O. L., 182, 183  
 Sousa, J. C., 235  
 Spalding, E. I., 309  
 Spalding, I., 236  
 Spalding, Mrs. P., 271  
 Spillner, C., 446  
*Staatssekretaer Kraetke*, 3, 18, 19  
 Stainback, I. M., 340  
 Stanley, Miss Aileen, 150  
*Star-Bulletin*, 10, 59, 66, 88, 91, 100, 109, 141, 145, 148, 218, 247, 249, 253, 289, 290, 312, 315, 331-334, 337, 351, 379, 394, 407, 410, 412, 427, 442, 443, 447  
 Steele, P., 252, 253  
 Steere, Mrs. F. E., 139, 420  
 Stephen, Rev. Father, 298, 302, 346  
 Stephens, Miss Clarabel, 292  
 Sterritt, Miss, 114  
 Stevens, Miss Eva, 110, 148  
 Stever, R. F., 308, 309, 311  
 Stokes, Mrs. J. F. G., 130, 139  
 Strange, H. L., 92, 240  
 Strong, Gen. F. S., 17, 38, 39, 41, 246, 247, 334, 405, 409  
 Stubbs, Mrs. I., 155  
 Sturla, Miss Norma, 292  
 Sugar Planters' Association, *see* Hawaiian Sugar Planters' Association  
 Super, P., 264  
 Swift, P. A., 74  
 Tackabury, Miss Doris, 175  
 Tarleton, A. H., 71, 220, 257, 258, 259, 261-264, 266, 286, 287, 289, 327  
 Tay, S. W., 22  
 Taylor, A. P., 91  
 Taylor, Mrs. A. P., 149, 150  
 Templeton, W. M., 251  
 Tenney, E. D., 107, 120, 128, 129, 392  
 Tenney, Miss Wilhelmina, 131, 161, 175, 176, 289  
 Territorial Food Commission, 37-40, 336-352, 356, 358, 359, 364, 365, 367, 370, 371, 374, 375, 378, 379, 391, 392, 396, 419  
 Territorial War Memorial Commission, 451-453  
 Thacker, R. W., 254  
 Thayer, W. W., 304  
 Thompson, F. E., 89, 398  
 Thompson, W. F., 266  
 Thrift Stamps, 318-327  
 Thurston, L. A., 240, 241, 246, 248  
 Todd, E. V., 297  
 Todd, Miss Minnie M., 237  
 Towse, Ed, 63, 92, 93, 299, 323  
 Tranquada, F., 235  
 Trent, R. H., 287, 289, 431, 433-435  
 Truslow, H. A., 125, 128, 314  
 Tuttle, G. H., 265  
 Tuttle, Mrs. G. H., 272  
 Unger, J., 236  
 United States Food Administration, 350, Chap. XVI, 419  
 United War Work Campaign, 292, Chap. XIII.  
 University Club, 138, 145, 146, 233, 287-289, 291, 297, 359  
 Urice, J. A., 264  
 Osborne, G., 450  
 Valentin, Rev. Fr., 295, 297, 346  
 Vanek, M., 450  
 Vaughan, Judge H. W., 31  
 Vayhinger, I. D., 254  
 Vernon, H. E., 287, 289

- Vicars, G. H., 323  
 Victory Boys and Girls, 299, 300, 304-306  
 Vieira, A. H. R., 235  
 Vigilance Corps, *see* Hawaiian Vigilance Corps  
 von Holt, Miss Hilda, 272  
 von Holt, Mrs. H. M., 281  
 von Holt, Miss Mary, 111  
 von Hamm, C. C., 248  
 von Hamm, Mrs. C. C., 152  
 Wadman, J. W., 254, 299, 406  
 Wadsworth, R. A., 323  
 Wakefield, J., 107, 112, 113, 117, 120, 129, 239, 240, 248, 249, 252-254, 298, 299, 302, 304, 305, 409, 411  
 Wakefield, Mrs. J., 111, 112, 145  
 Walden, L., 231  
 Waldron, F. L., 185, 236, 436  
 Walker, H. A., 142, 156, 157, 195, 197, 208, 213  
 Walker, Mrs. O. H., 272  
 Walker, R. C., 126, 129  
 Walker, S. J., 443  
 Walker, W. D., 195, 211  
 Wall, Mrs. O. E., 145  
 Wall, Mrs. W. A., 111, 145  
 Wallace, Mrs. 153  
 Walsh, Miss, 274  
 Wanrell, Signor J., 313  
 War Camp Community Service, 72, 161, 261, Chap. XII, 298, 299, 301  
 War Memorial, Chap. XX  
 War Relief Committee, Chap. VI, 119-121, 165, 166  
 War Savings Stamps, 318-327  
 Warner, J. O., 266, 299, 395  
 Warriner, Miss Emily V., 95  
 Waterhouse, J., 249, 252, 298, 339, 378  
 Waters, Miss Lena, 160, 161  
 Watkins, N., 421, 450  
 Watson, Mrs. E. M., 149, 297  
 Watt, J., 336, 341, 395  
 Wayne, W., 44, 54, 55  
 Webster, E. C., 127, 162  
 Webster, Mrs. 149  
 Welbourne, Mrs. W. A., 110, 114, 153  
 Welch, Miss Lillian, 195, 269  
 Wells, W. K., 178-180  
 Wesson, G. A., 254  
 Westervelt, W. D., 64, 447  
 Westgate, J. M., 333, 337  
 Westgate, Mrs. J. M., 362  
 Whitney, W. L., 128, 129, 161  
 Whitney, Mrs. W. L., 116, 118, 131, 134, 145, 287, 289  
 Wilcox, A., 178, 181  
 Wilcox, Mrs. C. H., 160  
 Wilcox, Miss Elsie, 270, 344  
 Wilcox, G. P., 430, 433  
 Wilcox, Miss Mabel I., 174, 175  
 Wilder, Mrs. C. T., 260  
 Wilder, G. P., 124, 126, 156-158, 258, 260  
 Wilder, Mrs. G. P., 116, 126, 129, 132, 155, 167, 260, 419  
 Wilder, Miss Helen, 260  
*Wilhelmina*, 388, 390  
 Williams, D., 254, 255  
 Williams, Mrs. H., 236  
 Williams, Rev. J. H., 248, 345  
 Williams, O., 109  
 Williams, Dr. R. D., 265  
 Williams, U., 251, 253, 254, 302  
 Winkley, H. G., 126, 129  
 Winslow, Miss Anna L., 195  
 Wirtz, Mrs. A. J., 297  
 Wise, J. H., 447, 449  
 Wissner, Gen. J. P., 77, 249, 251, 409-411  
 Witsell, E. F., 43, 46, 74, 251, 282  
 Wodehouse, E. H., 393  
 Woman's Committee of the Council of National Defense, 419  
 Women's Committee of Territorial Food Commission, 343-349, 355, 356, 358, 361, 362, 366, 419  
 Women's War Work Council, 271-275, 409  
 Wong, C. A., 310  
 Wright, C. E., 422  
 Yamamoto, K., 167, 311, 319, 376, 377  
 Yamamoto, Mrs., 272  
 Young, A. A., 248  
 Young, Mrs. A. A., 447, 449  
 Young, Mrs. E. N., 231  
 Young, Mrs. J. M., 289  
 Y. M. C. A., 55, 56, 71, 72, 74, 230, Chap. X, 272, 289, 290, 293, 294, 298, 301, 333, 395, 418  
 Young Women's Buddhist Association, 356  
 Y. W. C. A., 56, Chap. XI, 257, 298, 301, 302, 348, 358, 359, 418  
 Youtz, Rev. E. E., 265







UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN



3 9015 03460 6882

